This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

SPANISH GRAMMAR

W. I. KNAPP

Educ T 2118.96.490

~~T 112.~~
~~5598~~

HARVARD UNIVERSITY

LIBRARY OF THE

Department of Education

COLLECTION OF TEXT-BOOKS
Contributed by the Publishers

TRANSFERRED
TO
HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

3 2044 102 868 478

1886

A

GRAMMAR

OF THE

MODERN SPANISH LANGUAGE

AS NOW WRITTEN AND SPOKEN IN THE CAPITAL OF SPAIN.

BY

WILLIAM I. KNAPP, PH.D., LL.D.,

STREET PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES IN YALE UNIVERSITY.

SECOND EDITION

CAREFULLY REVISED BY THE AUTHOR.

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

GINN & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.

1896.

~~T102.5398~~
Educ T 2118.96.490

Harvard University,
Dept. of Education Library

TRANSFERRED TO
HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
1932

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1882, by
WILLIAM I. KNAPP,
in the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

PRESSWORK BY GINN & CO., BOSTON, U.S.A.

PREFACE.

IT has seemed to the writer of this volume that a systematic presentation of the laws that govern the official Castilian language, at the present stage of its development, and fresh from its native atmosphere, would need no apology. Whether in public or private instruction, nothing can adequately substitute the thorough acquisition of the forms and inflections of a language, and these are best comprehended and retained by the tabular arrangement, which at the same time furnishes an accessible base of supplies for reviews or reference.

Spanish is not usually the first foreign tongue the student meets, and therefore the experience he has gained in Greek and Latin, or in French and German, may be turned to profit in saving much irksome routine indispensable to his earlier studies. He does not need, for example, to be taught the rules of agreement, to which general grammar has already accustomed his mind, but what he wants above all to know is, the forms of the article, the pluralization of words, the variation of adjectives, and the conjugation of verbs. This done, he can proceed to read any ordinary prose, leaving the syntactical peculiarities to be noted by experience, until a second and more critical rehearsal puts him in possession of all the facts of the language. Therefore, a grammar that will facilitate this end, giving him, at a small outlay of time, the requisite preliminaries to reading and writing, while furnishing ample means for more thorough subsequent studies, would seem to be the one most urgently called for. At least this is the case in our colleges, wherein the use of the so-called speaking-methods is impracticable by reason of the diffusion of grammatical material.

The plan of teaching with the present book involves two perusals. The first will take the learner over essentials in a little more than eight weeks, at five recitations each. The lessons are arranged for the ordinary college class, by whom many of the rules and forms would require to be read over only, or would be self-evident by virtue of previous experience and discipline. With younger pupils, and such as are destitute of linguistic training, shorter lessons can be easily provided by a suitable parcelling out of the full ones. For a considerable distance in Section IV, only English themes are furnished for translation into Spanish, since this method best tests the student's diligence at the early stage of his work. Subsequently, however, after the essential elements have been reviewed, a Spanish dialogue has been inserted, made up out of a popular Madrid play, reduced and re-fashioned to adapt it to class purposes.

The second perusal of the grammar is to be made in conjunction with another volume, — the *Modern Spanish Readings*. While thus entering into the spirit of the literary life of the Spaniard of to-day, the learner, by a carefully graded series of Spanish-English and English-Spanish themes, will be insensibly conducted along to a degree of familiarity with the spoken language that will call for and satisfy every principle recorded in the present text-book. At the same time, he will have learned the mode of life and the manners and customs of the people of the Peninsula; and the usages of society, polite address, correspondence, etc., as they exist, or are carried on in all circles at Madrid. To possess the technical terms popularly employed there in most of the relations of life, will be, it is hoped, appreciated; at least they will be sought for in vain elsewhere in books.

CONTENTS.

SECTION FIRST.

PAGE

PHONOLOGY — Alphabet 1
Vowels 2
Diphthongs and triphthongs 5
Consonants 7
Tonic accent 15
Graphic accent 17
Division of syllables 18
Capital letters 19
Orthographic signs 20
Castilian vulgarisms 21

SECTION SECOND.

FORM AND INFLECTION 25
Article 28
Noun — Gender 32
Number 44
Inflection 49
Adjective 51
Number 52
Gender 53
Apocopation 57
Position 61
Comparison 65
Comparative formulae 67
Superlative relative 70
Superlative absolute 74
Numerals — Cardinals 80
Ordinals 83
Fractionals 85
Multiplicatives, etc. 87

PAGE

Personal pronoun 90
Inflection 94
Cases 96
Position of object 102
Disjunctive form 104
Pleonastic construction 105
Inflection and use of *usted* 106
Reflexive pronoun 108
Two objective pronouns 110
Mismo, propio 114
Possessive adjectives and pronouns 116
Demonstratives 124
Relative pronouns 129
Interrogative pronouns 138
Indefinite pronouns 140
Verb 161
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb *haber* 162
Remarks on 163
Conjugation of the impersonal verb *haber* 165
Remarks on 167
Regular verb — active conjugation 168
Verb endings 169
First conjugation — *hablar* 171
Second conjugation — *comer* 174
Third conjugation — *vivir* 178
Remarks on the three conjugations 181
Regular euphonic changes 184
Progressive form of the verb 188
Conjugation of *estar* 190
Passive voice 192
Conjugation of *ser* 193
Passive conjugation — *ser llamado* 196
Remarks on 198
Use of *ser* and *estar* 200
Reflexive verb 201
Conjugation of *alabarse* 203
Conjugation of *figurarse* 206
Remarks on the reflexive verb 208
Special uses of 212
Passive and reflexive 213
Reciprocal verb 216

Verb — *continued.* PAGE
Impersonal verb 217
Irregular verb 221
Stems and changes 221
Present stem 224
Tonic preterit stems 227
Future stems 229
First class — first and second conjugations 229
e stems — first conjugation 230
Euphonic changes 231
e stems — second conjugation 232
o stems — first conjugation 233
Euphonic changes 234
o stems — second conjugation 236
Euphonic changes 237
Second class — third conjugation 238
e stems and *o* stems 241
Third class — third conjugation 242
Euphonic changes 244
Fourth class — verbs in *-uir* 245
Fifth class — tonic preterit verbs 247
First conjugation 248
Second conjugation 249
Third conjugation 255
Sixth class — miscellaneous 257
Defective verbs 263
Irregular past participles 265
Index to irregular verbs 271
Adverb 283
Use of certain adverbs 290
Negation in Spanish 296
Comparison of adverbs 299
Preposition 304
Use of 306
Conjunction 318
Interjection 320

SECTION THIRD.

PAGE

ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX — Article 323
Numerals 335
Laws of agreement — Adjective and noun 339
Verb with its subject 341
Use of the tenses 344
Subjunctive mode 356
Correspondence of tenses 362
Use of the infinitive mode 363
Gerund 370
Use of the past participle 371
Regimen of verbs 374

APPENDIX TO SECTION SECOND.

DIMINUTIVES AND AUGMENTATIVES 382

SECTION FOURTH.

DRILL-BOOK 393
El Barómetro — Comedia 415
Spanish-English Vocabulary 440
English-Spanish Vocabulary 465

SECTION FIRST.

PHONOLOGY.

The Spanish Alphabet.

1. The Spanish Alphabet has in use at the present day twenty-four simple letters, with which certain compound and ligatured forms have been associated as independent signs. The whole, therefore, stands thus:—

a	á	*ä* in *a*h.	n	ene	*ā'ney.*
b	bé	*bā* in *ba*le.	ñ	eñe	*ain'yey.*
c	cé	*thā* in *tha*ne.	o	ó	*ō.*
ch	ché	*chā* in *cha*se.	p	pé	*pā* in *pa*le.
d	dé	*dā* in *da*le.	q	cú	*coo* in *coo*l.
e	é	*ā* in *a*le.	r	ere	*ā'rey.*
f	efe	*ā'fey.*	rr	erre	*air'-r-rey.*
g	gé	*'hā* in *'ha*te.	s	ese	*ā'cey.*
h	ache	*ä'tchey.*	t	té	*tā* in *ta*ke.
i	í	*ē* in *e*ve.	u	ú	*oo* in *oo*ze.
j	jota	*'hō'tä.*	v	vé	*vā* in *va*le.
l	ele	*ā'ley.*	x	équis	*ā'keece.*
ll	elle	*ail'yey.*	y	y griega	*ē gre'ā'gä.*
m	eme	*ā'mey.*	z	zeta	*thā'tä.*

a. The Gothic or Black Letter (called in Spain *letra gótica*, or *de Tórtis*, from an early Venetian printer) was used for Mss. (*libros de mano*) throughout the Middle Age. The same was employed almost exclusively in printed books (*libros de molde*) from the introduction of the art into Spain (1474) till about 1550, when it had

well-nigh disappeared from new books, and was only occasionally seen in reprints of old Black Letter texts.

b. *U* and *v* were constantly interchanging in the older language, and are still designated in the primary schools by the ancient names *ú* and *ú de corazon* (heart-shaped *u*, that is, *v*) since the new Academic *vé* is not practically distinguishable from *bé*.[1]

c. The letter *k* is at present authorized by government and by the Academy in a very few imported words, such as **kilómetro**, *kilometre*; **kilogramo**, *kilogram*; **képis** or **képi**, *a fatigue cap*.

d. *W*, called *doble ú*, is found only in foreign names or in learned transliterations. The Gothic and Arabic initials, *v*, *w*, usually became *gu* in Castilian. Thus **wad-âl-kebîr**, *the great river*, became **Guadalquivir**; **al-wezîr**, *the vizier*, became **alguacil**, *the constable*. The Teutonic "*war*" appeared as **guerra**; "*wassail*" as **guasa**, *jest*; and *to* "*ward*," *guard*, or *keep*, became **guardar**.

2. All letters of the alphabet are feminine in Spanish, and commonly stand with one of the articles:—

ponga usted una **h**,	*put in an* **h**.
cuando vayas al correo no te olvides de mirar en la **F**,	*when you go to the Post, don't forget to look in* **F**.
halagüeño se escribe con **h**,	halagüeño *is spelled with an* **h**.

Pronunciation.

3. The present section on the Castilian pronunciation is based on the reformed orthography initiated by the Royal Spanish Academy in their Dictionary of 1803, improved in that of 1822, and finally adopted in their *Ortografía* of Madrid, 1826. A view of the ancient pronunciations or reference to the obsolete orthography do not come within the design of this elementary work.

The Vowels.

4. *Important General Law.* — In Castilian the vowel sounds predominate over those of the consonants to a

[1] *Vé*, as the name of the letter *v*, was first, I think, introduced into the Academy's Dictionary of 1837,—the eighth edition. Before that it was often called *ú consonante*, *u* consonant.

degree without parallel in the other Romance tongues; and whereas the vowel sounds are full and sonorous, those of the consonants are subordinate, smothered, and frequently suppressed.

5. The vowels have but one quality of sound each, and this they preserve uniformly in all situations. In ordinary passive discourse, however, *e* and *o* slightly lower their primitive key when they stand in an open syllable or before the letters *n* and *r* final.

6. The vowels are *a*, *e*, *i* (*y*), *o*, and *u*, pronounced as follows: —

a	like *a* in *a*h,	never as in *a*dd, m*a*de:			malo, ánimo.
e	" *a* " *a*le,	"	m*e*, m*e*t:		mesa, lecho.
i (y)	" *e* " m*e*,	"	h*i*t, d*i*sh:		tino, tinta.
o	" *o* " l*o*ne,	"	n*o*t:		odio, tesoro.
u	" *oo* " *oo*ze,	"	b*u*d, *u*se:		gula, usted'.

a. Before *n* and *r* final, *o* sounds as in g*o*ne, and *e* as in th*e*re: —

error, error, — *air-r-rorr'*.
nacion, nation, — *nah-the'on'*.
comer, to eat, — *ko-mair'*.
placer, pleasure, — *plah-thair'*.

b. *E* final has the *a* quality, but it is given short as *y* in merr*y*. So trist*e*, *sad*, — *tree'-stĕ*, not *triss'-tay*.

7. *Y* standing alone or final is a vowel, and is then a mere substitute for the Spanish *i*. At the beginning of a word or syllable (between vowels) it is a true consonant with the phonetic value of *y* in *y*ear, enunciated with emphasis: —

Y VOWEL.		Y CONSONANT.	
y, *and*.	**muy**, *very*.	**yo**, *I*.	**leyes**, *laws*.
ley, *law*.	**voy**, *I go*.	**ya**, *now*.	**reyes**, *kings*.

REMARK. — In English one syllable is often accentuated at the expense of the vowel sounds in the other syllables; but in Spanish a vowel never suffers its original quality to be absorbed or shrunken because the syllable in which it lies does not receive the primary stress. Thus, do not pronounce, for example, **cansado,** *tired;* **piélago,** *sea;* **animalito,** *a small animal;* **imposibilidad,** *impossibility,* — as if written *căn-sah'-do* or *k'n-sah'-do, pyail'-ĕ-go, ănnä-mŭll-ee'-to, imm-possy-billy-dahd';* but *kän'-sah''-t̤ho, pyail''-ah'-go, ah'-ne'-mah'-le''-to, eem'-po'-se'-be'-le'-dahth''.*

8. The five vowels are divisible into strong (*a, o, u*) and weak (*e, i*), with reference to the phonetic influence they exert on the consonants *c* and *g:* —

9. *C* before the strong vowels equals *k*: **ca, co, cu.**
10. *C* before the weak vowels equals *th* in *th*ink: **ce, ci.**
11. *G* before the strong vowels equals *gh* (*g* hard): **ga, go, gu.**
12. *G* before the weak vowels equals guttural *'h*: **ge, gi.**

13. *C* with the *k* sound is written *qu* before weak vowels: **que, qui.**
14. *C* with the *th* sound is written *z* before strong vowels: **za, zo, zu.**
15. *G* with the *gh* sound is written *gu* before weak vowels: **gue, gui.**
16. *G* with the guttural sound is written *j* before strong vowels: **ja, jo, ju.**

17. *U* is silent between *q* or *g* and the weak vowels. When it should be vocal in those positions it assumes the diaeresis (*ü*), and *cu, gü* diphthongal are pronounced *kw, gw,* as also elsewhere, when *u* is not mute.

18. Note well, therefore, the following combinations:

Vowels.

Like **k**:	ca,	que,	qui,	co,	cu.
" **th**:	za,	ce,	ci,	zo,	zu.
" **gh**:	ga,	gue,	gui,	go,	gu.
" **'h**:	ja,	ge,	gi,	jo,	ju.

Diphthongs.

Like **kw**:	cua,	cue,	cui,	cuo.
" **gw**:	gua,	güe,	güi,	guo.
" **'hw**:	jua,	jue,	jui,	juo.

19. The two stem vowels *e* and *o* amplify into *ie* and *ue* respectively when the accent falls on those vowels; but they recover their primitive form as soon as the stress is transferred to another syllable: —

sentir', *to feel.*	**siento**, *I feel.*
sentímos, *we feel.*	**sienten**, *they feel.*
tendéro, *shopkeeper.*	**tienda**, *shop.*
sentimental', *sentimental.*	**sentimiento**, *feeling.*
rogar', *to request.*	**ruego**, *I request.*
rogámos, *we request.*	**ruegan**, *they request.*
bondad', *goodness.*	**bueno**, *good.*
agoréro, *diviner.*	**agüero**, *omen.*
Oscénse, *of Huesca* (Lat. *Osca*).	**Huesca**, *name of a town.*

a. Hence *ie* is the diphthong of *e*, and *ue* that of *o*.

Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

20. These are vowels in juxtaposition which are pronounced in one wave of sound, forming, either alone or with a foregoing consonant, a single syllable; they are, therefore, divisible neither in prosody nor in printing. They always preserve the alphabetic sound of each of the vowels composing them, never passing over into new phonetic combinations as in English and French. Nevertheless the complex sounds they produce are reckoned as *one*, and the tonic accent, if it be on that syllable, is distributed over the vowels as if they constituted a single long vowel. Hence, if one of the vowels *i* or *u* is accentuated, these do not form diphthongs or triphthongs with the other vowels. Thus *uo* in contín*uo*, *continuous*, is a diphthong, but not in contin*úo*, *I continue*; so re*i*no, *a kingdom*, — diphthong; le*í*do, *read*, — not a diphthong; ven*ía*, *indulgence*; ven*ía*, *I came*.

21. True diphthongs and triphthongs are: —

ai (ay):	**baile,**	**donaire,**	**hablais,**	**hay.**
au:	**causa,**	**pauta,**	**caudal'.**	
ea:	**línea,**	**tráquea,**	**Bóreas.**	
ei (ey):	**reina,**	**peine,**	**hableis,**	**grey.**
eo:	**idóneo,**	**marmóreo,**	**virgíneo.**	

eu:	deuda,	reuma,	Europa.	
ia:	gracia,	ténia,	calumnia.	
ie:	cielo,	siento,	tiene.	
io:	precio,	ódio,	estudio.	
iu:	ciudad,	triunfar,	enviudado.	
oi (oy):	heróico,	doite,	sois,	hoy.
ua:	fragua,	recua,	igual.	
ue:	duelo,	bueno,	pues.	
ui (uy):	cuidado,	ruidoso,	huiría,	muy.
uo:	mutuo,	arduo,	antíguo.	
iai:	aviais,	cambiais,	variais.	
iei:	avieis,	cambieis,	varieis.	
uai (uay):	averiguais,	santiguais,	fraguais,	guay.
uei (uey):	averigüeis,	santigüeis,	fragüeis,	buey.

22. Improper diphthongs are:—

ae:	trae,	Páez.	**io:**	amorío,	desvarío.
ai:	raíz,	traído.	**oa:**	canóa,	proa.
au:	baul,	ataud.	**oe:**	héroe,	corroe.
ea:	pelea,	lancea.	**oi:**	oído,	oíste.
ee:	leer,	lee.	**oo:**	loor,	Feijóo.
ei:	leí,	sonreí.	**ua:**	ganzúa,	falúa.
eo:	veo,	beodo.	**ue:**	continúe,	cruento.
ia:	día,	alegría.	**ui:**	ruido,	huida.
ie:	fíe,	confíe.	**uo:**	continúo,	duo.

23. Thus are pronounced, rapidly indeed, but not constituting true diphthongs, all concurrent vowels in different words; as, l*a* *a*legría, *the joy;* l*a* *a*lta casa, *the lofty house;* m*i* *a*lma, *my soul;* l*a* *i*da, *the departure;* t*u* *e*sposa, *thy wife;* s*u* *é*poca, *his times;* *á* *u*sted, *to you.* Identical letters are more perfectly run together in the ordinary language; l*a* *a*mistad, *the friendship;* s*u* *u*tilidad, *his usefulness;* d*e* *e*ste, *of this;* m*i* *i*da, *my departure.* This principle has occasioned many contractions, as, d*e*l for d*e* *e*l; d*e*ste, for d*e* *e*ste; d*e*nde, from Latin d*e* *i*nde, *thence;* d*o*nde, from d*e* *u*nde, *where.*

24. Likewise vowels separated by the silent *h* are sounded as if concurrent: —

ahí, *there.*	**desahucio**, *ejection* (*law*).
ahora, *now.*	**almohadilla**, *cushion.*
tahona, *bakery.*	**rehusar**, *to refuse.*
tahur, *gambler.*	**Sahagun**, *St. Facundus* (town).
ha hablado, *has spoken.*	**mi hijo**, *my son.*

25. In poetry a diphthong may be dissolved by the diæresis when the metre requires it: —

suave, *mild*, — **süave.**	**riela**, *twinkles*, — **rïela.**

Consonants.

B, V.

26. These two letters are distinct in theory, and in most situations interchangeable in practice.[1] The Castilian does not give either of them the full English sound, except after *m*, because with him the approximation of the organs employed in their production amounts to simple contact without pressure (§ 4): —

beber, *to drink* (anc. *bever*).	**volver**, *to turn* (anc. *boluer*).
vivir, *to live* (anc. *biuir*).	**enviar**, *to send* (anc. *embiar*).
vuelta, *turn* (anc. *buelta*).	**envidia**, *jealousy* (anc. *ymbidia*).

The ancient orthography is, as usually happens in Spain, the modern popular pronunciation, especially in the Castiles.

---

[1] Blanco White, a learned Spaniard of this century, declared the identity of *b* and *v* rather strongly, in these words: "My friend's destination was a town in the mountains or Sierra de Ronda, called Olbera or Olvera, for we make no difference in the pronunciation of the *b* and the *v*." — *Letters from Spain, by Don Leucadio Doblado*, London, 1822, p. 161. The Spanish Academy affirm, also, that these two letters "are alike in a great part of Spain, although they ought not to be." — *Gramática*, ed. of 1870, p. 315. See, also, their *Ortografía*, Madrid, 1826, p. 51.

C HARD *and* Qu.

27. *C*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *qu* before the weak vowels, sound always like *k*: —

casa, *house.*	que, *that, which.*
cosa, *thing.*	quiere, *he wishes.*
cura, *parish priest.*	tabique, *thin partition.*
claro, *clear, light.*	inquieto, *restless.*

C WEAK *and* Z.

28. *C*, before the weak vowels, and *z* before the strong vowels, have the value of *th* in *th*ink : —

cena, *supper.*	hizo, *he made, did.*
cita, *appointment.*	brazo, *arm.*
cielo, *heaven.*	corazon, *heart.*
hace, *makes, does.*	razon, *reason.*
acento, *accent.*	caza, *game.*
acéquia, *canal for irrigation.*	azogue, *quicksilver.*
nacion, *nation.*	taza, (*tea*)*cup.*

a. *Z* cannot stand before the weak vowels, but is changed into *c*: —

razon, *reason.*	racional, *rational.*
feliz, *happy.*	felicidad, *felicity.*
luz, *light.*	luces, *lights.*

b. *Cc* are found together only before the vowel *i*, and are pronounced regularly *k'th*: —

accion, *action.*	faccioso (*Carlist*) *rebel.*

Ch.

29. This letter has been considered as distinct in the Dictionaries only since 1803. Its constant phonetic value is that of *ch* in *ch*urch. Formerly it represented also the *k* sound in classic and scripture words; but these are now written with *c* before the strong vowels, and *qu* before the weak ones : —

mucho, *much.*	ducho, *expert.*
hecho, *done, made.*	cuchara, *spoon.*
muchacho, *boy.*	bicho, *insect.*
avechucho, *sparrow-hawk.*	alcachofa, *artichoke.*
chillar, *to shout, scream.*	chiquitin, *a little one.*
Acates, *Achates.*	Aquiles, *Achilles.*
Cristiano, *Christian.*	Ecequías, *Hezekiah.*

D.

30. *D* has technically the common English sound; but, as in the case of *b* and *v*, there is simple contact without pressure, on the part of the organs involved in its formation. The Spanish *d*, therefore, has never the decided English sound, being rather inclined to a smothered *th* in *th*ough:—

dorar, *to gild.*	índio, *East Indian.*
desde, *from.*	arde, *it burns.*
dehesa, *pasture ground.*	sordera, *deafness.*
súbdito, *subject.*	tildar, *to censure.*
albedrío, *free will.*	verdadero, *true.*

31. Between vowels, especially in the endings *ado, eda, ido, odo, udo, d* has a less equivocal sound of *th* in *th*ough, wea*th*er. At the end of a word its quality is the same, but it is asserted with much less decision:—

hado, *fate.*	comed, *eat ye.*
olvidado, *forgotten.*	virtud, *virtue.*
marido, *husband.*	ciudad, *city, town.*
polvareda, *cloud of dust.*	verdad, *truth.*
lodo, *mud.*	usted, *you.*
engrudo, *paste.*	vivid, *live ye.*

The *d* thus pronounced may be graphically represented by the *th̤* raised above the line to suggest the tenuity of its value; as, *ä̤th̤o, co-mé̤th̤, lath̤rár.* This *th̤*

must never be pronounced as in *th*ink, however, which is the characteristic of *c* weak (§ 28).

a. *Dr* always equals *d'r* or *th'r*, but not as in *dr*eam: *dr*ama, *drama;* a*dr*ede, *on purpose* (obsolete); Ma*dr*id.

G HARD *and* Gu.

32. *G*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *gu* before the weak vowels, sound like *g* in *go* and *gu*ilt: —

gasto, *expense.*	albergue, *refuge.*
goce, *fruition.*	manguito, *muff.*
gula, *gluttony.*	guinda, *cherry.*
guante, *glove.*	malagueño, *of Málaga.*
greda, *chalk.*	guisado, *stew.*

a. If etymology or uniformity of the *g* value in inflection require the *u* in *gue, gui,* to become vocal, as it is in the combinations *gua, guo,* then the diæresis must always be employed: —

agua, *water.*	desagüe, *drainage.*
lengua, *tongue.*	lingüista, *linguist.*
fragua, *he forges.*	fragüe, *he may forge.*

So also

agüero, *omen* (*augurium*).	agüelo, *grandfather* (for *abuelo*).

G, J, GUTTURAL.

33. *G*, before the weak vowels, and *j* in all positions, but chiefly before the strong vowels, have the guttural sound of the Arabic *hhâ.* This sound is often represented by the German *ch* after strong vowels (as in Ba*ch*, Lo*ch*, Bu*ch*; not as in Pe*ch*, Li*ch*t, Bü*ch*er), and the modern Greek τεῖχος, μάχαιρα, etc., but it is like none of them sufficiently to be cited as equivalents, save the Arabic. It must be learned from a native of Castile: —

giro, *money-order.*
algibe, *cistern.*
aflige, *he afflicts.*
diligencia, *mail-coach.*
gime, *he groans.*
página, *page.*

hijo, *son.*
jarro, *water-pitcher.*
atajo, *short cut* (*path*).
trabajo, *labor.*
mujer, *woman.*
bandeja, *waiter* (for serving).

a. In Andalusia (Southern Spain) this sound is reduced to the Arabic *hâ*.

H.

34. *H* is totally silent. In the sixteenth century it had a decided aspiration, of which it still retains a slight trace before the diphthong *ue*, not, however, appreciable to most foreigners:—

hablar, *to speak.*
haber, *to have.*
ahí, *there.*
hacemos, *we make.*
hermano, *brother.*

huevo, *egg.*
huerta, *plantation.*
hueso, *bone.*
Huelva, } *names of places.*
Huesca, }

M.

35. *M* sounds as in English. The Latin *mĭn*, or, by loss of the short vowel, *m'n*, becomes Spanish by changing *n* into *r* and inserting *b*, which in this situation is distinctly enunciated. Thus,

hombre, *man,*	from	homĭne-m.	
nombre, *name,*	"	nomĭn[e-m]	for *nomen.*
cumbre, *top,*	"	culmĭne-m.	
lumbre, *light,*	"	lumĭn[e-m]	" *lumen.*
mimbre, *rush,*	"	vimĭne-m.	
hambre, *hunger,*	"	fam[ĭne-m]	" *famem.*
hembra, *female,*	"	foemĭna-m.	

a. *Mn*, not contracted from *mĭn*, usually becomes *ñ* (*nn*) by assimilation of the *m*[1]; so*mn*u-m makes sue*nn*o, sueño, *dream.* Even in words in which the *mn* are retained, the lower orders often pronounce them *pn* and *gn*; as hi*pn*o or hi*gn*o for hi*mn*o, *hymn.* So the ancients (thirteenth century) occasionally wrote Dy*pn*a and

[1] See note on *ñ*.

Dy*gn*a for Calila e Di*mn*a (Fables of Bilpay). Compare the Greek hu*pn*os and Latin so*mn*us.

b. Latin and English *mm* stand in modern Spanish as *nm* : —

inmenso, *boundless.* inmortal, *immortal.*

R SMOOTH.

36. Single *r*, between vowels, has the pure alphabetic sound, as in ve*r*y : —

ara, *altar.* | bolero, *a dance.* | toro, *bull.*

37. Before any consonant, and after *b*, *d*, *t*, *v*,— *r* must always have a full, decided, and independent sound : —

arde, *it burns.* | ladra, (*the dog*) *barks.*
hombre, *man.* | lastre, *ballast.*
catre, *cot-bed.*

Thus *arr-th̤ey*, *ōm'-b'rey*, *kä't'rey*.

38. When final, the single *r* is still more distinctly pronounced, and is emphasized almost into the character of the double *rr* : —

hablar, *to speak.* | vivir, *to live.*
comer, *to eat.* | placer, *pleasure.*

The vowel before *r* is to be given quick and emphatic, not drawling as in English.

R ROUGH.

39. When the single *r* stands at the beginning of a word, or after the letters *l*, *n*, *s*, it is pronounced with a rolling sound.[1] The same is always the case and in all positions when the *r* is doubled : —

[1] This rough sound of *r* after *l*, *n*, and *s*, has occasioned the intercalation of *d*, as well as the obsolete makeshift of transposition. Thus val*d*rá for *val'rd*; ven*d*rá for *ven'rd* (ancient *verna*) ; ten*d*rá for *ten'ra* (ancient *terna*) ; Es*d*ras, Ezra, for *Es'ras*. So also tie*rn*o, ten*d*er, came from *ten'ro* (tĕnĕru-m) and ye*rn*o (French gen*d*re) from *gen'ro* (gĕnĕru-m), by metathesis of *nr*.

R SMOOTH.	R ROLLING.
pera, *pear.*	ruedo, (*door*)*mat.*
aro, *hoop.*	rogar, *to request.*
pardo, *grey.*	ramo, *bough.*
puerto, *port.*	roto, *broken.*
tarde, *evening.*	ruído, *noise.*
cordero, *lamb.*	alrededor, *around.*
bruto, *brute.*	enredo, *snarl, plot.*
ladron, *thief.*	honra, *honor.*
triste, *sad.*	Israelita, *Israelite.*
arar, *to plough.*	error, *error.*
acabar, *to finish.*	parra, *grapevine.*
ver, *to see.*	torre, *tower.*

S.

40. *S* is always and in every position pronounced like the English *s* in *s*aid, never as in pha*s*e, way*s* : —

mesa, *table.*	racimos, *clusters.*
camisa, *shirt.*	pasas, *raisins.*
base, *basis.*	ese, esa, eso, *that* (is, ea, id).
los, las, *the.*	grueso, *bulky.*
desde, *from, since.*	lesna, *awl.*

X.

41. *X* is now everywhere pronounced as in English, that is, *ks* : —

exacto, *exact.*	sexo, *sex.*

REMARK. — The national prefix *es*, when it comes from the Latin *ex*, has now been graphically (at least) fixed by the Academy as *ex*. The people, however, very generally continue to pronounce, for example,

estranjero, *foreigner*, } while they write { extranjero.
esterior, *external*, } { exterior.

This has produced among the illiterate great confusion, by reason of their interchanging the *es* from *ex* with *es* prothetic, as in *es*plén-dido, *es*cuela, from the Lat. *splendidus*, *schbla*. So one hears ex-plendor, ex*c*alera, ex*c*ándalo, and even ex*c*oba, — for *es*plendor,

splendor; escalera, *staircase*; escándalo, *scandal*; and escoba, *a broom*.[1]

Ligatured Consonants.

Ll.

42. *Ll* is pronounced like *l'y* in "wil*l y*ou," or *lli* in Wi*lli*am : —

sello, *stamp*.	llave, *key*.
silla, *chair*.	lloro, *weeping*.
polilla, *moths*.	lleno, *full*.
rastrillo, *rake*.	llueve, *it rains*.

Ñ.

43. *N* with tilde[2] (*ñ*) is pronounced *n'y*, as in "a*n y*ew," or like *ni* in u*ni*on[3] : —

año, *year*.	otoño, *autumn*.
peldaño, *round* (*of a ladder*).	barreño, *dish-trough*.
leña, *firewood*.	engaño, *deception*.
guiñada, *wink*.	rebaño, *flock*.

44. Ligatured *vowels* are diphthongs and triphthongs.

---

[1] A copy of the last Dictionary of the Academy (1869), printed on one side of a leaf only, leaving the other blank, and which belonged to the late Academician Señor Segovia Izquierdo, fell into my possession at Madrid shortly after the owner's death in 1875. In it I find in his handwriting twenty-eight examples of these false *ex*'s under this characteristic epigraph: "Voces que, comenzando con la sílaba *es*, han dado los ignorantes en escribir con *ex*." He omitted, however, *explendor* and *expléndido*, which I have often heard from otherwise clever, though unlearned, persons.

[2] From *titŭle*-m, a corrupt form of *titŭlu*-m, in its later signification of mark, sign — contracted regularly *tit'le*-m, and by metathesis of the *t'l*, *tilte*, tilde.

[3] The origin of *ñ* is the mark of abbreviation over the original *nn*, *nm* (da*mn*u-m, da*nn*o, daño, *loss*). In the earliest Spanish MSS. the bar (*rasgo*) appears as a mere sign of shortening, as *ãno* for *anno*. Mr. Vollmöller, in his edition of the *Poema del Cid*, has mistaken this *rasgo* for a phonetic sign or tilde, which it certainly came to be later. Mr. Pidal was therefore correct in regarding it as a mere note of abbreviation, and in printing *anno*, although we opine it were preferable to have reproduced faithfully the original bar (*ãno*).

Tonic Accent.

45. Words ending in a consonant not inflectional, are regularly accentuated on the ultimate, unless otherwise graphically indicated: —

verdad, *truth.*	cáliz, (*sacramental*) *cup.*
comer, *to eat.*	huésped, *guest.*
jardin, *garden.*	árbol, *tree.*
amor, *love.*	mármol, *marble.*
desleal, *disloyal.*	cárcel, *prison.*
despues, *afterwards.*	alcázar, (*fortified*) *palace.*
Adam, *Adam.*	útil, *useful.*
Frances, *Frenchman.*	Cádiz, *Cadiz.*
Aleman, *German.*	Támesis, *Thames.*
capaz, *capable.*	Estéban, *Stephen.*
desliz, (*moral*) *slip.*	Búrgos, *Burgos* (Πύργος).

An inflectional termination is the plural sign (*s*, *es*) or the tense endings (*s*, *es*, *mos*, *an*, *en*).

a. The words **carácter**, *character*, and **régimen**, *government*, *regimen*, form the irregularly accented plurals *caractéres*, *regímenes*.

b. Infinitives and Imperatives second person plural, follow the regular rule of consonant terminals: —

querer, *to wish.*	quered, *wish ye.*
comprar, *to buy.*	comprad, *buy ye.*

c. The second person plural of verbs has the accentuation on the ultimate, or the diphthong, unless otherwise graphically marked: —

llamais, *ye call.*	llamábais, *ye were calling.*
quereis, *ye wish.*	queríais, *ye were wishing.*
decis, *ye say.*	compráseis, *ye should buy.*

d. Proper names in *ez* and a few in *es* accentuate the penult; the rest follow the general rule of consonant terminals: —

Fernández.	Cervántes.	Solís.
Martínez.	Móntes.	Madóz.
Sánchez.	Sanchíz.	Valdés.
Díez.	Ruíz.	Vivés.
Flóres.	Muñíz.	Cortés.[1]

46. Words ending primarily in a vowel or a diphthong (which is always considered as constituting a single syllable) are regularly accentuated on the penult, unless otherwise marked: —

odio, *hatred.*	lástima, *pity.*
rostro, *countenance.*	zángano, *drone.*
buitre, *vulture.*	máquina, *machine.*
manteca, *butter.*	alegría, *joy.*
audiencia, *upper court.*	alelí, *gilly flower.*
andamio, *staging.*	compró, *he bought.*

a. This principle is not modified by inflectional endings. See, however, § 45, *b*, *c*: —

odios, *rancor.*	máquinas, *machines.*
amas, *thou lovest.*	quieren, *they wish.*

47. Compound words have the accentuation of their simple components, and adverbs in *mente* follow the natural stress of the adjective to which that ending is attached: —

un pisa-verde, *an exquisite.*	fácilmente, *easily.*
un saca-corchos, *a corkscrew.*	sábiamente, *sagely.*
un corta-plumas, *a penknife.*	tenázmente, *tenaciously.*

---

[1] The unaccented endings *ez*, *es*, are patronymics, formed on the basis of the Latin ablative *is*. Thus, Fernández is from è **Ferdinandis**, *of the Ferdinand family;* Cervántes, from è **Servandis**, *of the Servandos.* The accented ending *es*, on the contrary, is geographical, from *-ensis*, formed like *Cartha-*

Graphic Accent.

48. The acute accent (′) is the only mark now in use in Spanish. It should be graphically applied only in the following cases: —

a. To indicate an irregularly accentuated syllable: —

melancólico, *melancholy.*	mucho, *much.*
paréntesis, *parenthesis.*	español, *Spanish.*
veníamos, *we were coming.*	frances, *French.*

b. To distinguish homonyms: —

a, *has* (obsolete).	á, *to, in, at.*
al, *to the.*	ál, *otherwise* (*aliàs*).
aún, *yet, still.*	áun, *even, also.*
de, *of, from.*	dé, *he may give.*
e, *I have* (obsolete).	é, *and* (before i or hi).
el, *the.*	él, *he, him.*
ha, *has.*	há, *ago.*
luego, *afterward.*	luégo, *therefore.*
mi, *my.*	mí, *me* (prepositional case).
mas, *but.*	más, *more.*
o, *oh.*	ó, *or* (and ú before o).
se, *one's self.*	sé, *I know; be thou.*
si, *if.*	sí, *yes; one's self* (prepos. case).
te, *thee.*	té, *tea.*
tu, *thy.*	tú, *thou.*

c. To distinguish verbs identical in form with other parts of speech; also verbs with pronouns attached to them: —

como, *as.*	cómo, *I eat.*
sueño, *dream.*	suéño, *I dream.*
dáme, *give me.*	siéntese, *sit down.*
téngase, *let him have.*	véte, be off (*go thyself*).

---

giniensis, Span. *Cartaginés; Valdensis*, Span. *Valdés.* See Godoy Alcántara: *Apellidos Castellanos*, Madrid, 1871, — a very interesting, but not very scholarly, book, in view of the author's facilities.

d. To distinguish demonstrative adjectives used substantively: —

aquel, *that* (*ille*).	aquél, *that one.*
ese, *that* (*iste*).	ése, *that one.*
este, *this* (*hic*).	éste, *this one.*

e. To distinguish the interrogative and exclamatory use, direct and indirect, of certain pronouns and adverbs: —

como, *as.*	cómo, *how?*
cual, *as, which.*	cuál, *which?*
cuan, *as.*	cuán, *how!*
cuando, *when.*	cuándo, *when?*
cuanto, *as much.*	cuánto, *how much?*
cuyo, *whose.*	cúyo, *whose?*
donde, *where.*	dónde, *where?*
que, *which, that.*	qué, *what?*
quien, *who.*	quién, *who?*

f. In certain correlatives: —

quién—quién, *one—another, some—others.*
cuáles—cuáles, *some—others.*

REMARK. — The Academy does not always strictly observe its own rules touching the graphic accent, but the great printers of Madrid (Aribau & Co., Fortanet, and Ginesta) are sufficient guides.

Division of Syllables.

49. A single consonant between vowels begins a syllable: —

me-sa, *table.*	la-bor, *needle-work.*

a. The letters *ch, rr, ll,* and *ñ,* are considered as simple consonants, and follow the same rule: —

mu-cha-cho, *boy.*	ni-ño, *child.*
pan-ta-lla, *lamp-shade.*	tie-rra, *land.*

50. Two separable consonants standing between vowels are divided: —

puer-ta, *door.*	gus-to, *pleasure.*

Exception. — The letters *b, c, ch, d, f, g, j, p, q, t, v, z,* followed by *l* or *r,* cannot be separated, unless they unite compound words: —

pa-la-bra, *word.*	ta-bla, *board.*
si-glo, *century.*	po-drá, *he will be able.*

sub-lu-nar, *sub-lunar.*

51. Three or four consonants, of which *s* is the second, divide after the *s*: —

cons-tan-te, *constant.*	trans-cri-bir, to copy.

a. Otherwise compound words are to be resolved into their elements: —

cor-ta-plu-mas, *penknife.*	ca-ri-lar-go, *long-faced.*
pre-po-si-cion, *preposition.*	ad-je-ti-vo, *adjective.*

52. True diphthongs and triphthongs are indivisible:

vie-ne, *he comes.*	bue-no, *good.*
pre-ciais, *ye prize.*	va-cieis, *ye may empty.*

but

lo-or, *praise.*	le-er, *to read.*
a-ta-ud, *coffin.*	gan-zú-a, *false key.*

Capital Letters.

53. These follow the same general laws as in English, with the following important exceptions: —

a. Adjectives derived from the names of nations,

provinces, towns, and men, are written with small initials : —

el idioma frances, *the French language.*
la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit and humor.*
las tablas alfonsíes, *the Alfonsinian Tables.*
la escena madrileña, *the Madrid stage* (*theatre*).

but

el Andaluz, *the Andalusian.*
el Madrileño, *the Madrilenian.*
el Frances, *the Frenchman.*
el Catalan, *the Catalonian.*

b. The pronoun **yo**, *I*, is written with a small initial, unless it begins a sentence after a period, or introduces a quotation : —

él y yo, *he and I.*
dijo : "Yo soy," *he said : "it is I."*

Orthographic Signs.

54. The diæresis is used to dissolve a diphthong, and to render vocal a silent *u* after *g* : —

süave, *mild.*
cigüena, *stork.*
rïela, *it glimmers.*
argüir, *to argue.*

55. The punctuation marks are identical in Spanish and English, except the signs of interrogation and exclamation, which in Spanish, beside the regular form at the end of the phrase, are inverted at the beginning : —

¿tiene usted un libro ? *have you a book ?*
¡ cuán presto se va el placer ! *how quickly pleasure passes away !*

56. The following are the technical names of most of the terms relating to orthographical signs : —

comma (,) coma.
semicolon (;) punto y coma.
colon (:) dos puntos.
period (.) punto.
full stop, punto final.
interrogation (¿–?) interrogacion.
exclamation (¡–!) admiracion.
dash (—) rayita.
" (....) puntos suspensivos.
double dash (=) dos rayitas.

hyphen (-) guion.
diaeresis (··) crema.
parenthesis ( ) paréntesis.
brackets ([]) corchetes.
brace (}) corchete.
apostrophe (') apóstrofo or virgulilla.
quotation marks (" ") comillas.
index (☞) manecilla.
star (*) estrellita.
asterisk, asterisco.
dagger (†) cruz.
section (§) párrafo.
paragraph (¶) calderon.
tilde (~) tilde, as *ñ*.
bar (—) rasgo, as admon̄. for administracion, *office*.[1]
cedilla (ç) cedilla (obsolete).
caret (∧) llamada.
capitals (letras) mayúsculas.
small letters, minúsculas.
catch word, reclamo.
reference, cita, llamada.
italics, cursiva, bastardilla.
to underscore, subrayar.

NOTE

ON CASTILIAN VULGARISMS AMONG THE LOWER CLASSES, FREQUENTLY QUOTED IN LITERATURE.

Vowels.

57. The vowel *e* is occasionally employed for *i*: —

prencipal for principal.
prencipio " principio.
vesitar " visitar.
vesita for visita.
enquilino " inquilino.
endina " indigna.
denguno for ninguno.

58. Vowels are diphthongized irregularly, and *i* inserted: —

haiga for haya.
cudiáo, cuidiáo " cuidado.
quiá for ca.
naide " nadie.
Alifonso, a, " Alfonso, a.

59. The diphthong *ie* is reduced to its primitive *e*, and *vice versa*: —

pacencia for paciencia.
concencia for conciencia.
diferiencia for diferencia.

---

[1] This sign of abbreviation which originated the tilde is taken from the Arabs. See Wright's Arabic Grammar, Vol. I., p. 23, *d*.

Consonants.

60. *B* and *v* easily pass over into *g* by the aspirate *h*:—

vuelve, *he returns*,	makes	**huelve**	and	**güelve.**
bueno, *good*,	"	**hueno**	"	**güeno.**
abuelo, *grandfather*,	"	**ahuelo**	"	**agüelo.**
buhardilla, *attic*,	"	**huardilla**	"	**guardilla.**

a. On the other hand, *g* passes over into *b* through *h*:—

agur, *bye-bye*,	makes	**ahur**	and	**abur.**[1]
aguja, *needle*,	"	**ahuja**	"	**abuja.**
agujero, *hole*,	"	**ahujero**	"	**bujero.**

Some of these forms, viz., *agüelo*, *guardilla*, *abur*, *avur*, and *ahur*, are included in the native dictionaries, while all are frequent in the national drama and *novela de costumbres*.[2]

61. *Cc.* *C* is rejected before *c* and *t*, as might be expected from the national repugnance to double letters: —

acion	for	accion.	efeto	for	efecto.
aflicion	"	afliccion.	direto	"	directo.
facioso	"	faccioso.	conduta	"	conducta.

Hence the literary forms **objeto**, *object*, and **sujeto**, *subject*, **aficion** (affectio), *fondness*, in obedience to this popular law.

62. *Ch.* Among the peasants of both Castiles, a very peculiar sound of the *ch* is frequently heard, approaching the Basque *ts*:— mu*ch*a*ch*a, le*ch*e, *ch*ata.

---

[1] *Agur* (French *heur* in *bonheur*, *malheur*) is a remnant of the Roman passing salutation "bonum *augur*ium tibi sit," our "good luck to you," now used in Spain in turning from a person or on leaving a shop. The popular tradition is that it means the *devil*, and perhaps the original should read "prosit tibi Augur," the Augur (*i.e.* Apollo) be with thee. At all events, the celebrated statesman and scholar, Martinez de la Rosa, sought to exorcise the paganism by saying "*Abur adios*."

[2] See among many others the *sainetes* of Ramon de la Cruz, Madrid, 1843, 2 vols. 8°; the *Escenas Matritenses*, of the now venerable Mesonero Romanos, best edition, Madrid, 1862; the *Escenas Andaluzas*, by "El Solitario" (Serafin Estébanez Calderon), Madrid, 1847, 4°, and the *Españoles Pintados por sí mismos*, containing articles by the best talent of contemporary Spain.

63. *D.* This letter is constantly omitted between vowels and when final: —

Práo	for	Prado.	tóo	for	todo.
casáo	"	casado.	é	"	de.
láo	"	lado.	pué ser	"	puede ser.
ocupáo	"	ocupado.	Madrí	"	Madrid.
marío	"	marido.	comé	"	comed.
vía	"	vida.	berdá	"	verdad.
náa and ná	"	nada.	necesiá	"	necesidad.

usté and osté for usted.

The contraction *áo* for *ado* is common to all classes.

a. This system of suppression has produced the degeneration of Spanish words from the Latin: —

sedēre, *to sit,*	Old Span.	seer,[1]	Modern	ser, *to be.*
vidēre, *to see,*	"	veer,	"	ver, *to see.*
legĕre, *to read,*	"	leer,	"	leer.
comedĕre, *to eat,*	"	comer,	"	comer.
delictum, *crime,*	"	delicto	"	delito.
mente captus, *silly,*	"	mentecapto,	"	mentecato.
civitat-ēm, *state,*	"	cibdad, *town,*	"	ciudad.

64. *H* before *ue* frequently passes over into *g*: —

güevo	for	huevo.	**güe**so	for	hueso.
güerta	"	huerta.	**güé**spede	"	huésped.

These incorrect forms are met with in the old literature, especially in Mss. *Güete* for Huete, *Güesca* for Huesca. See also *B*, *V*.

65. *Ll* like *y* consonant: —

yeno for lleno.	**y**eba for lleva.

66. *S* is frequently dropped or barely aspirated, especially when final: —

pué or pue' for pues.	lo' bueno' for los buenos.

---

[1] Gerund: *seyendo;* part, past, *seydo*, *seido*, and *sido*, in Old Spanish, even in documents dated as late as 1502 to 1546, in my possession.

67. *Y* is often pronounced too emphatically, like the English *j*:—

yégua, *mare.*	**ya**, *already.*
yeso, *lime.*	**yo**, *I.*

68. Metathesis is very common:—

Blivia and blibia	for	Biblia, *Bible.*
probe	"	pobre, *poor.*
pedricar	"	predicar, *to preach.*
presona	"	persona, *person.*
percurador	"	procurador, *attorney.*
perlado	"	prelado, *prelate.*
naide	"	nadie, *nobody.*
"abernuncio" (Sancho)	"	"abrenuncio" (D. Quijote), *I renounce.*

69. Other vulgar forms are **conozgo** for **conozco**, *I know*; **dende** for **desde**; **denantes** for **ántes**; **onde** for **donde**. Gipsy words abound in the vocabulary of the lower orders; as, **chavó** for **muchacho**; **parné** for **dinero**; **camelar** for **querer**; **diquelar** for **ver**,[1] etc. Of English the Peninsular war seems to have bequeathed only **el monís**, *the money!*

---

[1] The best work for these terms, which are scattered about the modern popular drama, is *El Gitanismo*, containing Grammar and Vocabulary, by F. S. Mayo, *aliàs* Quindalé, Madrid, 1870, 12°, pp. 152.

SECTION SECOND.

FORM AND INFLECTION.

Preliminary Remarks.

70. There are in Spanish the usual nine Parts of Speech; namely, the noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

71. Of these Parts of Speech, the first five are capable of various degrees of *inflection*; the rest are said to be *invariable*.[1]

72. The inflection of nouns, adjectives, and pronouns may also be called *declension*; that of verbs, *conjugation*. Adjectives, adjective pronouns, and past participles are likewise said to be *varied*, with respect to gender and number.

73. Declinable or inflected words have number, gender, and, to a certain extent, case. Verbs have number and person, mode and tense.

74. The declinable parts of speech are inflected by the aid of prepositions, chiefly **de**, *of*, *from*, and **á**, *to*, *at*, which may for this reason be termed case-prepositions.

75. Although cases are, properly speaking, wanting in Spanish, except in the personal pronouns, their technical names are convenient for exact and concise statement. We shall, therefore, designate them as follows: —

---

[1] The inflection of a word signifies the various changes that take place in its structure or endings to express number, gender, case, person, mode, and tense.

	Case Name.	Eng. Equivalent.	Span. Signs.	Eng. Signs.
N.	Nominative.	Nomin. or Subject.		
G.	Genitive.	Possessive.	**de**	*'s, s', of, from.*
D.	Dative.	Indirect Objective.	**á**	*to, at.*
I.A.	Impersonal Accusative.	Direct Objective.		
P.A.	Personal Accusative.	Direct Objective.	**á**	
P.	Prepositional.	(*With any preposition.*)		

76. The Accusative is usually like the Nominative when the direct object of an active transitive verb is the name of a thing, animal, or place (*Impersonal Accusative*), and like the Dative when the direct object represents a person, thing, or abstract quality personified (*Personal Accusative*): —

este muchacho destroza **sus libros**,	this boy mutilates his books.
un buen padre quiere **á sus hijos**,	a good father loves his children.
el vicio aborrece **á la virtud**,	vice abhors virtue.

77. The Prepositional case is like the Nominative, except in certain personal pronouns: —

el niño sale á paseo con **el vecino**,	the child goes out to walk **with** the neighbor.
no podrá hacer eso sin **mí**,	he cannot do that without me.
estaba fuera de **sí** de gozo,	he was beside himself for joy.
¡Dios se apiade de **tí**!	may God take pity on thee!
no quiero ir con **él**,	I do not care to go with him.

78. Leading prepositions are: —

á, *to* (motion to); *at* (position).
ante, *before* (presence).
con, *with* (means, accompaniment).
contra, *against*.
de, *of, from* (possession, origin).
desde, *from, since* (time, place).
en, *in, at* (state, place).
entre, *between* (two); *among* (several).
hácia, *towards, toward*.
hasta, *till, until, to, up to*.
para, *for* (destination); *to* (end).
para con, *toward* (moral direction).
por, *by* (agent); *for* (motive).
sin, *without*.
sobre, *on, upon*.
tras, *after, behind* (order).

a. The following govern the Genitive: —

á casa de, *to one's house* (motion).
ántes de; *before* (time, order).
despues de, *after* (time, order).
delante de, *before* (place, position).
detrás de, *behind* (place, position).
cerca de, *near.*
en casa de, *in, at, one's house* (rest).
léjos de, *far from.*
encima de, *on, upon, over.*
debajo de, *under, beneath.*

Examples.

entrega el libro **al** hombre,	he delivers the book to the man.
vamos todos **á** Sevilla,	let us all go to Seville.
cartas **á** varios,	letters to divers (persons).
Pedro quiere **á** Juan,	Peter likes John.
está **á** la puerta,	he stands at the door.
ante el rey, el alcalde,	before the king, the mayor.
se hirió **con** una lanza,	he wounded himself with a lance.
salió **con** un amigo,	he went out with a friend.
se sublevaron **contra** la autoridad,	they revolted against the authorities.
la madre **del** mozo,	the lad's mother.
la fuerza **de** la sangre,	the power of blood.
vengo **de** Italia,	I come from Italy.
construido **de** laton,	made out of brass.
contento **de** álguien,	satisfied with somebody.
vive **del** viento,	he lives on air.
bebe **del** vaso,	he drinks out of a glass.
es amado **de** todos,	he is beloved by all.
desde aquel dia,	from (since) that day.
desde el palacio,	from the palace.
en Madrid; **en** casa,	at Madrid; at home.
en el campo; **en** la ciudad,	in the country; in the city.
esta carta es **para** mí,	this letter is for me.
lo hago **para** un amigo,	I do it for a friend.
se come **para** vivir,	men eat to live.
justo **para con** los hombres,	just toward men.
hecho **por** un artesano,	made by a mechanic.
creado **por** Dios,	created by God.
por un buen motivo,	for a good reason

salió sin capa,	he went out without a cloak.
tras este sugeto vinó otró,	after this person came another.
á casa del cura,	to the curate's (house).
ántes de éste entré yo,	I came in before this (man).
ántes del tiempo,	before the time.
usted está **ántes de él,**	you are before him (rank).
despues de esto,	after this.
vino **despues de mí,**	he came after me.
delante del palacio,	before the palace.
detrás de la puerta,	behind the door.
cerca de la ciudad,	near the city.
en casa de un amigo,	at a friend's (house).
léjos de la poblacion,	far from the town.
encima de la mesa,	on the table.
debajo de la mesa.	under the table.

REMARK. — In giving the various inflections of declinable words, the enumeration of cases will ordinarily be limited, for brevity's sake, to the Nominative, Genitive, Dative, and one of the two Accusatives.

The Articles.[1]

79. The Articles are of two sorts: the Definite, **el,** *the*, and the Indefinite, **un,** *an* or *a*. They agree with the noun they limit in gender, number, and case, and are inflected as follows:—

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	Masc.	**Fem.**		**Masc.**	**Fem.**	
N.	**el**	**la**	*the.*	**los**	**las**	*the.*
G.	**del**	**de la**	*'s, of,* or *from the.*	**de los**	**de las**	*s', of* or *from the*
D.	**al**	**á la**	*to* or *at the.*	**á los**	**á las**	*to* or *at the.*
A.	**el**	**la**	*the.*	**los**	**las**	*the.*
N.	**un**	**una**	*an* or *a.*	(Wanting.)		
G.	**de un**	**de una**	*of* or *from an* or *a.*			
D.	**á un**	**á una**	*to* or *at an* or *a.*			
A.	**un**	**una**	*an* or *a.*			

[1] Although the Articles are properly determinative adjectives, they are given here because they serve to distinguish the gender and case of nouns.

80. **Del** and **al** are contractions of *de el* and *á el* respectively. At the present day the uncontracted forms are used only when the article **el** belongs to a quoted epithet, title, or heading:—

un suelto de 'El Imparcial,'	an item in 'The Impartial.'
una extraordinaria á 'El Porvenir,'	a 'Porvenir' extra.
una carta de 'El Globo,'	a letter in 'The Globe.'

but

un artículo de fondo del Diario de la Corte,	a leader in the Court Journal.
una carta al Diario oficial,	a letter to the official Gazette.

81. The Masculine Definite Article **el** is at present regularly employed before a feminine noun in the singular number, when it begins with the syllable *a* or *ha* having the tonic accent:—

el alma, *the soul* (in general).	la alegría, *the joy*.
el ánima, *the soul* (in purgatory).	la animacion, *the stir*.
el ama,[1] *the mistress, nurse*.	la aguja, *the needle*.
el água, *the water*.	la alhaja, *the jewel*.
el águila, *the eagle*.	la avenida, *the inundation*.
el ave, *the bird* (generic).	la armadura, *the mounting*.
el arte, *the art*.	la hacienda, *the estate*.
el habla, *the speech*.	la hazaña, *the exploit*.
el hambre, *the famine*.	la Habana, (*the*) *Havana*.

but

las almas, las águilas,	the souls, the eagles.
el arte poética,	the art of poetry (poetic art).
la alta casa,	the lofty house.
el agua está ya clara,	the water is now clear.

[1] Una ama de llaves or de gobierno, *a housekeeper;* una ama de leche, *a wet-nurse;* una ama, in general, *a mistress, the lady of the house*, with reference to the servants, employees, etc.

a. The Indefinite Article is often found employed in the same way, whatever be the accent, but not by the best modern writers and speakers: —

un ave, for una ave,	a bird.
"con un alma toda fuego,"	with a soul all fire.

82. The Indefinite Article has properly no plural; the adjective **unos**, fem. **unas**, *some*, may, however, be used to express the partitive value of a substantive, especially when it has an attribute: —

tengo casas y heredades,	I have houses and lands.
el rey posee palacios,	the king possesses palaces.
tengo unas casas muy bonitas,	I have some very pretty houses.
el rey posee unos palacios muy regalados,	the king possesses some very sumptuous palaces.

a. When the noun has no attribute, *unos* is equivalent to *a few*, but with a weaker force than *algunos* or *unos cuantos*, in the signification of *some*, *any*, *a few*: —

una frutera con unas frutas,	a dish with fruit.
quiso dar unos pasos,	he was about to take (a few) steps.
¿tiene usted (algunos) libros?	have you (any) books?
tengo algunos; no tengo más que unos cuantos,	I have some; I have only a few

REMARK. — It is evident, therefore, that there is no partitive article in Spanish as in French, although there is a partitive construction formed by the genitive case: —

son gentes de las más ricas que hay en la ciudad,	they are (some) of the wealthiest people in town.
su marido es elector y de los influyentes,	her husband is a voter, and (one) of the influential (ones).

The Determinative Lo.

83 The so-called neuter article **lo**, *the*, is employed with adjectives, adverbs, and pronouns (very seldom and always illogically with nouns), to express substantive ideas: —

lo bueno,	the good, that which is good, the good thing (τὸ ἀγαθόν).
lo malo,	the evil, that which is bad, the evil thing (τὸ κακόν).
lo ameno,	what is lovely, the loveliness (*i.e.* of nature).
lo posible,	what is possible, one's best, the possibility.
lo infame,	what is infamous, the infamy.
lo mejor,	the best, that which is best, the best thing.
lo olvidado,	that which is forgotten, the past and gone.
lo que,	that which, what; todo lo que, *all that*.
lo cual,	which thing, which; todo lo cual, *all of which*.
lo mio,	mine, that which or what is mine (τὸ ἐμόν).
lo demás,	the rest, that which or what remains.

lo justo no es siempre lo más hacedero,	what is just is not always what is most feasible.
lo ameno de este valle,	the loveliness of this vale.
haré lo posible para efectuarlo,	I shall do my best to bring it about.
reconozco lo infame de su accion,	I acknowledge the infamousness of his act.
no entiendo lo que dice,	I do not catch what he says.
todo lo que reluce no es oro,	all is not gold that glitters.
dicho lo cual se retiró,	saying which he withdrew.
dió á cada uno lo suyo,	he gave to each his own.

a. As a pronoun, as well as an article, *lo* has a variety of uses that need only be illustrated at this point: —

lo creo, lo aseguro,	I think so, I assert it confidently.
yo soy ciego y él no lo es,	I am blind and he is not (so).
él es artista y yo no lo soy,	he is an artist and I am not (one).

es lo de siempre,	it is the old story (that of alway).
lo del palacio, lo del rey,	the (affair) of the palace, of the king.
versos á lo divino,[1]	verses (turned) into the sacred (style).

See further under The Adjective.

The Noun.

GENDER.

84. Spanish nouns have two Genders only: the Masculine and Feminine. All substantives, even those designating inanimate things, substances, and abstract ideas, are of one of these two genders: —

el hombre, *the man.*	la mujer, *the woman.*
el caballo, *the horse.*	la vaca, *the cow.*
el libro, *the book.*	la pluma, *the pen.*
el azúcar, (*the*) *sugar.*	la leche, (*the*) *milk.*
el vicio, (*the*) *vice, bad habit.*	la virtud, (*the*) *virtue.*

Hence *libro, azúcar, vicio,* for example, are grammatically considered to be males, like *hombre, caballo;* and the corresponding pronouns él, *he,* le, *him,* apply equally in both cases. So *pluma, leche, virtud,* are considered as females, and the corresponding pronouns would be ella, *she,* la, *her. It,* then, is not a translation of *él, le, ella, la,* when reference is made to the name of a thing, substance, or an abstract idea, but an idiomatic adaptation to English usage. The Spanish translation of *it* could only be *ello* as subject, if expressed, and *lo* as object or predicate: —

---

[1] Such is court or secular poetry metamorphosed into religious verse by a sort of sacred travesty. Boscan and Garcilaso (1543) were so transmuted by one Sebastian de Córdoba (1575). For examples, see my edition of Boscan, Madrid, 1875, at pp. xxvii and 520.

veo al hombre, le veo,	I see the man, I see him.
tengo el libro, le tengo,	I have the book, I have him (it).
busco á la dama, la busco,	I seek the lady, I seek her.
busco la pluma, la busco,	I seek the pen, I seek her (it).
¿crees lo que dice? lo creo,	do you believe what he says? I believe it.
(ello) consta, *it is evident.*	

85. *General Rule.* — In the greatest number of Spanish nouns, the ending *o* indicates the masculine gender, and the ending *a* the feminine: —

el hermano, *the brother.*	la tia, *the aunt.*
el gozo, *the joy.*	la alegría, (*the*) *delight.*

86. The gender of a word may be determined in part by its signification and in part by its ending.

87. Masculines by signification are: —

a. All nouns of whatever ending that denote males, or the dignities, professions, and pursuits commonly assigned to males: —

el papa, *the pope.*	el grabador, *the engraver.*
el rey, *the king.*	el albañil, *the mason.*
el juez, *the judge.*	el ebanista, *the cabinet-maker.*
el cura, *the curate.*	el sastre, *the tailor.*
el periodista, *the journalist.*	el buey, *the ox.*
el tahur, *the gambler.*	el avestruz, *the ostrich.*

b. The names of countries, cities, and towns usually follow the gender indicated by the final vowels *o*, *a*; if they end in a consonant they are mostly masculine: —

Valencia, Segovia, la Andalucía.	Logroño, Oviedo, Lugo, el Cárpio.
Madrid, Vélez, Búrgos.	Jaén, Almodóvar, el Escorial.

REMARK. — Masculines in *o* may be poetically used in the feminine, the noun la ciudad, *the city*, being understood; and feminines in *a* are masculine when the inhabitants are intended: —

la gran Toledo, *great Toledo.* | todo Málaga, *all Malaga.*

Except in those proper names of places from which the article is inseparable: —

la gran ciudad del Toboso,	the great city of El Toboso.
Bernardo del Carpio,	Bernard of El Carpio.
la Coruña entera,	All Corunna (the "Groyne" entire).

c. The names of most rivers, whatever be the ending: —

el Guadiana (*wâdî-Anas*).	el Guadalaviar (*wâd-âl-abiâd, the white river*).
el Guadalquivir (*wâd-âl-kebîr, the great river*).	el Guadalajara (*stony river*).

d. Indeclinable parts of speech and phrases used substantively: —

el porqué, *the wherefore.*	el besamanos, *the (royal) salutation.*
el sí, *the consent.*	el pro y el contra, *the pro and con.*
el pagaré, *the promissory note.*	el quién sabe, *the query.*
los afueras, *the outskirts.*	el qué dirán, *public gossip.*
el viva, *the applause.*	el vayven or vaiven (va y viene), *the oscillation.*
el pésame, *the condolence.*	
el conquibus, *the wherewithal.*	
el creer, *believing, belief.*	

e. The names of most fruit-trees or their wood are masculine, while those of their fruits are feminine: —

el manzano, *the apple-tree.*	una manzana, *an apple.*
el castaño, *the chestnut-tree.*	una castaña, *a chestnut.*
el naranjo, *the orange-tree.*	una naranja, *an orange.*
el guindo, *the cherry-tree.*	una guinda, *a cherry.*
el avellano, *the hazel-tree.*	una avellana, *a hazelnut.*

el olivo, *the olive-tree.*	una aceituna, *an olive.*
el peral, *the pear-tree.*	una pera, *a pear.*
el moral, *the mulberry-tree.*	una mora, *a mulberry.*
el nogal *or* la noguera, *the walnut.*	una nuez, *a walnut.*
el roble *or* la encina,[1] *the oak.*	una bellota, *an acorn.*

Exceptions.

la palmera, *the palm-tree.*	un dátil, *a date.*
la higuera, *the fig-tree.*	un higo, *a fig.* una breva, *an early fig.*
el limonero, *the lemon-tree.*	un limon, *a lemon.*
el membrillero, *the quince.*	un membrillo, *a quince.*
el albaricoquero, *the apricot.*	un albaricoque, *an apricot.*

REMARK. — *El fruto* (masc.) is the fruit on the tree, or in a figurative sense; *la fruta* (fem.) is the fruit gathered, exposed in the market, or served on the table. On the other hand, *la rama* is the bough or branch attached to the tree, and *el ramo*, when plucked, as also in a metaphorical sense.

88. Feminine by signification are:—

a. All nouns, of whatever ending, which denote females, or the dignities, offices, professions, and pursuits which may be ascribed in Spanish countries to women:—

la emperatriz, *the empress.*	la estanquera, *the tobacconist.*
la reina, *the queen.*	la patrona, *the landlady.*
la infanta, *the princess royal.*	la peinadora, *the lady's hair-dresser.*
la vaca, *the cow.*	la doncella, *the lady's maid.*
la gallina, *the hen.*	la oficiala, *the work-woman.*
la costurera, *the seamstress.*	

Except: el dueño, *the owner*, *proprietor*, or *proprietress*; un ángel, *an angel*, which are applicable to persons of either sex.

---

[1] The Latin *quercus* exists only in the family name *Alburquerque;* that is, *arbor querci* (kerki), the ancestral arms being an oak on a white ground. See Madoz and Nuñez de Castro. *Encina* is from the diminutive of *ilex*, — *ilicina*, *elcina*, *encina*. The ancient family name was written *Enzina*, *Enzinas*, and *Ençina*, etc. *Roble* is from *robur* (*rŏbŏre*, roble).

b. All letters of the alphabet: —

la b (bé), *the letter b.* | una h (ache), *an h.*

89. Masculines by ending are: —

a. All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *o*: —

el libro, *the book.*
el reino, *the kingdom.*
el suelo, *the ground, floor.*
el tintero, *the inkstand.*
el cerro, *the hill.*
el palacio, *the palace.*

Except: la mano, *the hand;* la reo, *the (female) culprit.*

b. Nouns in *a* designating males, or derived from Latin masculines: —

el monarca, *the monarch.*
el Carlista, *the Carlist.*
el cometa, *the comet.*
el planeta, *the planet.*
los albacéas, *executors* (Arabic).
el dia, *the day.*

Also, el mapa, *the map.*

Likewise foreign words in general ending in an accented *á*: el sofá, *the sofa;* el maná, (*the*) *manna;* el albalá, *the royal patent* or *certificate.*

c. Nouns in *a* derived from Greek and Latin neuters in *a* (genitive *-ατος, -atis*), or such as follow their analogy: —

el clima, *the climate.*
el drama, *the drama.*
el enigma, *the enigma.*
el idioma,[1] *the language.*
el lema, *the motto, legend* (λῆμμα).
el tema, *the theme, exercise.*
el problema, *the problem.*
el poema, *the poem.*
el réuma, *the cold.*
el sistema, *the system.*
el telegrama, *the telegram.*
el programa, *the program.*

---

[1] Never *idiom* as a peculiarity of speech, which is *idiotismo* in Spanish.

90. Feminines by *ending* are: —

a. All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *a*, derived from Latin feminines of the first declension, or from neuter plurals. The latter often have, besides the singular meaning, a collective one echoing their plural origin: —

la mesa, *the table.*
la tabla, *the board, plank.*
la regla, *the rule.*
la casa, *the house.*
la silla, *the chair.*
la puerta, *the door, gate.*
la hoja,[1] *the leaf, leaves.*
la caza, *the shooting, game.*
la leña, *the firewood.*
la viña, *the vine, vineyard.*
la boda, *the marriage, nuptials.*
la loza, *the crockery.*

From mensa, tabŭla, regŭla, casa, sella, porta; folia, capta, ligna, vinea, vota, lutea.

b. Nouns terminated in *dad, tad, tud, ion, umbre, ie,* which are derived from Latin accusatives feminine in *tatem, tutem, ionem, inem, iem:* —

la verdad, *the truth.*
la libertad, (*the*) *liberty.*
la virtud, (*the*) *virtue.*
la nacion, *the nation.*
la muchedumbre, *the throng.*
la servidumbre, *the servants* (collectively).
la espécie, *the species.*
la série, *the series.*
la superficie, *the surface.*

From veritatem, libertatem, virtutem, nationem, multitudinem, speciem, *etc.*

91. Nouns not denoting males or females, and those terminated or derived otherwise than above indicated, do not uniformly show the gender, in which case it is to

---

[1] The collective sense is illustrated in this sentence: esta planta lleva mucha hoja, *this plant bears much leaf,* or *has all gone to leaves,* a phraseology very common among Castilian farmers and peasants.

be learned by a habit of associating the noun with an article[1]:—

el árbol (*arborem*, f.), *the tree.*	la cárcel (*carcerem*, m.), *the jail.*
el talle (la *taille*), *the waist.*	la calle, *the street.*

92. Masculine nouns in *a* may assume the feminine article when they are applicable to women:—

un Belga,	una Belga,	a Belgian.
un Carlista,	una Carlista,	a Carlist.
un artista,	una artista,	an artist.
un compatriota,	una compatriota,	a compatriot.
un atleta,	una atleta,	an athlete.
un indígena,	una indígena,	a native, aboriginal.

a. On the other hand, a few feminines in *a* now generally assume the masculine article when they denote male persons:—

la centinela,	el centinela,	the sentinel.
la espía,	el espía,	the spy.
la guardia,	el guardia marina,	the midshipman.
la guia,	el guia,	the guide.

Except: la recluta, *the recruit*; la escolta, *the escort.*

b. Several nouns denoting persons, of other endings than *a*, have a common form for both genders:—

el *or* la cómplice,	the accomplice.
el *or* la hereje,	the heretic.
el *or* la intérprete,	the interpreter.
el *or* la jóven,	the youth (young man or woman).
el *or* la mártir,	the martyr.
el *or* la reo,	the criminal, defendant.
el *or* la testigo,	the witness.
el *or* la asistente,	the sick-nurse.

[1] Better with the indefinite article, since the definite does not always serve as a guide to gender. See 81.

93. Many feminine nouns in *a*, denoting things, assume personal significations, and then may belong to either gender, but are preferably masculine: —

la espada, *sword.*	el espada,	the swordsman.
la atalaya, *watch-tower.*	el atalaya,	the warden or keeper of a watch-tower.
la trompeta, *trumpet.*	el trompeta,	the trumpeter.
la ayuda, *aid.*	el ayuda,	the aid or aide.
la máscara, *mask.*	el *or* la máscara,	the masker.
la calavera, *skull.*	el calavera,	the mad-cap, harum scarum fellow.
una ordenanza, *ordinance.*	un ordenanza,	an orderly.
la cabeza, *head.*	el cabeza (*seldom*),	the head, chief.
la guia, *guide, guide-book.*	el guia,	the guide (man).
la alhaja, *jewel.*	el alhaja,	the "gem" (irony).[1]
la guarda-ropa, *wardrobe.*	el guarda-ropa,	the master of the w. (office).

94. Many nouns were formerly feminine which are now masculine in ordinary plain prose; preserving the archaic feminine, however, in the poetic, sublime, or affected style, and in certain traditional phrases: —

el mar, *the sea.*	allende la mar, *beyond the sea* (archaic).
el puente, *bridge.*	la puente Segoviana, *the aqueduct at Segovia.*

a. **Márgen,** margin of a book, or edge of a stream, is either masculine or feminine, without difference of meaning: —

las márgenes de este libro han de ser muy anchas,	the margins of this book are to be very broad.
paséandome por el márgen del rio,	walking along the margin of the river.

[1] Generally in the phrase: es buen alhaja, *he's a "pretty" fellow, a "bright boy,"* etc., meaning, he is a man of doubtful reputation, a "lark," a hypocrite, etc.

So el or la dote, *the dowry*; but las dotes, (intellectual or moral) *endowments*.

b. **Arte** is feminine in the plural in all senses. In the singular it is feminine with some adjectives and masculine with others, although the feminine greatly predominates: —

las bellas artes, *the fine arts*.	las artes mecánicas, *the mechanical arts*.
el arte poética (81), *poetic art, the art of poetry*.	el arte dramático, *the drama*.

95. Some nouns, denoting things, have a different meaning according as they are masculine or feminine: —

el cometa, *the comet*.	la cometa, *the kite* (child's toy).
el crisma, (*the*) *holy oil*.	la crisma,[1] *the head* (vulgar).
el cólera, *the cholera*.	la cólera, *the rage*.
el corte, *the cut, edge*.	la córte, *the court, metropolis*.
el canal, *the canal* (or for irrigation).	la canal, *the channel* (straits).
el capital, *capital* (money).	la capital, *the capital* (city).
el moral, *mulberry-tree*.	la moral, *morals, the moral*.
el frente, *front, head*.	la frente, *the forehead*.
el órden, *order* (eccles., polit., archit.).	la órden, *order* (command, order, *e.g.*, of St. James, etc.).
el parte, *despatch, message*, (telegram, etc.).	la parte, *the part, portion*.
el pendiente, *ear-ring*.	la pendiente, *slope, declivity*.
el pez, *fish* (in the water).	la pez, *pitch*.

96. Compound nouns usually assume the gender of the second member when that is in the singular; but if it be in the plural the whole word is masculine, whichever be the gender of the second term: —

---

[1] Because the part *christened*. The people say: te rompo la crisma (or el bautismo), *I'll break your head* (*chrism, baptism*).

la guardaropa, *the wardrobe.*	el cortaplumas, *the pen-knife.*
el guarda-canton,[1] *guard-post.*	el portamonedas, *porte-monnaie.*
el ferro-carril, *the railway.*	el mondadientes, *the tooth-pick.*

Except: el tranvía,[2] *the tramway* (horse railroad).

REMARK. — Of course if the word indicates a male person or his office it will be masculine: —

el guarda-aguja, *the switch-tender.*	el guarda-ropa, *the master of the wardrobe.*

Formation of the Feminine of Personal Nouns.

97. Masculine nouns indicating persons, their employments, creeds, etc., may be made feminine at will by observing the following rules: —

a. By changing final *o* into *a*: —

el abuelo, *grandfather.*	la abuela, *grandmother.*
el hermano, *brother.*	la hermana, *sister.*
el muchacho, *boy, lad.*	la muchacha, *girl.*
el niño, *child, little boy.*	la niña, *child, little girl.*
el amigo, *friend.*	la amiga,[3] *friend.*
el amo, *master.*	el ama (81), *mistress.*
el compañero, *companion.*	la compañera, *companion.*

Except: el diablo, *the evil one*; el diácono, *the deacon*, which make in the feminine la diablesa, *the she-devil*; la diaconisa, *the deaconess*. *Reo* is unchangeable: el reo, la reo, *the defendant*, and *el dueño* means the *owner*, male or female, while *la dueña* signifies

---

[1] I am ignorant of the technical English equivalent of *guardacanton*. It is a stone post set at the corner or edges of a park and along the country highways to keep carriages in the road.

[2] First introduced into Madrid with the thing itself in 1871, and the gender was the object of considerable discussion in the journals. It is now universally given as masculine, and sometimes spelled *tramvia*.

[3] In good society, among *ladies* only. Gentlemen (unless intimate friends) use it with qualificatives, or prefer conocida, *acquaintance*. Es una conocida mia, *she is a friend of mine*, or es mi buena amiga; es muy amiga mia, *she is a good friend of mine*.

the *duenna* in all its associations. But *dueño*, fem. *dueña*, is regular in the sense of master, mistress of one's self; as, no fuí dueña de mí misma, *I was not mistress of myself, I could not control myself.*

b. By adding *a* to the masculine endings *d, l, n, r, s,* and *z* :—

el huésped, *guest, boarder.*	la huéspeda, *the guest.*
el Español, *Spaniard.*	la Española, *Spanish woman.*
un oficial, *officer, journeyman.*	una oficiala, *journeywoman.*
el Aleman, *German.*	la Alemana, *German woman.*
el chiquitin, *little one, wee thing.*	la chiquitina, *wee thing.*
el señor, *the gentleman, Mr.*	la señora, *the lady, Madam, Mrs.*
un aguador, *water-carrier.*	una aguadora, *water girl.*
el marqués, *marquis.*	la marquesa, *marchioness.*
el Francés, *Frenchman.*	la Francesa, *French woman.*
un Andaluz, *Andalusian.*	una Andaluza, *Andalusian.*

c. A few in *dor* and *tor* change those endings into *triz* :—

el actor, *the actor.*	la actriz, *the actress.*
el emperador, *the emperor.*	la emperatriz, *the empress.*

d. The following add *esa* to the stem of the masculine :—

el abad, *the abbot.*	la abadesa, *the abbess.*
el alcáid-e,[1] *the warden.*	la alcaidesa, *the warden's wife.*
el alcald-e, *the mayor.*	la alcaldesa, *the mayor's wife.*
el baron, *the baron.*	la baronesa, *the baroness.*
el cond-e, *the earl.*	la condesa, *the countess.*
el duqu-e, *the duke.*	la duquesa, *the duchess.*

e. The following add *isa* to the masculine stem :—

el diácon-o, *the deacon.*	la diaconisa, *the deaconess.*
el poet-a, *the poet.*	la poetisa, *the poetess.*
el profet-a, *the prophet.*	la profetisa, *the prophetess.*
el sacerdot-e, *the priest.*	la sacerdotisa, *the priestess.*

[1] Formerly an *alcáide* was the *commander* of a fortress; such a personage is now a *general* or *comandante*, while *alcáide* has descended to the chief of a state or city *prison.* The turnkey is *el llavero;* jailor, *carcelero.*

f. Nouns in *e* not derived from Latin present participles generally change that ending into *a* :—

el sastre, *the tailor*.	la sastra, *the tailoress*.
el monje, *the monk*.	la monja, *the nun*.
el elefante, *the elephant*.	la elefanta, *the elephant*.

REMARK. — Héroe, *hero*, makes heroina, *heroine*, and jabalí, *wild boar*, makes jabalina.

g. Nouns in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), formed from, or on the analogy of, the Latin present participle, should be invariable; but popular usage tends more and more to give them the feminine in *a* :—

el comediante,	la comediante, *or*	la comedianta,	the actor, actress.
el farsante,	la farsante,	la farsanta,	the "humbug."
el pariente,	la pariente,	la parienta,	the relative.
el asistente,	la asistente,	la asistenta,	the sick-nurse.
el pretendiente,	la pretendiente,	la pretendienta,	the claimant.
el presidente,	la presidente,	la presidenta,	the president.
el protestante,	la protestante,	la protestanta,	the protestant.

Exception: la infanta, *the princess royal*, never *la infante*.

98. Some nouns are irregular in the formation of the feminine :—

don (with Christian name), *Mr*.	doña (with Christian name), *Mrs*.
el príncipe, *the prince*.	la princesa, *the princess*.
el rey, *the king*.	la reina, *the queen*.
el raton, *the rat*.	la rata, *the mouse*.
el gallo, *the cock*.	la gallina, *the hen*.

a. Likewise the following proper names :—

Cárlos, *Charles*.	Carlota, *Charlotte*.
Enrique, *Henry*.	Enriqueta, *Henrietta*.
Félix, *Felix*.	Felisa, *Felicia*.
José, *Joseph*.	Josefa, *Josepha*.
Miguel, *Michael*	Micaéla, *Michaela*.
Pablo, *Paul*.	Paula, *Paula*.
Pedro, *Peter*.	Petra, *Petra*.

99. A few nouns have a distinct form for the feminine: —

el hombre, *the man.*	la mujer, *the woman.*
el padre, *the father.*	la madre, *the mother.*
el marido, *the husband.*	la esposa, *the wife.*
el yerno, *the son-in-law.*	la nuera, *the daughter-in-law.*
el caballero, *the gentleman.*	la dama, *the lady.*
el toro, el buey, *the bull, the ox.*	la vaca, *the cow.*
el caballo, *the horse.*	la yégua (*equa*), *the mare.*
el varon,[1] *male* (of persons).	la hembra, *the female* (persons).
el macho, *male* (of animals).	la hembra, *the female* (animals).

100. The names of some animals are masculine in form, and include the female; others are feminine in form, and include the male. To distinguish such, the words *macho* (mascŭlus) and *hembra* (foemĭna) are used when necessary: —

el macho de la perdíz,	the male pheasant.
la hembra del ruiseñor,	the female nightingale.

REMARK. — An intolerable construction is often heard among the uneducated; for example: *la perdiz macho, el ruiseñor hembra.* In the predicate, however, we would say: esta perdíz es macho, *this pheasant is a male;* este ruiseñor será hembra, *this nightingale must be a female.*

NUMBER.

101. Spanish nouns have two numbers, the singular and the plural: —

el hombre, *the man.*	los hombres, *the men.*
la mujer, *the woman.*	las mujeres, *the women.*

---

[1] The regular derivative form, la varona, *the woman*, in its proper sense, is only found once (in Genesis II.), to represent the Hebrew *ʔsha*, — "called varona" (*ʔsha*, woman), "because she was taken out of varon" (*ʔsh*, man).

Formation of the Plural.

102. The following assume *s*:—

a. All unaccented vowel terminals, except *y*:—

la casa, *the house.*	las casas, *the houses.*
el billete, *the ticket.*	los billetes, *the tickets.*
la metrópoli, *the capital.*	las metrópolis, *the capitals.*
el amigo, *the friend.*	los amigos, *the friends.*
el espíritu, *the spirit.*	los espíritus, *the spirits.*

b. The accented vowel terminal *é*:—

la fé, (*the*) *faith.*	las fés, *the certificates.*
el pié, *the foot.*	los piés, *the feet.*
el café, *the coffee-house.*	los cafés, *the coffee-houses.*

Except the letter of the alphabet, *la é, las ées.*

103. The following assume *es*:—

a. All consonant terminals, converting *z* into *c* (28 *a*):—

el huésped, *the guest.*	los huéspedes, *the boarders.*
la verdad, *the truth.*	las verdades, *the truths.*
el relój,[1] *the watch.*	los relojes, *the watches.*
la piel, *the skin, hide.*	las pieles, *the skins, hides.*
el varon, *the man, male.*	los varones, *the males.*
la nacion, *the nation.*	las naciones, *the nations.*
el dolor, *the pain, grief.*	los dolores, *the pains, sorrow.*
el mes, *the month.*	los meses, *the months.*
el juez, *the judge.*	los jueces, *the judges.*
la vez, *the time* (vicis).	las veces, *the times* (vices).

REMARK.—*El lord*, an English *lord*, makes *los lores*; la Cámara de los lores, *the House of Lords.*

---

[1] From *horologium*, "time reckoner," is now often written *relój* in the singular, and always pronounced so *in Spain;* in the plural it is pronounced and written *relojes.*

b. Terminals in *y*: —

el rey, *the king.*	los reyes, *the kings.*
la ley, *the law.*	las leyes, *the laws.*
el buey, *the ox.*	los bueyes, *the oxen.*

c. Accented vowel terminals, except *é*: —

el bajá, *the pasha.*	los bajáes, *the pashas.*
el rubí, *the ruby.*	los rubíes, *the rubies.*
el jabalí, *the wild boar.*	los jabalíes, *the wild boars.*
el rondó, *the rondeau.*	los rondóes, *the rondeaux.*
el tisú, *the tissue.*	los tisúes, *the tissues.*

Exceptions in *á*: el papá, *papa*, — los papás; la mamá, *mamma*, — las mamás; el sofá, *the sofa*, — los sofás.

Except. in *í*: *Maravedí* (an imaginary coin, in which accounts were formerly kept, — thirty-four to a *real* of five cents), has the three plurals: *los maravedíes*, *maravedíses*, and *maravedís*, of which the first is now obsolete.

Except. in *ó*: el landó, *the landau*, — los landós; and many others.

Except. in *ú*: la tribú, *the tribe*, — las tribús; but this word is now pronounced *tríbu*.

REMARK. — Letters of the alphabet and most monosyllables belong to this rule: —

la í, la ó, la ú;	las íes, las óes, las úes.
los síes y los nóes,	the ayes and noes.

Better, however, los que dijeron sí, *those who said* "*aye*," etc.

104. Invariable are: (*a*) the unaccented endings *is* and *es*, in words of more than one syllable; (*b*) patronymics in *s* and *z*; (*c*) most pure Latin technical or conventional terms: —

la crísis, *the crisis.*	las crísis, *the crises.*
el paréntesis, *the parenthesis.*	los paréntesis, *the parentheses.*
el juéves, *Thursday.*	los juéves, *on Thursdays.*

el mártes, *Tuesday.*	los mártes, *on Tuesdays.*
Flóres (*proper name*).	los Flóres, *men like Flores.*
Valdés (*proper name*).	los Valdés, *men like Valdés.*
Fernández (*proper name*).	los Fernández, *the Fernandez.*
el déficit, *the deficit.*	los déficit, *the deficits.*

105. Compound words, when not already plural in form, usually attach the plural sign to the last member only, unless the first is an adjective or apparently such: —

el padrenuestro, *the pater noster.*	los padrenuestros, *pater nosters.*
el tranvia, *the tramway.*	los tranvias, *tramways.*
el guardacanton, *the guard-post.*	los guardacantones, *guard-posts.*
el ferro-carril, *the railway.*	los ferro-carriles, *railways.*
el cortaplumas, *the pen-knife.*	los cortaplumas, *pen-knives.*
el mundadientes, *the tooth-pick.*	los mundadientes, *tooth-picks.*

but

gentilhombre, (*court*) *gentleman.*	gentileshombres, *gentlemen.*
ricohombre,[1] *crown counsellor.*	ricoshombres, *counsellors.*

REMARK. — Hidalgo, *a nobleman of the lowest grade, a gentleman*, makes, properly, in the plural, *los hidalgos*, and, by a mistaken tradition, *hijodalgo, hijosdalgo.*[2] Feligrés, *parishioner*, from *filius ecclesiae*, makes, regularly, *feligréses.*

---

[1] Originally *ricóme;* that is, ric'ome, *man of the realm*, not *rich* man, which is *hombre rico.* The term is in part adoption and in part a translation of the Gothic *rîk-man*, realm-man, *Reichsmann* in modern German.

[2] As if from fijo de algo, *son of somebody*, or, rather, *son of something*, contracted to *fidalgo.* *Hidalgo* is the word *Italicus* (like *galgo* from *gallicus, sirgo* from *sericus*, etc.), one having the *jus italicum* or Roman citizenship, with an aspirate *'i*, like *huevo* from *ovum.* This early aspiration of the initial seems to have suggested the popular make-shift *fiio dalgo* of the middle age, to explain the forgotten *italico* or *ital'co.* This is proved by the derivatives: *hidalgo, a,* adjective, *noble;* as, una accion hidalga, *a noble act; hidalguía*, noun; as, la hidalguía castellana, *Spanish heroism*, or, rather, *all that is most noble in the Castilian character.*

106. Certain masculine plurals, indicative of rank and kindred, aside from their natural and obvious meaning, include the husband and wife, and the two sexes of other relatives: —

los reyes, *the kings, sovereigns;*	the king and queen.
los príncipes, *the princes;*	the prince and princess.
los infantes, *the princes royal;*	the infante and infanta.
los duques, *the dukes;*	the duke and duchess.
los presidentes, *the presidents;*	the president and his lady.
los padres, *the fathers, parents;*	the father and mother.
los esposos, los cónyuges, *the married couple;*	the husband and wife.
los hermanos, *the brothers;*	the brother and sister.
los tios, *the uncles;*	the uncle and aunt.
los hijos, *the sons, children;*	the son and daughter (of any age).
los niños, *the children;*	the boy and girl.
los abuelos, *the grandfathers, grandparents;*	the grandfather and grandmother.
los amos, *the masters;*	the master and mistress.
los señores, *the gentlemen;*	the gentleman and lady.

Example.

Ayer salieron los reyes á paseo, *yesterday the king and queen drove out;* los reyes católicos, *the Catholic king and queen*, or, *the Catholic sovereigns* (Ferdinand and Isabella, reigned A. D. 1474–1504, 1516).

REMARK. — Most of these may also include several of both sexes: the princes and princesses royal, the sons and daughters, the boys and girls, the brothers and sisters; like the German *Gebrüder*, *Geschwister*, etc. On the other hand, *el matrimonio* means the *husband and wife* (das Ehepaar), *the man and his wife;* una cama de matrimonio, *a double bed, a bed for two.* So, *la pareja* properly signifies *two policemen* (who usually go in pairs in Spain). Vaya usted á llamar una pareja, *go and call the police* (*a brace of policemen*).

INFLECTION.

107. Spanish nouns have no other inflectional ending than the plural sign.[1] They may, however, be declined by the aid of the case-prepositions *de* and *á*, either without the article or with it:—

el amigo del rey,	the king's friend.
á la puerta del palacio,	at the palace door.
las calles de Madrid,	the streets of Madrid.
Maria busca á Inés,	Mary seeks Agnes.
aficionado á los libros,	fond of books.
abismado en lectura,	absorbed in reading.
un amigo del juez,	a friend of the judge.

108. Inflection without the Article.

N.	Cárlos,	Charles.	Inés,	Agnes.
G.	de Cárlos,	of Charles, Charles'.	de Inés,	of Agnes, Agnes'.
D.	á Cárlos,	to Charles.	á Inés,	to Agnes.
A.	á Cárlos (76),	Charles.	á Ines (76),	Agnes.
N.	libro,	book.	libros,	books.
G.	de libro,	of book.	de libros,	of books.
D.	á libro,	to book.	á libros,	to books.
A.	libro,	book.	libros,	books.

el libro de Cárlos,	Charles's book, the book of Charles.
la pluma de Inés,	Agnes's pen.
Juan ve á María,	John sees Mary.
Luis quiere mucho á Pedro,	Lewis is very fond of Peter.
da un libro á Antonio,	give a book to Antonio.

[1] Save in a few meagre cases, like *Cárlos*, from *Carolus; Dios*, from *Deus; querque* in *Alburquerque*, from *arbor querci* (*quercûs*); duende, *wizard, elf*, from Deus Endi, *the Iberian god Endo; Ferndndez*, from *Fredinandus*, etc.

este juguete es propio de niños,	this toy is for children.
una hoja de libro,	a book-leaf, the leaf of a book.
no habla de libros,	he is not speaking of books.
no quiero libro alguno,	I do not want any book at all.
la puerta tiene goznes,	the door has hinges.
la ciudad está circuida de muros,	the town is surrounded by walls.

109. Inflection with the Definite Article.

		Masculine.		Feminine.	
Singular.	N.	el hombre,	the man.	la mujer,	the woman.
	G.	del hombre,	the man's.	de la mujer,	the woman's.
	D.	al hombre,	to the man.	á la mujer,	to the woman.
	A.	al hombre (76),	the man.	á la mujer (76),	the woman.
Plural.	N.	los hombres,	the men.	las mujeres,	the women.
	G.	de los hombres,	the men's.	de las mujeres,	the women's.
	D.	á los hombres,	to the men.	á las mujeres,	to the women.
	A.	á los hombres,	the men.	á las mujeres,	the women.
Singular.	N.	el libro,	the book.	la pluma,	the pen.
	G.	del libro,	of the book.	de la pluma,	of the pen.
	D.	al libro,	to the book.	á la pluma,	to the pen.
	A.	el libro,	the book.	la pluma,	the pen.
Plural.	N.	los libros,	the books.	las plumas,	the pens.
	G.	de los libros,	of the books.	de las plumas,	of the pens.
	D.	á los libros,	to the books.	á las plumas,	to the pens.
	A.	los libros.	the books.	las plumas,	the pens.

el palacio de los reyes,	the king's and queen's palace (106).
la prudencia de la mujer,	the woman's prudence.
las habitaciones de la casa,	the rooms of (in) the house.
las calles de la ciudad,	the streets of the town.
sale de la habitacion,	he goes out of the room.
da el regalo á los niños,	he hands the present to the children.

110. Inflection with the Indefinite Article.

	Masculine.		Feminine.	
N.	un hombre,	a man.	una mujer,	a woman.
G.	de un hombre,	a man's.	de una mujer,	a woman's.
D.	á un hombre,	to a man.	á una mujer,	to a woman.
A.	un hombre,	a man.	una mujer,	a woman.
N.	un libro,	a book.	una pluma,	a pen.
G.	de un libro,	of a book.	de una pluma,	of a pen.
D.	á un libro,	to a book.	á una pluma,	to a pen.
A.	un libro,	a book.	una pluma,	a pen.

111. Inflection of Neuter Lo with Adjectives.

	Positive.		Superlative.	
N.	lo bueno,	the good.	lo mejor,	the best.
G.	de lo bueno,	of the good.	de lo mejor,	of the best.
D.	á lo bueno,	to the good.	á lo mejor,	to the best.
A.	lo bueno,	the good.	lo mejor,	the best.

veo un hombre y una mujer,	I see a man and a woman.
busco al criado de un amigo,	I am seeking a friend's servant.
el vestido de una señora,	a lady's dress.
un pañuelo de caballero,	a gentleman's handkerchief.
aquí tiene usted un servidor,	a servant at your disposal.
lo peor es que no lo sabe,	the worst (of it) is he does not know it.
nos saca de lo bueno, para caer en lo malo,	he draws us away from good, to bring us into evil.

The Adjective.

112. Adjectives have two numbers and two genders, besides the absolute form with *lo:* —

un libro nuevo, *a new book.*
los hombres sabios, *wise men.*
lo malo, *what is evil, the evil.*
leche fresca, *fresh milk.*
frutas ricas, *luscious fruit.*
lo ancho, *what is wide, the width.*

113. Adjectives, whether attributive or predicate, agree in gender and number with the noun they qualify: —

un hombre robusto, a stout, healthy man.
una linda casa, a pretty house.
señoras caritativas, benevolent ladies.
estas niñas son guapas, these young girls are pretty.

a. With *lo*, the adjective varies anomalously to suit the gender and number of the noun, when the adjective is followed by **que**, *that*, with the verb *to be*, or its equivalents. The adjective must then be rendered by a substantive: —

lo sabios que son estos consejos, the wisdom of these counsels (the wise that are these counsels).
lo bonita que es la iglesia, the beauty of the church.

Formation of the Plural.

114. Adjectives form their plural in either gender by adding *s* to unaccented vowel-terminals, and *es* to consonant and accented vowel-endings, always changing *z* to *c* before *es*: —

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
fresco,	fresca,	frescos,	frescas,	fresh, cool.
español,	española,	españoles,	españolas,	Spanish.
feliz,		felices,		happy.
comun,		comunes,		common.
baladí,		baladíes,		of no account.

Formation of the Feminine.

115. The feminine of adjectives is, in general, formed by changing final *o* into *a*, or by adding *a* to certain consonant terminations. Many adjectives have but one ending for both genders.

The variation of adjectives (72) may be reduced to two general classes. The first class embraces common and proper adjectives of *two* terminations in each number, one for each gender; the second embraces common and proper adjectives of *one* termination for both genders.

REMARK. — Proper adjectives are those which are derived from the names of geographical divisions, countries, provinces, places, and persons.

116. First Class. — Two Terminations.

Endings.	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
o	blanco,	blanca,	blancos,	blancas,	white.
—	gaditano,	gaditana,	gaditanos,	gaditanas,	of Cadiz.
an	holgazan,	holgazana,	holgazanes,	holgazanas,	lazy.
—	aleman,	alemana,	alemanes,	alemanas,	German.
ol	español,	española,	españoles,	españolas,	Spanish.
on	burlon,	burlona,	burlones,	burlonas,	roguish.
or	traidor,	traidora,	traidores,	traidoras,	treacherous.
uz	andaluz,	andaluza,	andaluces,	andaluzas,	Andalusian.

una rosa blanca, *a white rose.*
cerveza alemana, *German beer.*
ojos burlones, *roguish eyes.*
la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit and humor.*
las señoras gaditanas, *ladies of Cadiz.*
una ley española, *a Spanish law.*
miradas traidoras, *treacherous glances.*

117. To this class belong also: —

a. Diminutives in *ete* and augmentatives in *ote*, which change the final *e* into *a*: —

regordete,	regordeta,	regordetes,	regordetas,	chubby.
grandote,	grandota,	grandotes,	grandotas,	biggish.

All others in *e* belong to the second class; that is, they are unchangeable for gender.

b. Diminutives and proper adjectives in *in*: —

chiquitin,	chiquitina,	chiquitines,	chiquitinas,	wee.
mallorquin,	mallorquina,	mallorquines,	mallorquinas,	of Majorca.

All others in *in* belong to the second class.

c. Proper adjectives in *és*: —

francés,	francesa,	franceses,	francesas,	French.
inglés,	inglesa,	ingleses,	inglesas,	English.
leonés,	leonesa,	leoneses,	leonesas,	of Leon (Spain)
montañés,[1]	montañesa,	montañeses,	montañesas,	highland, Asturian.

Common adjectives in *es* belong to the second class.

118. A few adjectives in *tor* may also change that ending into *triz–trices* for the feminine: —

fuerza motora *or* motriz,	motive power.
causas motoras *or* motrices,	impelling causes.

REMARK. — For comparatives in *or* and *ior* (*yor*), see 120, *b*.

---

[1] Montañés, *of* or *belonging to the hill country about Santandér, Spain*, which district is called La Montaña (not la *m*ontaña), *the Mountain;* and hence the adjective has the variation of proper adjectives in *és*.

119. Second Class.—One Termination.

Endings.	SINGULAR. Masc. and Fem.	PLURAL. Masc. and Fem.	
a	agrícola, belga,	agrícolas, belgas,	agricultural, Belgian.
e	grande, ateniense,	grandes, atenienses,	great, Athenian.
í	baladí, marroquí,	baladíes, marroquíes,	vile, Morocco.
al, el	nacional, fiel,	nacionales, fieles,	national, faithful.
il, ul	fácil, azul,	fáciles, azules,	easy, blue.
en, in	jóven, ruin,[1]	jóvenes, ruines,	young; low, mean.
un, ar	comun, familiar,	comunes, familiares,	common, familiar.
az, ez	capaz, soez,	capaces, soeces,	capable, low.
iz, oz	feliz, atroz,	felices, atroces,	happy, shocking.

un pueblo agrícola, *an agricultural people.*
la cultura ateniense, *Athenian culture.*
una cinta azul, *a blue ribbon.*
la vida comun, *common life.*
el gobierno persa, *the Persian government.*
una casa grande, *a large house.*
las fiestas nacionales, *the national holidays.*
las muchachas jóvenes, *young girls.*
una muerte feliz, *a happy death.*
los pueblos belgas, *the Belgian towns.*

120. To this class belong also:—

a. All common adjectives in *és*:—

cortés, *pl.* corteses, *polite.* | montés, *pl.* monteses, *mountain-.*

una advertencia cortés, a courteous remark.
palabras corteses, polite language.
puercos monteses,[2] wild (or mountain) boars.

---

[1] Latin, *Latin*, is a noun; *latino, latina*, an adjective: saber el Latin, *to know Latin;* un libro latino, *a Latin book;* la literatura latina, *Latin literature.*

[2] *Jabalí* also means *wild boar.* It is the Arabic adjective from djebal, *mountain;* therefore *puerco montés* is the Castilian synonym of *jabalí.* So, Arab. *alfayate*, Cast. sastre, *tailor;* Arab. *alarife*, Cast. arquitecto, *architect;* Arab. *albéitar*, Cast. veterinario, *farrier*, etc., etc.

b. All comparatives in *or*, *ior* (*yor*):—

mejor, *pl.* mejores, *better.*	interior, *pl.* interiores, *interior.*
peor, *pl.* peores, *worse.*	superior, *pl.* superiores, *superior*

c. All adjectives in *ista*, indicating social, political, moral, and scientific affiliations:—

un principio socialista,	a socialistic principle.
una idea oscurantista,	an old-fogy notion.
el partido carlista,	the Carlist party.
los prohombres progresistas,	the advanced leaders

(leaders of the late Progresista or advance party, 1836–1871).

d. All adjectives in *e* (except 117, *a*):—

una almendra dulce,	a sweet almond.
una herida grave,	a serious wound.
una tiple eminente,	a distinguished soprano-singer.
graves inconvenientes,	serious objections.

e. The ending *-ense* is the learned or modern journalistic and literary form of proper adjectives, against the popular ones in *o* and *és* (*ensis*); thus, matritense and madrileño, *of Madrid;* tudense and tudés, *of Tuy;* conquense and conqués, *of Cuenca;* abulense and avilés, *of Ávila;* escurialense and escorialeño, *of the Escorial.* A few, however, possess no other form than the learned or classical one: as, ateniense, *Athenian;* parisiense (popular, *parisién*), *of Paris, Parisian.*

121. All proper adjectives, then, are variable in gender, except those in *a*, *e*, and *i*:—

catalan, a, *Catalonian.*	valenciano, a, *Valencian.*
castellano, a, *Castilian.*	extremeño, a, *of Extremadura.*
vallisoletano, a, *of Valladolid.*	européo, a, *European.*
asturiano, a, *Asturian.*	aragonés, a, *Aragonese*

inglés, a, *English.*
mahonés, a, *of Puerto Mahon.*
gallego, a, *Galician.*
manchego, a, *of La Mancha.*
griego, a, *Greek, Grecian.*
alicantino, a, *of Alicante.*
bilbaíno, a, *of Bilbáo.*
índio, a, *Indian.*
judío, a, *Jewish.*
británico, a, *British.*
alcalaíno, a, complutense, } *of Alcalá de Henáres.*
celta, *Celtic.*
árabe, *Arabian.*
marroquí, *of Morrocco.*
berberí, *of Barbary.*

122. Any adjective may be employed as a substantive in either gender or number, assuming in that case all the laws that govern the noun :—

el Español, *the Spaniard.*
el sabio, *the wise man.*
los Españoles, *Spantards.*
los fieles, *the faithful.*

a. On the other hand, nouns are occasionally associated as adjectives with other nouns, thus forming compound expressions as in the Teutonic languages :—

la tierra vírgen, *virgin soil.*
la madre patria, *mother country.*
la escuela-modelo, *model school.*
el cura párroco, *the parish priest.*
una carta-prólogo, *an epistolary preface.*
una carta-puebla, *local privilege (law).*

Apocopation.

123. Eight adjectives lose their final *o* when they stand as attributes immediately before a noun in the masculine singular :—

bueno, *good.*
malo, *bad, poor (of things).*
postrero, *latter, last.*
primero, *first.*
tercero,[1] *third.*
uno, *one.*
alguno, *some, any* (neg. *no*).
ninguno (necunus),[2] *no, not any, none.*

---

[1] *Tercero* remains unabridged in the formula of the Creed, "el tercero dia," and, in general, in the sacred style.

[2] The *n* is inserted, as in cementerio, *cemetery.*

buen tiempo, *good weather.*	el tercer dia, *the third day.*
mal éxito, *ill-success.*	un soldado, *one soldier.*
el postrer duelo, *the last pang.*	algun motivo, *some cause.*
el primer tomo, *the first volume.*	ningun libro, *no book.*

but

¿tiene usted un buen vecino?	have you a good neighbor?
tengo uno muy bueno,	I have a very good one.
un hombre malo y perverso,	a bad, vicious man.
el año primero y último,	the first and last year.
el libro tercero del tomo quinto,	book third of volume fifth.
uno y otro dia,	both days (one and the other day).
no hay remedio alguno,	there is no help for it at all.
ninguno de los dos,	neither of the two.
el bueno de mi amigo,	my good friend (idiom).
alguno que otro dia,	one day or another (idiom).

a. In the language of common life this law is frequently extended to the feminine singular, especially before *a* and *ha*: —

buen alhaja, *fine jewel, pretty fellow* (in irony[1]).	un alma, *one soul.*
algun ave, *some bird.*	en mal hora, *inopportunely.*
	de primer agua, *first water* (*rate*).

b. The numeral adjective **uno**, *one*, when associated or combined with other numbers, is contracted before nouns of either number or gender which it serves to multiply: —

treinta y un dias, *thirty-one days.*	veintiun casas, *twenty-one houses.*

124. The adjective **grande**, *great*, in the sense of eminence, loses its final syllable *de* before a singular noun beginning with a consonant not *h*: —

---

[1] Of course, in this secondary sense, *alhaja* is masculine, according to 93.

una gran casa, *a great family.*	un gran dia,[1] *a great occasion.*
un gran peligro, *a great peril.*	el Gran Capitan,[2] *the Great Captain.*

but

un grande amigo, *a great friend (intimate).*	un grande hombre, *a great man (distinguished).*

una grande iglesia, *a great (famous) church.*

a. The full form is, however, used, even before consonants, when *grande* has an intensive or emphatic signification. In this sense it was formerly much more common than at present: —

tan grande sancto, *so great a saint.*	el grande daño, *the great harm.*[3]

b. When *grande* refers to *dimensions*, or *order*, it regularly stands after the noun it qualifies: —

una casa grande, *a large house.*	un hombre grande, *a large man.*
el premio grande, *the first prize.*	un caballo grande, *a large horse.*

REMARK. — In the sense of tallness, *grande* is now rather replaced by *alto*, *alto de cuerpo*, *alto de estatura*; or by *buen mozo* (fem. *buena moza*), applied to any age, to mean *a fine*, *tall person*, and *a fine-looking person*, with reference to form and size.

125. Cualquiera, *pl.* **cualesquiera,** *whatever, any — you please,* usually, but not uniformly, loses the final *a* before a noun of either gender or number: —

---

[1] When Isla wrote "Dia grande de Navarra," he meant, it is true, a great civic occasion, but with the humorous idea of dimensions, — *a big day, a high day.*

[2] Gonzalo de Cordova, so called for his conquest of Naples and Sicily.

[3] From Fray Luis de Granada: *Sermon de las Caydas Publicas*, Lisbon, 1588; Madrid, 1589; and Antwerp, 1590; 8vo. The modern editions all have in these passages *gran* santo, *gran* daño; for no Spanish author has been so corrected and spoiled in text by the Inquisition as the Friar Lewis.

cualquier *or* cualquiera libro,	any book (whatever).
cualquier *or* cualquiera cosa,	any thing (whatever).
cualesquier *or* cualesquiera motivos,	any causes (whatever).

but always

cualquiera de los libros,	any of the books.
un libro cualquiera,	any book you please.
cualesquiera que sean los motivos,	whatever be the causes or motives.

126. **Ciento,** *one hundred* (never *un* ciento), loses its final syllable *to* when it stands before the word it multiplies, whichever be the gender: —

cien soldados, cien almas,	one hundred soldiers, souls.
cien mil pesos, cien millones,	100,000 dollars, 100,000,000.

but

ciento veinte,	one hundred (and) twenty.
ciento y diez,	one hundred and ten.
ciento contra uno,	one hundred against one.
mil y ciento,	one thousand (and) one hundred.

127. The word **santo,** *saint,* loses its final syllable *to* only before the names of the calendar saints, archangels, and Old-Testament worthies: —

San Pedro (S. Pedro), *St. Peter.*	San Juan (S. Juan), *St. John.*
San Miguel (S. Miguel), *St. Michael.*	San Pablo, *St. Paul.*
San Daniel (S. Daniel), *St. Daniel.*	San Agustin, *St. Augustine.*
	San Gabriel, *St. Gabriel.*
	San Josué, *St. Joshua.*

Except: Santo Tomás *or* Tomé (S. Tomás), *St. Thomas;* Santo Domingo (S. Domingo), *St. Dominic;* Santo Toribio, *St. Toribius;* and Santo Job, *St. Job.* St. Thomas, as the name of one of the West-India islands, is now accented and written San Tómas and San Thómas, in conformity with foreign usage.

a. The fem. *santa* remains always unabridged:—

Santa María, *St. Mary.*	Santa Inés, *St. Agnes.*
Santa Isabel, *St. Elizabeth.*	Santa Águeda, *St. Agatha.*
Santa Bárbara, *St. Barbara.*	Santa Rita,[1] *St. Margaret.*

b. The adjective **santo, a,** *holy,* is never contracted:—

el santo ángel, *the holy angel.* | el santo varon, *that saintly man.*
una santa mujer, *a saintly woman.*

REMARK. — In giving a series of two or more saints' names, it is in better taste to prefix the title to each singly:—

San Juan y San José, *St. John and St. Joseph,* not los Santos Juan y José (los SS. Juan y José), *Sts. John and Joseph.*

POSITION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

128. The attributive adjective, as a rule, stands after the noun qualified, in ordinary unemphatic language; notwithstanding, all elegant writers, poets, and orators, place it according to their own views of taste, harmony, and effect:—

un cuento divertido,	an entertaining story.
un asunto grave,	a serious matter.
una noticia desgarradora,	heart-rending intelligence.
la lengua castellana,	the Castilian language.
el continente européo,	the European continent.
el gobierno español,	the Spanish government.
una accion desalmada,	a heartless action.

---

[1] This local saint is called in Spain, "la abogada de los imposibles," *the patroness of impossibilities.* St. Barbara is the advocate of Spanish gunpowder and coast defenses, while the *chulo,* the "*b'hoy*" (*puerum, plulo, chulo*), swears vengeance "por vía 'e San André" (63, 66), *by the life of St. Andrew,* as he rushes upon his adversary with the historic *navaja* (*navalia*) or "*Jack's*" *knife.*

129. The following, therefore, are more especially found after the substantive limited by them, unless the language is poetic or expansive: —

a. Participles and participial adjectives in *ado*, *ido*, and those in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), derived from Latin present participles: —

un sacerdote consagrado,	a consecrated priest.
la oveja perdida,	the lost sheep.
banderas desplegadas,	banners unfurled (flying banners).
aguas abundantes,	abundant water.
un espíritu paciente,	a patient spirit.
las Córtes constituyentes,	the Constituent (National) Assembly.
los caballeros andantes,	the knights-errant.

but, poetically or expansively:

por dilatadas regiones,	over extensive regions.
las engañadas naciones,	the deceived nations.
la naciente estrella,	the rising star.
la andante caballería,	knight-errantry.

b. Proper adjectives, or those derived from geographical, personal, political, and scientific names: —

las Escenas matritenses,	pictures of Madrid life.
los prados jerezanos,	the grassy plains of Sherry.
el idioma francés,	the French language.
un cabecilla carlista,	a Carlist (guerilla) chieftain.
la filosofía positivista,	positive philosophy.
el partido unionista,	the union party.

but, poetically:

los tartésios campos,	the plains of Tartessus.

c. Common adjectives in *al, dor, tor:* —

el despacho central,	the Central office.
el puente internacional,	the International Bridge.
un principio conservador,	a conservative principle.
la sociedad protectora de animales,	the society for the protection of animals.

but, in poetry:

la vencedora gente,	the victorious people.

d. All augmentatives and diminutives[1]: —

el alcalde pregunton,	the impertinent busybody.
un niño chiquitin,	a wee bit of a child.
un hombre grandecito,	a tallish man.
un aldeano ricote,	a well-to-do villager.

e. In general, long adjectives, unless emphatic or intensive: —

una cosa imposible,	an impossible thing.
medidas preventivas,	preventive measures.

but

mi inolvidable amigo,	my never-to-be-forgotten friend.
con incansable afan,	with untiring zeal.

f. When a plural substantive is limited by two or more adjectives in the singular, the latter must stand after the noun: —

las lenguas griega y latina,	the Greek and Latin languages.
los tomos primero y cuarto,	the first and fourth volumes.
las filas tercera y vigésima,	the third and twentieth rows.
los siglos segundo, cuarto y quinto,	the second, fourth, and fifth centuries.

---

[1] Of this difficult subject we shall treat in a chapter apart, because the foreigner cannot be taught out of Spain to use them correctly. They are a part of the national type. See p. 382.

130 A few adjectives regularly precede the noun in ordinary language: —

mucho dinero, *much money.*
demasiado juicio, *too much prudence.*
buenos consejos, *good advice.*
poca gracia, *little attractiveness.*
tantas virtudes, *so many virtues.*
mayores fuerzas, *greater strength.*
malas plumas, *poor pens.*

131. Some adjectives have distinct significations, according to their position with respect of the noun: —

un buen hombre, *a good man.*
una buena noche, *a good night.*
mal negocio, *bad business (unfortunate).*
mala pluma, *poor pen.*
gran vicio, *great defect.*
nuevo libro, *new book (different).*
negra accion, *dark deed.*
varios papeles, *various papers*, or *documents.*
pobre muchacho,[2] *poor boy.*
pobre autor, *sorry author.*
cierta época, *a certain period.*
santa Biblia, *sacred Bible.*
santa tierra, *sacred soil.*
santo padre, *father (of the church)*
santo campo, *sacred field.*
un hombre bueno,[1] *a "best" man.*
noche buena, *Christmas Eve.*
un jóven malo, *a bad youth (wicked).*
toro malo, *vicious bull.*
pera grande, *large pear.*
libro nuevo, *new book (recent).*
vestido negro, *black coat.*
papeles varios, *miscellaneous papers.*
el muchacho pobre, *the poor boy.*
autor pobre, *indigent author.*
noticia cierta, *reliable news.*
semana santa, *holy week (Easter).*
tierra santa, *Holy Land.*
el padre santo, *the pope.*
campo santo, *cemetery.*

a. Some adjectives precede or follow the noun with little or no difference of signification: —

---

[1] An early translation of the old Gothic "goodsman," *property man*, and hence *responsible*, a *voucher*. So the *omes* or *hombres buenos* of the mediæval Córtes were *select men*, from this property qualification. They represented the third estate in assembly with the prelates and nobles.

[2] In commiseration; more or less depreciative, and often resented by persons of spirit, from its side-meaning of infeliz, *stupid;* still, the natives say: "¡Pobre España! digna de mejor suerte," *poor Spain! worthy of a better fate.*

un pequeño libro,	un libro pequeño,	a small book.
una bonita casa,	una casa bonita,	a pretty house.
un hermoso regalo,	un regalo hermoso,	a handsome present.
un breve discurso,	un discurso breve,	a short discourse.
un triste dia,	un dia triste,	a sad day.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

132. Adjectives in Spanish have the three usual degrees of comparison; namely, the Positive, Comparative, and Superlative, each of which is varied according to gender and number:—

Positive.	Comparative.
m. blanco, blanc**os**, *f.* blanca, blanc**as**, } *white.*	más blanco, más blanc**os**, más blanca, más blanc**as**, } *whiter.*
Superlative Relative.	**Superlative Absolute.**
el *or* lo más blanco, la más blanca, los más blanc**os**, las más blanc**as**, } *the whitest.*	blanquísimo (13), blanquísima, blanquísim**os**, blanquísim**as**, } *very white.*

So compare fresc-o, *fresh, cool;* trist-e, *sad;* prudent-e, *prudent;* viej-o, *old;* aplicad-o, *diligent.*

el libro es más pesado que el periódico,	the book is duller than the newspaper.
la ventana es más alta que la puerta,	the window is higher than the door.
estos sombreros son más car**os** que los mios,	these hats are dearer than mine.
aquellos son los más hermos**os** de la fábrica,	those yonder are the finest (ones) in the factory.
los de mi amigo son hermosísim**os**,	those of my friend are very fine.

133. Four adjectives have, besides their regular comparatives and superlatives, other preferred forms derived from the Latin, but popularly called irregular. They are:—

Positive.		Comparative.		
bueno, a,	good.	mejor (120, *b*),	(*rarely*, más bueno),	better.
malo, a,	bad, poor.	peor, es,	(*seldom*, más malo),	worse, poorer.
grande,[1]	great, large.	mayor, es,	*or*, más grande,	greater, larger, older.
pequeño, a,	small, little.	menor, es,	*or*, más pequeño,	smaller, less, younger.
Superlative Relative.				
el, la, lo { mejor; peor; mayor; menor;	los, las { mejores, peores, mayores, menores,	(*rarely*, el, *etc.*, más bueno, a), (*seldom*, el, *etc.*, más malo, a), *or*, el, la, lo más grande, los, las más grandes, *or*, el, lo, la más pequeño, a, los, las más pequeños, as,		the best. the worst, poorest. the greatest, largest, oldest. the smallest, least, youngest.
Superlative Absolute.				
bonísimo, a,	*or*, muy bueno, a,	(*rarely*, óptimo, a),		very good.
malísimo, a,	muy malo, a,	(" pésimo, a),		very bad, poor.
grandísimo, a,	muy grande,	(*seldom*, máximo, a),		very large, great.
pequeñísimo, a,	muy pequeño, a,	(" mínimo, a),		very small, little.[2]

[1] The positive *magno, a* (Lat. *magnus*), hitherto obsolete, save as an epithet of kings (Carlomagno, *Charlemagne;* Alfonso III. el Magno, *Alphonso III. the Great*, † A.D. 910, etc.), is of late considerably used in an intensive sense: as, una concurrencia magna, *a big turn-out;* una sensacion magna, *a great sensation;* la cuestion magna, *the decisive question, the* question; una turba magna, *a big crowd.*

[2] *Máximo* and *mínimo* may be used as relative superlatives with a few words like *cosa, parte:* la máxima parte, *the greatest part;* la mínima cosa, *the slightest thing. Óptimo* and *pésimo* answer a question, thus: ¿Qué tal ha sido la pieza? — Pésima. *How was the play? — Very poor.*

digno de mejor suerte,	worthy of a better fate.
sus mejores proyectos,	his best-laid plans.
los mejores libros,	the best books.
la peor pluma,	the poorest pen.
peor está que estaba,	it is worse than it was.
la mayor parte,	the greater part.
un peligro mayor,	a greater peril.
el premio mayor,	the highest (first) prize.
buscaba mayor espacio á sus esperanzas,	he sought a broader field for his expectations.
la menor imprudencia,	the slightest imprudence.
los hermanos mayores,	the older brothers.
los hijos menores,	the younger children.

Comparative Formulae

134. Most parts of speech may be placed in relations of comparison by the use of certain adverbs and adjectives constituting correlative formulae. Such are: —

Equality.	tan — como,	as (so) — as.
"	tanto, a — como, *or*	as (so) much — as, as (so) many — as.
"	tanto, a — cuanto, a,	
Superiority.	más — que (de),	more — than.
Inferiority.	ménos — que (de),	less — than, fewer — than.
	cuanto más — tanto más,	the more — the more.
	cuanto ménos — tanto ménos,	the less — the less.

tan blanco como la nieve,	as white as snow.
es tan buena como rica,	she is as good as (she is) rich.
tanto oro como plata,	as much gold as silver.
tanta prudencia como habilidad,	as much discretion as shrewdness
tantos hombres como mujeres,	as many men as women.
tanto dinero cuanto usted diga,	as much money as you say.
más alto que una casa,	higher than a house.
más rico que el que más,	richer than the richest.
más libros que dinero,	more books than money.
ménos sabio que él,	less (not so) wise than (as) he.

ménos honrado que ducho,	**less upright than able.**
ménos lápices que plumas,	**fewer pencils than pens.**
cuanto más habla tanto más divaga,	**the more he talks the more he rambles.**
cuanto ménos dinero gana tanto ménos ahorra,	**the less money he earns the less he lays by.**

135. In the formula *tan — como*, the first member may be suppressed : —

blanco como la nieve,	white as snow.
manso como un cordero,	meek as a lamb.

a. In the poetic style, the second member of the same formula may be replaced by *cual*, but the noun following, in that case rejects the article : —

blanco cual nieve, *or, better,* cual nieve blanco,	white as snow.
manso cual cordero, *or* cual cordero manso,	meek as a lamb.

136. The correlative formulae may be expressed negatively by placing **no**, *not ;* **sin**, *without ;* **tampoco**, *nor — either*, etc., before the verb : —

no es ménos bella que rica,	she is not less beautiful than rich.
no somos tan buenos como ellos,	we are not so good as they.
sin tener ellos tantos libros como yo,	without their having so many books as I.
tampoco exige él más que tú,	neither does he require more than thou.
no soy ménos cuerdo que él,	I am not less prudent than he.

137. The comparative adverb *que* is replaced, —

a. By *de lo que* (than what) when the second part of the comparison contains a verb : —

más discreto de lo que parece,	more prudent than he seems.
parece más docta de lo que es,	she seems more learned than she is.
es ménos rico de lo que dice,	he is not so wealthy as he says.

REMARK. — The original *que* may be resumed, however, if the comparative consists of one of the organic forms in *or*: —

peor está que estaba,	it is worse than it was,

or, *Worse and Worse*, the title of one of Calderon's dramas.

b. By *de*, before numerals, provided the sentence be affirmative; if it be negative, the resumption of *que* is quite general, but not universal: —

tiene más de diez casas,	he has more than ten houses.
tendrá ménos de veinte años de edad,	he must be less than twenty years old.
no ha ido allá más que dos veces,	he has not been there more than twice.
tampoco tengo yo más que tres,	I haven't more than three either.
sin tener ménos que cuatro casas de campo,	without having fewer than four country-seats.

138. *Más* and *ménos* may be strengthened by the adverbs **un poco**, *a little;* **poco**, *scarcely;* **mucho**, *much;* **harto** or **bastante**, *considerably;* **aun**, *even;* **todavía**, *yet, still;* and by the superlative **muchísimo** (never *muy mucho*, in the modern language), *very much:* —

poco más ancho,	scarcely any wider.
mucho más blanco,	much whiter.
harto ménos doloroso,	considerably less painful.
aun más favorable,	still (even) more favorable.
muchísimo ménos grave,	very much less serious.

139. From the above tables (132, 134) it appears: —

a. That the comparative degree of adjectives is formed by placing the adverbs **más**, *more;* **ménos**, *less,*

before the positive, with **que** (de), *than*, to complete the comparison.

b. That four adjectives have, in general use, organic comparative forms derived from the Latin *melior*, *pejor*, *major*, *minor*.

c. That *mayor* and *menor*, applied to persons, signify also *older* and *younger;* and to things, *greater*, *less*.

REMARK. — In some phrases *mayor* signifies *greater*, with reference to some other undefined object, and then should be rendered simply by *great*, *grand*, or *chief*: —

la iglesia mayor,	the principal church (cathedral).
la plaza mayor,	the grand square.
la calle mayor,	grand street (main street).

The Superlative Degree.

140. As already seen (132), the superlative of adjectives is of two kinds, — relative and absolute.

a. The relative superlative is translated by *most* or *-est*, and expresses not only superiority and inferiority to any other quality or object, but also to all other qualities or objects, declared or implied.

b. The absolute superlative, translated by *very*, and occasionally by *most*, *-est*, expresses quality or quantity in a very high degree, but without comparison.

The Relative Superlative.

141. The relative superlative is formed by associating the definite article (*el*, *la*, *lo*; *los*, *las*) or a possessive adjective (*my*, *thy*, *his*, *our*, etc.) with the comparative: —

el más justo juicio,	the justest judgment.
lo más grave del asunto,	the most serious (thing) in the matter.
los libros ménos estimados,	the least esteemed books.
mi más querido amigo,	my dearest friend.
nuestro menor deseo,	our least (or smallest) desire.
el mayor mónstruo los zelos,	jealousy the greatest monster.

142. When the noun is accompanied by the definite article or a possessive adjective, the superlative may follow it without an article. This is especially the case when the adjective preferably stands after the noun in the positive: —

las casas más blancas,	the whitest houses.
los nombres más conocidos,	the best known names (146).
los dias más aciagos, *or* los más aciagos dias,	the most ill-starred days.
la necesidad más apremiante, *or* la más apremiante necesidad,	the most urgent necessity.
los hombres más leidos,	the best read men.

Except when the noun with which the adjective agrees is in *apposition* with some other term, or when the article is found with the noun in an indefinite sense; in the latter case it is customary to use a partitive genitive or the absolute superlative: —

los Ingleses, gente la más despreocupada,	the English, a most unprejudiced people.
un jóven de los más despejados, *or*, un jóven despejadísimo,	one of the brightest of young men, *or*, a very bright young man.

a. The relative superlative assumes the article when it stands in the predicate after the verb *to be* or its equivalents, and agrees with the subject of the verb: —

la antígua provincia de Galicia **es** la más remota de España,	the ancient province of Galicia is the most retired (one) in Spain.

143. The relative superlative is, from its very structure, a definite comparative as well. Thus, in the examples: —

es el indivíduo más instruido de la Academia,	he is the most learned member in the Academy,
fué la señora ménos amable de la tertulia,	she was the least amiable lady at the *conversazione*,

the logical interpretation would be: He is more learned than any other member of the Academy; she was less amiable than any other lady at the *conversazione*. Hence, —

144. The relative superlative is often expressed in Spanish by the formal comparative: —

esta es cosa que me da mayor pena,	this is a thing that gives me the greatest concern,

(*i.e.*, *greater* concern than any other thing.)

lo que es más caro al hombre,	what is dearest to man.

(what is *dearer* than anything else.)

145. When two objects, persons, or qualities are compared, the formal superlative is really a comparative, and must be so translated: —

de estos dos albañiles, Pedro es el más hábil,	of these two masons, Peter is the more skilful.
de las dos señoras, la morena es la ménos simpática,	of the two ladies, the brunette is the less congenial.

146. The comparative and the relative superlative, with *más*, are translated by *better* and *best*, instead of *more* and *most*, when participial adjectives, to which *well* may be joined in the positive, are compared in their proper sense as such: —

más conocido,	*better known.*	el más conocido,	*the best known.*
más leido,	*better read.*	el más leido,	*the best read.*
más amados,	*better loved.*	los más amados,	*the best loved.*

a. If the past participle has also the signification of a mere adjective, its comparative and superlative are rendered as usual: —

querido, *dear.* | más querido, *dearer.* | el más querido, *dearest.*

Instruido may be translated by *instructed* or by *learned,* and its degrees of comparison would be rendered accordingly: —

más instruido, *better instructed, more learned.*	el más instruido, *the best instructed, the most learned.*

147. The prepositions *in, at, of,* after a relative superlative, are generally expressed in Spanish by *de:* —

el hombre más ruin de la ciudad,	the vilest man in town.
el suelo más feráz de la comarca,	the most fertile soil in the district.
la conferencia más concurrida de la série,	the best attended lecture of the course.

REMARK. — The use of *en* in this relation is very common,[1] but is, perhaps, to be classed with popular idioms or vulgarisms: —

es el niño más despejado (de) en la escuela,	he is the brightest lad in (the) school.

148. The neuter article *lo* may be employed with any superlative to which in English the word *thing,* or some other word, may be supplied: —

---

[1] This construction with *en,* when used of persons, may generally be explained as an *ellipse:* de los que hay en la e., *of those who are in the s.* Wiggers, *Grammatik,* p. 67, gives wrongly: *La casa más hermosa* en *la cuidad;* a sentence no *Spaniard* would write.

lo más fácil no es siempre lo mejor,	the easiest (way) is not always the best.
lo más acertado será el negarselo,	the most appropriate (thing) will be to refuse him (*it to him*).

The Absolute Superlative.

149. The absolute superlative is formed by affixing to the stem of the positive the variable ending *-ísimo* : —

es claro, clarísimo,	it is clear, very clear.
una cosa acertadísima,	a very appropriate thing.
un hombre prudentísimo,	a very prudent man.
esta señora es feísima,	this lady is very plain ("homely").
tengo muchísimos libros,	I have a great many books.
una necesidad apremiantísima,	a most urgent necessity.

a. The absolute superlative is also formed by associating with the simple adjective adverbs like **muy**, **bien**, *very*; **harto**, **bastante**, *considerably*, *quite*; **sumamente**, *exceedingly*; **excesivamente**, *extremely*, etc.

muy blanco, *very white.*	sumamente rico, *exceedingly rich.*
harto sensible, *very much to be regretted.*	excesivamente raro, *extremely rare.*

REMARK. — The superlative in *-ísimo* assumes the same position with respect of the noun that the simple adjective would have: —

poco fruto, poquísimo fruto,	little fruit, very little fruit.
un orador elocuente, un orador elocuentísimo,	an eloquent orator, a very eloquent orator.
un jóven rico, un jóven riquísimo,	a wealthy young man, a very wealthy young man.

150. The affix *-ísimo* is applied to the pure stem of the adjective agreeably to the following laws: —

a. By rejecting a final vowel, or a true diphthong (§ 21):—

doct-o, doct-ísimo, *very learned.*
suav-e, suav-ísimo, *very mild.*
grand-e, grand-ísimo, *very large.*
hermos-o, hermos-ísimo, *very beautiful.*
ampl-io, ampl-ísimo, *very full.*

but (according to §§ 20, 22):

impí-o, impi-ísimo, *very wicked.*
fri-o, fri-ísimo, *very cold.*

b. By changing the final stem-consonants *c* into *qu*, *g* into *gu*, and *z* into *c* (§§ 13; 15; 28, *a*):—

blanc-o, blanqu-ísimo, *very white.*
larg-o, largu-ísimo, *very long.*
feliz, felic-ísimo, *very happy.*
atroz, atroc-ísimo, *very shocking.*

c. By changing the termination *-ble* into *-bil*:—

noble, nobil-ísimo, *very noble.*
amable, amabil-ísimo, *very kind.*

d. By restoring the movable diphthongs *ie* and *ue* to their primitive simple vowels *e* and *o* (§ 19):—

diestro, destrísimo, *very expert.*
valiente, valentísimo, *very brave.*
ardiente, ardentísimo, *very zealous, very glowing.*
cierto, certísimo, *very sure.*
tierno, ternísimo, *very dear.*
lieto, letísimo, *very beaming.*
bueno, bonísimo, *very good.*
nuevo, novísimo, *very recent.*[1]
fuerte, fortísimo, *very strong.*

REMARK.—This rule is fast yielding to the corrupting influences of the uneducated classes, and *ciertísimo*, *ternísimo*, and *fuertísimo* are frequently heard and found in literature, although the Academy recognizes only the first. Viejo, *old*, always maintains the diphthong in the superlative (*viejísimo*); while the derivative vejez, *old age*, rejects it.

[1] Generally rendered and used as a *relative* superlative: La Novísima Recopilacion, *the latest compilation; i.e.*, the *Revised Statutes* (of 1806), those of Philip II. (1567) being la Nueva Recopilacion, *the New Digest.*

e. By simply attaching *-ísimo* to the unchanged adjective when it ends in any consonant except *z*:—

útil, utilísimo, *very useful.* | liberal, liberalísimo, *very liberal.*

151. A few superlatives in *-ísimo* are constructed on Latin stems:—

amigo,*[1]	amicísimo,	very friendly,	*from* amic-us.
antíguo,	antiquísimo,	very ancient,	antiqu-us.
benéfico,	beneficentísimo,	very beneficent,	beneficent(is).
benévolo,	benevolentísimo,	very benevolent,	benevolent(is).
cruel,	crudelísimo,	very cruel,	crudel-is.
fiel,	fidelísimo,	very faithful,	fidel-is.
frio,* frígido,	frigidísimo,	very cold,	frigid-us.
magnífico,	magnificentísimo,	very magnificent,	magnificent(is).
pio,* piadoso,*	pientísimo,[2]	very devoted,	pient(is).
sabio,	sapientísimo,	very wise,	sapient(is).
sacro, sagrado,	sacratísimo,	very sacred,	sacrat-us.

152. Some few adjectives form their absolute superlatives by attaching *-rimo* to the Latin base in *er*:—

áspero,*	aspérrimo,	very harsh,	*from* asper.
célebre,	celebérrimo,	very famous,	celeber.
íntegro,	integérrimo,	very disinterested,	integer.
libre,	libérrimo,	very free,	liber.
mísero,	misérrimo,	very wretched,	miser.
pobre,*	paupérrimo,	very indigent,	pauper.
salubre,	salubérrimo,	very healthful,	saluber.

[1] Those distinguished by an *asterisk* have also the regular superlative; as, *amiguísimo, fríísimo, piadosísimo, aspérísimo, pobrísimo.*

[2] The form *pientísimo*, although unknown to the Academy's Dictionary and Grammars, is in common use. The earliest record of it that I remember is in the *Diferencias de libros q̃ ay en el vniuerso*, by Alexo Vanegas de Busto, Toledo, 1540, f. 240, where the author says: "de la piẽtissima (pientísima) virgẽ maria." Vanegas is an "authority" recognized by the Academy (*Dict.*, ed. 1726, p. lxxxvi, and *Catálogo de Autoridades*, Madrid, 1874, p. 100).

a. The superlative **ubérrimo**, *very productive*, wants the positive and comparative (Lat. *uber*, *uberior*), which, however, may be supplied by *feráz*.

153. The adjectives **fácil**, *easy*, *probable*; **difícil**, *difficult*, *not probable*, have the superlatives *facilísimo*, *facílimo*; *dificilísimo* and *difícilimo*.

154. The following comparatives and superlatives in form, derived from the Latin, have mostly lost their primitive force as such, and may be treated as adjectives, occasionally with special significations:—

anterior, *previous*, *prior*.	(wanting.)
citerior, *hither*.	(wanting.)
exterior, *external*, *outside*.	extremo, *extreme*.
inferior, *inferior*, *lower*.	ínfimo, *lowest*.
interior, *internal*, *inside*.	íntimo, *intimate*.
posterior, *posterior*.	postremo, *hindermost*.
(más cercano, *nearer*.)	próximo, *nearest*, *next*.
superior, *superior*, *upper*.	supremo, sumo, *highest*, *supreme*.
ulterior, *ulterior*, *ultimate*.	último, *last*, *final*.

la carta anterior, *the previous letter*.	la ínfima plebe, *the lowest rabble*.
los puntos extremos, *the extreme points*.	un amigo íntimo, *an intimate friend*.
un cuarto interior, *an inside apartment*.	un esfuerzo supremo, *a supreme effort*.

a. These forms often serve as simple adjectives to build true comparatives and superlatives:—

á precio tan ínfimo,	at so low a price.
la casa más próxima,	the nearest house.
las más superiores ciencias,[1]	the highest sciences.
mi más íntimo amigo,	my most intimate friend.

[1] *Dict. of the Acad.*, ed. 1726–39, vol. i. p. xlii. 3.

b. The same may be said of the superlative ***mínimo*** (§ 133, note 2):—

la cosa más mínima,	the smallest thing.

155. The superlative absolute is often merely intensive:—

este mismísimo asunto,	this identical subject.
un caso singularísimo,	a signal case in point.

156. Of the two forms comprised under the denomination of superlative absolute, that in *-ísimo* is the stronger:—

es un hombre doctísimo, es un hombre muy docto,	he is a very learned man.

157. The adverbs **más,** *more;* **ménos,** *less;* **muy,** *very;* are often applied to nouns in the sense of "more of a," "less of a," and "very much of a," "a thorough":—

es más niño de lo que creía,	he is more of a child than I supposed.
es ménos político que esplotador,	he is less of a politician than a "carpet-bagger."
es muy hombre de mundo,	he is a thorough man of the world.
es muy caballero, es muy Español.	he is a thorough gentleman, a thorough Spaniard.
es muy señorito,	he is quite a young gentleman.[1]
muy señor mio,	my dear sir.

158. The formula **muy — para** signifies *too — to, too much of a — to,* with nouns, adjectives, and past participles:—

---

[1] He who replies to these observations, says, not *muy*, but mucho, *very*, literally *much;* sí tal, *true;* or, justo, *of course.*

es muy grande para jugar tanto,	he is too large to play so much.
es muy bobo para incomodarse de eso,	he is too much of a simpleton to resent that.
estaba muy asustada para arriesgar preguntas,	she was too much frightened to venture inquiries.

159. The intensive prefix **re** (Lat. *re* and [*p*]*rae*) was formerly much used to express a kind of absolute superlative, with or without *muy*, and was applied to adjectives, adverbs, and occasionally even to nouns. Its use is now popular or vulgar:—

Ancient (1537).

En las Cortes de los Príncipes son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos, y muy repoquitos, los que se tienen entera amistad (*Guevara*).	In the Courts of Princes, those who cherish towards one another genuine friendship are few, very few, even exceedingly few, and scarcely any at all.

Modern.

rebueno, *or* muy **re**bueno (*usual*),	very good indeed.
rebien, *or* muy **re**bien ("),	very well indeed.
no me da la **re**-real gana (*low*),	it does not suit my majesty to [(do it);

(*literally*, it does not give me the very royal mind to.[1])

---

[1] In the following tragic nursery rhyme, reproducing the legend of "Peter Peter, pumpkin eater," and which may be heard any bright morning among the nurses on the *Recoletos* of Madrid, occurs the prefix *re* with a proper name:—

Pepe, *re*-Pepe	Josy, my Joe,
mató á la mujer	killed his wife
con siete cuchillos	with seven knives
y un alfiler;	and one pin;
la metió en un cesto,	put her in a panier,
la llevó á vender,	took her to be sold,
le sacó un doblon	got a doubloon for her,
y lo metió en panchon.	and laid it out in buns!

NUMERALS.

160. The cardinal numbers are those which answer the question, *How many?*

Cardinal Numbers.			
1	uno, a, (*contract* un).	28	veinte y ocho, *or* veinti-ocho.
2	dos.		
3	tres.	29	veinte y nueve, *etc.*
4	cuatro.	30	treinta, (treinta y uno, *etc.*)
5	cinco.	40	cuarenta.
6	seis.	50	cincuenta.
7	siete.	60	sesenta.
8	ocho.	70	setenta.
9	nueve.	80	ochenta.
10	diez.	90	noventa.
		100	ciento, (*contract* cien).
11	once.		
12	doce.	101	ciento y uno, a.
13	trece.	102	ciento y dos.
14	catorce.	103	ciento y tres, *etc.*
15	quince.	200	doscientos, as.
16	diez y seis, *or* dieciseis.	300	trescientos, as.
17	diez y siete, *or* diecisiete.	400	cuatrocientos, as.
18	diez y ocho, *or* dieciocho.	500	quinientos, as.
19	diez y nueve, *or* diecinueve.	600	seiscientos, as.
20	veinte.	700	setecientos, as.
		800	ochocientos, as.
21	veinte y uno, a, *or* veintiuno, a, (*contract* veintiun).	900	novecientos, as.
		1,000	mil, (mil y uno, *etc.*)
22	veinte y dos, *or* veintidos.		
23	veinte y tres, *or* veintitres.	10,000	diez mil.
24	veinte y cuatro, *or* veinticuatro.	100,000	cien mil.
		200,000	doscientos, as, mil.
25	veinte y cinco, *or* veinticinco.	500,000	quinientos, as, mil.
26	veinte y seis, *or* veintiseis.	1,000,000	un millon, *or* un cuento.
27	veinte y siete, *or* veintisiete.	2,000,000	dos millones.

Remarks on the Cardinals.

161. Archaic forms are **docientos** and **trecientos.** They are heard, however, at the present day in current language, but are not met with in approved modern literature. Incorrect conversational forms are **setecientos** and **nuevecientos.** See 150, *d*, Remark.

162. The cardinal numbers, although adjectives, are all invariable except *uno*, *a*, and *cientos*, *as*, when multiplied by two up to nine inclusive:—

dos libros, tres plumas,	two books, three pens.
cuatro cuartos, cinco onzas,	four cuartos (coppers), five ounces.
diez dias, cuarenta almas,	ten days, forty souls.
un amigo, una conocida,	one friend, one acquaintance.
ciento y un soldados,	one hundred and one soldiers.
veintiun casas, cien años,	twenty-one houses, one hundred years.
cien mil duros,	one hundred thousand dollars.
doscientos hombres, doscientas mujeres,	two hundred men, two hundred women.
quinientos bonos, quinientas carpetas,	five hundred bonds, five hundred (government) securities.
cuatrocientas mil personas,	four hundred thousand persons.

For the contractions of *uno* and *ciento*, see 123, *a*, *b*; 126.

163. As numeral adjectives, **ciento** and **mil** cannot assume *un* like the substantives **millon** and **cuento**:—

cien vecinos,[1] *one hundred citizens.*	un millon de gracias, *a thousand thanks* (literally, *one million of thanks*).
mil duros, *one thousand dollars.*	

[1] *Vecino* means (1) a neighbor; (2) the head of a family; (3) a legal or officially inscribed resident, a householder; (4) a citizen. Native estimates of population are made in rural districts by vecinos, *heads of families;* in towns, by almas, *souls;* and by government, for foreign convenience, by habitantes, *inhabitants.* The traditional method is, however, by *vecinos.*

me dió más de mil onzas,	he gave me more than one thousand ounces.
recibió hasta cien azotes,	he received as many as one hundred lashes.

a. Ciento used as a substantive assumes the form *centenar*, unless employed to express rate. *Mil*, as a substantive, may retain that form, or appear as *millar;* but to express rate, only the latter is usual:—

centenares de hombres,	hundreds of men.
á doce reales el ciento,	at twelve reals per hundred.
millares *or* miles de vidas,	thousands of lives.
á veinticinco pesetas el millar,	at twenty-five francs per thousand.

REMARK.—In mercantile language, it is usual to omit the article with the number.[1]

á doce reales ciento.	á veinticinco pesetas millar.

164. Tens of hundreds cannot be used in Spanish for counting from one thousand upwards, but *mil* must always introduce the denomination:—

mil y seis,	ten hundred and six.
mil y ciento,	eleven hundred.
mil ciento y diez,	eleven hundred and ten.
mil cuatrocientos noventa y dos,	fourteen hundred and ninety-two.
dos mil trescientas personas,	twenty-three hundred persons.

165. The conjunction **y**, *and* (archaic *é*), is now only used to connect the last of a series with the foregoing number:—

Fifteenth Century:	*Ninteenth Century:*
myll e quatroçientos e nouenta e nueue, 1499.	mil cuatrocientos noventa y nueve, 1499.

[1] So the Madrid hawkers say, for example: á real, *or* á real uno, *one real each.*

166. The ordinal numbers, as their name indicates, show the *order* of a series; as, *first*, *second*, etc.:—

Ordinal Numbers.			
1st	primero, a, (*contract* primer).	28th	vigésimo octavo.
2d	segundo, a.	29th	vigésimo nono.
3d	tercero, a, (*contract* tercer).	30th	trigésimo, a.
4th	cuarto, a.	31st	trigésimo primo, *etc.*
5th	quinto, a.	40th	cuadragésimo, a.
6th	sexto, a, (*and* sesto).	50th	quincuagésimo, a.
7th	séptimo, a, (*and* sétimo).	60th	sexagésimo, a.
8th	octavo, a.	70th	septuagésimo, a.
9th	nono, a, *or* noveno, a.	80th	octogésimo, a.
10th	décimo, a.	90th	nonagésimo, a.
11th	undécimo, a.	100th	centésimo, a.
12th	duodécimo, a.	101st	centésimo primo.
13th	décimo tércio.	200th	ducentésimo, a.
14th	décimo cuarto.	300th	trecentésimo, a.
15th	décimo quinto.	400th	cuadragentésimo, a.[1]
16th	décimo sexto.	500th	quingentésimo, a.
17th	décimo séptimo.	600th	sexcentésimo, a.[1]
18th	décimo octavo.	700th	septengentésimo, a.[1]
19th	décimo nono.	800th	octogentésimo, a.
20th	vigésimo, a.	900th	nonagentésimo, a.
21st	vigésimo primo.	1,000th	milésimo, a.
22d	vigésimo segundo.	2,000th	dos milésimo, a.
23d	vigésimo tercio.	10,000th	diez milésimo, a.
24th	vigésimo cuarto.	100,000th	cien milésimo, a.
25th	vigésimo quinto.	200,000th	doscientos milésimo, a.
26th	vigésimo sexto (sesto).	500,000th	quinientos milésimo, a.
27th	vigésimo séptimo (sétimo).	1,000,000th	millonésimo, a.

[1] Some write *cuadringentésimo*, *sescentésimo*, *septingentésimo*, but as the Academy does not give these numerals in the Dictionary or Grammar, the decision of that body is not accessible.

167. Archaic forms are: —

8th	ochavo, a.	30th	treinteno, a.
9th	noveno, a.	40th	cuarenteno, a.
10th	deceno, a.	50th	cincuenteno, a.
11th	onceno, a.	60th	sesenteno, a.
12th	doceno, a.	70th	setenteno, a.
13th	treceno, a.	80th	ochenteno, a.
14th	catorceno, a.	90th	noventeno, a.
15th	quinceno, a.	100th	centeno, a.
20th	veinteno, a.	1,000th	mileno, a.

el ochavo dia,	the eighth day. — *Crónica General*, A.D. 1260.
Alfonso onceno,	Alphonso XI. — Fourteenth century, and still used.
el doceno trabajo,	the twelfth labor. — Villena, Labors of Hercules.

But 21st, etc., would be *vigésimo primo*, not *veinteno primo*.

168. The ordinals, both simple and compound, vary regularly like all adjectives in *o*, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns: —

la primera estacion,	the first station.
leccion décima nona,	lesson nineteenth.
la fila vigésima prima,	the twenty-first row.

REMARK. — The Academy writes the compound forms in one word: as, trigésimotercio (*fem.* trigésimatercia), *thirty-third*; but this innovation is not generally adopted by Spanish printers, nor should it be, since each member varies in ending like independent adjectives.

For the contracts of *primero* and *tercero*, see 123.

169. Fractional numbers used in mathematical calculations, though substantives, belong here. They do not generally correspond with the ordinals, as in English;

but from ten upwards assume the ending *avo*, pl. *avos*: —

Fractional Numbers.			
$\frac{1}{2}$	**la** mitad (un medio).	$\frac{1}{16}$	un diez y seis avo (dieciseis avo).
$1\frac{1}{2}$	uno y medio, una y media.	$\frac{1}{17}$	un diez y siete avo.
$\frac{1}{3}$	un tercio.	$\frac{1}{18}$	un diez y ocho avo.
$\frac{2}{3}$	dos tercios.	$\frac{1}{19}$	un diez y nueve avo.
$\frac{1}{4}$	un cuarto.	$\frac{1}{20}$	un veintavo (veinte avo).
$\frac{3}{4}$	tres cuartos.	$\frac{1}{21}$	un veintiun avo, *etc.*
$\frac{1}{5}$	un quinto.	$\frac{3}{20}$	tres veintavos.
$\frac{4}{5}$	cuatro quintos.	$\frac{1}{30}$	un treintavo.
$\frac{1}{6}$	un sexto.	$\frac{1}{40}$	un cuarentavo.
$\frac{5}{6}$	cinco sextos.	$\frac{1}{50}$	un cincuentavo.
$\frac{1}{7}$	un séptimo.	$\frac{1}{60}$	un sesentavo.
$\frac{1}{8}$	un octavo *and* ochavo.	$\frac{1}{70}$	un setentavo.
$\frac{1}{9}$	un noveno.	$\frac{1}{80}$	un ochentavo.
$\frac{1}{10}$	un décimo.	$\frac{1}{90}$	un noventavo.
$\frac{1}{11}$	un onzavo (*or*, once avo).	$\frac{3}{90}$	tres noventavos.
$\frac{1}{12}$	un dozavo (doce avo).	$\frac{1}{100}$	un centavo *and* centésimo.
$\frac{1}{13}$	un trezavo (trece avo).	$\frac{1}{1000}$	un milésimo.
$\frac{1}{14}$	un catorzavo (catorce avo).	$\frac{325}{972}$	trescientos veinticinco, novecientos setenta y dos avos.
$\frac{1}{15}$	un quinzavo (quince avo).		

170. Fractional numbers, from $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{1}{10}$ inclusive, may also be expressed by the ordinals with the feminine noun **parte**, *part*, especially when a genitive follows or is understood. From $\frac{1}{12}$ onward this construction is preferable, except in mathematical calculations: —

one-third,	un tercio, *or* la tercera parte.
two-thirds,	dos tercios, *or* las dos terceras partes.
one-fourth,	un cuarto, *or* la cuarta parte.
three-fourths,	tres cuartos, *or* las tres cuartas partes.
one-twentieth,	un vigésimo, *or* la vigésima parte.
one-hundredth,	un centésimo, *or* la centésima parte.

a. As substantives, **una tercia** (formerly *una tercia parte*) signifies *a third of a yard;* **una cuarta**, *a fourth* or *quarter of a yard;* **un cuarteron**, *a quarter of a pound;* **una arroba** (from the Arabic for one-quarter), *twenty-five pounds* or *a quarter of a hundred*, applied to liquid as well as dry measure in Spain. **Un diezmo**, meaning *a civil or ecclesiastic ten per cent tax*, is corrupted from *décimo*, as the English *tithe* is from *tenth:* as, **las alcavalas del diezmo**, in ancient law, *the ten per cent* peculium regis *on all purchases and sales.* **Un quinto**, is *a fifth*, and *a fifth man*, hence *a conscript soldier;* **la quinta**, *the military conscription.*

b. Fractionals are also employed in Spanish to specify the number of leaves in a signature or folded sheet (*cuadernillo*[1]), that is, the size (*tamaño*) of a volume: —

un tomo en folio (f°),	a volume in folio.
un tomo en cuarto (4°),	a volume in 4to.
un tomo en octavo (8°),	a volume in 8vo.
un tomo en dozavo (12°),	a volume in 12mo.
un tomo en diez y seis avo (16°),	a volume in 16mo.
un t. en veinte y cuatro avo (24°),	a volume in 24mo.

REMARK. — In this connection, "large" is expressed by *mayor*, and "small" by *menor* or *pequeño:* —

un tomo en f° mayor, *or* de marca mayor,	a volume in large folio.
un tomo en cuarto menor,	a volume in small 4to.
un libro de mano en octavo marquilla,	a manuscript in medium octavo.

[1] So named (from *quatro*) because in the origins of typography most books were issued in "fours," whether the external form was quarto or folio.

un libro de molde en octavo pequeño, *or* "español,"	a printed book in small octavo, "Spanish size."[1]

171. The arithmetical signs +, ×, −, ÷, =, are read respectively **más, por, ménos, dividido por, igual:**—

$5 + 3 = 8$,	cinco más tres igual ocho; *or*, cinco y tres, ocho.
$\frac{5}{8} \times 8 = 5$,	cinco octavos por ocho igual cinco.
5 times 8 are 40,	cinco por ocho, cuarenta.

172. Half (a half or one-half), as a noun, is expressed by **la mitad** (in calculations only, by **un medio**); as an adjective, by **medio, a,** without *an* or *a*:—

la mitad de mis bienes,	one-half of my goods.
le dí la mitad,	I gave him one-half.
media hora, medio dia,	half an hour, half a day.
una hora y media,	an hour and a half.
un dia y medio,	a day and a half.

173. **Multiplicatives** answer the question, *How many fold?* as,

Adjectives.

simple, *simple.*	doble, *double.*	triple, *triple.*

Substantives.

el duplo,	*twofold, twice as much, many.*
el triplo,	*threefold, three times as much.*
el cuádruplo,	*fourfold, four times as much.*
el quíntuplo,	*fivefold, five times as many.*
el céntuplo,	*an hundred fold*, etc.

---

[1] Technical book terms are: una foja, *a folio* (leaf numbered on the first side only,—*recto, verso* or *vuelta*); una hoja, *a leaf* (without foliation or pagination); una página, *a numbered page.* Un "juego" de libros, means *a "set" of volumes*, whether of two, or three hundred; una biblioteca de tres mil tomos ó de mil novecientos juegos de libros, *a library consisting of three thousand volumes or of nineteen hundred sets.* Biblioteca is *a public* or *private library;* formerly, *librería* signified *private library*, but its use is now limited to the poets and old-fashioned people, while *librería* universally designates *a book-shop* or *the book trade.*

a. With the number of a street are used **duplicado**, "bis," *repeated;* **triplicado**, *triple number;* **cuadruplicado**, *quadruple number,* when it is not convenient or feasible to increase the cardinal number: —

calle del Arenal, número veinte duplicado, *Strand, No.* 20 "*bis.*"	calle del Saúco, núm. 6 trip°., *Alder Street, No.* 6 *triple.*

REMARK. — The Latin bis, *twice*, appears in Spanish in the words bizco (bisojo, *double eye*), *cross-eyed;* bizcocho (bis-coctus), *biscuit*,[1] *cracker*, and *teacake;* bisabuelo, a, *great-grandfather*, *great-grandmother;* and biznieto, a, *great-grandson*, *great-granddaughter*. The Spaniards use also the Greek τέταρτος, *fourth*, corrupted into *tátara*, with a few words: as, tatarabuelo, a, *great-great-grandfather* or *mother;* tataranieto, a, *great-great-grandson* or *daughter;* tataradeudo, a, *a remote kindred.*

174. Collectives or numeral substantives are: —

un par, *a couple.*	una treintena, *a score and a half.*
una docena, *a dozen.*	una cuarentena, *two score.*
una quincena, *fifteen.*	una centena, *five score.*
una veintena, *a score.*	una gruesa, *a gross.*

un par de dias, de huevos,	a couple of days, — of eggs.
una quincena (de dias),	a fortnight.
una treintena de años,	a score and a half of years.

a. The term "or so" after numerals is expressed by **poco más ó ménos**, or by **cosa de**, *a matter of:* —

una veintena de libras poco más ó ménos, *or* cosa de una veintena de libras, *twenty pounds or so, some twenty pounds.*

---

[1] That is, *English* biscuit, the American "cracker," also the teacake called "lady-fingers," and the like. Sea-biscuit in Spanish is *galleta*, "hard-tack," kneaded with rancid olive-oil, and used in the marine as well as the merchant service.

175. **Numeral Adverbs** answer the questions, *How many times? How often?* and are formed by the association of a cardinal number or adjective with the feminine noun **vez,** *a time* (Lat. *vice*-m):—

una vez, *once.*	muchas veces, *often.*
dos veces, *twice.*	pocas veces, *few times, seldom.*
tres veces, *three times.*	rara vez, *or* raras veces, *seldom.*
veinte veces, *twenty times.*	otras veces, *other times.*
cien veces, *one hundred times.*	algunas veces, *sometimes.*

alguna que otra vez, *one time and another.*

a. **Distributives** which answer likewise the question, *How often?* are expressed by **todo** or **cada**:—

todos los dias, meses, años,	every day, month, year.
todas las horas, veces,	every hour, each time.
cada dia, mes y año,	every day, month, and year.
cada hora, cada vez,	every hour, each time.
cada dos siglos,	every two centuries.
cada tres meses,	every three months.

REMARK.—"Time" is expressed in Spanish in a variety of ways: by *vez*, as above, when it means an occasion, an instance; by *tiempo*, as a limited portion of duration; by *hora*, when it means "o'clock"; by *rato*, as to the quality of an occasion; by *plazo*, as a fixed period; German, *Frist*:—

esta **vez** te lo perdono,	I'll forgive you this time.
el tiempo es corto,	time is short.
no tengo **tiempo**,	I have no time.
¿qué **hora** es?	what time is it?
á estas **horas** estará en Paris,	by this time he is at Paris.
ha llevado **mal** rato,	he had a poor time.
¡qué **rato** más delicioso!	what a delightful time!
el **plazo** convenido,	the time agreed on.
pagaré en el **plazo** señalado,	I shall pay at the expiration of the time.
á **plazos** cortos,	in short instalments.

The Pronoun.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

176. The personal pronouns in the nominative are:—

SINGULAR.			
Person.	**Masculine.**	**Feminine.**	**Neuter.**
First.	yo, *I.*	yo, *I.*	
Second.	tú, *thou.*	tú, *thou.*	
"	vos, *you.*	vos, *you.*	
Third.	él, *he (it).*	ella, *she (it).*	ello, *it.*
"	ustéd, *you (your grace).*	usted, *you (your grace).*	
PLURAL.			
First.	nosotros, *we.*	nosotras, *we.*	
Second.	vosotros, *you.*	vosotras, *you.*	
Third.	ellos, *they.*	ellas, *they.*	
"	ustédes, *you (your graces).*	ustedes, *you (your graces).*	

a. To these may be added **se** as the reflexive and reciprocal substitute of pronouns of the third person, in all cases except the nominative. As direct object, *se* means *one's self, himself, herself, itself, yourself;* pl., *themselves, yourselves, each other, one another.*

REMARK.—Names of things and abstract qualities (except those made so by the neuter article *lo*) are masculine or feminine in Spanish, whatever be the English gender. Hence, el libro, *the book*—él, le, lo, *it;* los libros, *the books*—ellos, los, *they, them;* la pluma, *the pen*—ella, la, *it;* las plumas, *the pens*—ellas, las, *they, them. Ello* relates only to a thought, or a phrase to which gender cannot be attributed: ello, lo, *it*—lo creo, *I believe it, I think so.* See § 84.

177. **Nosotros** and **vosotros** are compounds of *nos* and *vos* with the plural indefinite pronoun **otros, -as,** *others;* and hence the variation of gender, unknown to the other European languages, in the first and second persons. The appendix *otros* served originally to expand or amplify the force of *we* and *you*, but it added nothing to the signification, as the French *autres* in *vous autres* does. The compound first appeared in the latter half of the fifteenth century.[1]

178. **Nos** is still used officially in a representative sense by sovereigns, prelates, and magistrates. It is also met with in certain quaint devotional formulae: —

nos los Inquisidores,	we the Inquisitors.
nos el cabildo de tal,	we the Chapter of so and so.
venga á nos el tu reino,	let thy kingdom come to us.
ruega por nos, Señora,	intercede for us, Lady.

Pronouns of Address.

179. The pronouns regularly employed in popular address are *tú*, *vos*, *vosotros*, *-as*, and *usted;* besides titles such as *vueceléncia*, *señoría*, *usía*, etc.

REMARK. — At an early period of the vernacular Castilian, as fixed by King Alfonso X., called El Sabio, or *the Wise* (A.D. 1252-84), and till far down in the fifteenth century, the only pronouns of address, aside from titles, were *tú* and *vos*, the latter being then applicable to one or more persons. *Tú* was employed in sacred

[1] The compound forms do not appear in the early Castilian *Poem of the Cid*, written prior to the thirteenth century; nor in the *Chronicle of the Cid*, first printed in 1512, but older by several centuries; nor in the *Chronicle of Spain* (A.D. 1260), published in 1541; nor in the works of the Marquis of Santillana in the early part of the fifteenth century. They abound, however, in the Royal Edicts from 1476, and in the *Chronicle of Spain*, by Diego de Valera (Seville, 1482), though generally written throughout in two words, *nos otros*, *vos otros*.

invocation, in poetry, in the family, and to Moors (against the Arabic *ânta*, thou); while *vos* was the formal medium between man and man, like the English *you*. In the sixteenth century, under the expansive influences of the reigns of the Catholic sovereigns and the Emperor Charles V., vuestra merced, *your grace*, *pl.* vuestras mercedes, *your graces*, came to be the courtly address between gentlemen; and *vos*, with its new plural *vosotros*, was reserved for a lofty formula appropriate to persons of superior and inferior rank, to the Deity, and to court poetry, while *tú* maintained its position in the family and in informal rhyme. The relative situation of such words at the present day is as follows: —

180. Tú, *thou* (nearly always translated *you*), is employed: (*a*) in the sacred and hortative styles and in poetry; (*b*) between husband and wife, parents and children, relatives, and betrothed persons; (*c*) between intimate friends; (*d*) by the native master and mistress to their domestics; (*e*) by everybody in speaking to brutes, pet animals, or even to inanimate objects.

181. Vos, *you*, is now always limited to one person, male or female, although joined to the second person plural of verbs. It is at present employed; (*a*) interchangeably with *tú* for sacred invocation by Catholics, as more distant and formal than *tú*; (*b*) in modern literature, representing ancient manners; (*c*) in the family, when the younger members wish to show great respect to the elders; (*d*) in anger and scorn, to inferiors or to those whom we wish to address harshly; (*e*) in translations from the English and French, to represent the "*you*" and "*vous*" of those nations.

182. Vosotros, -as, *you*, is the plural of *tú* and of *vos*, and must be used when there are two or more persons or objects to whom singly *tú* or *vos* would apply.

Beyond this, it is also employed by public speakers before religious, literary, political, and other assemblies. It is, therefore, heard at public sessions of the Academies, at the Athenæum, the churches, and the theatre, by the accustomed or authorized speakers. But if, at the play, the manager come forth to make an announcement or offer an apology, he would use *ustedes*. *Vosotros* supposes the confidence and, to a certain degree, the sympathy of the audience.

183. **Ustéd** (pl., *ustédes*), *you*, is descended from the now obsolete vuestra merced, *your grace;* vuestras mercedes, *your graces* (abbreviated *Vmd.*, *Vmds.*), and represents the conventional "*you*" in all conditions of life; even in malice, anger, and satire. It is the universal address of society, and the only one the foreigner need ever employ. Being considered to be of the third person, it requires the verb, pronoun-object, and possessive adjective, to be likewise in that person, although translated into English by the second person.

At the present day in Spain it is either written out in full, or abbreviated into *V.* or *Vd.*, pl. *VV.* or *Vds.* These signs are always to be read *usted*, *ustedes*, precisely as *Mr.* in English is read *Mister*, and *M.* in French, *Monsieur:*—

usted (*or* V.) tiene,	you have, *i.e.* your grace has.
ustedes (*or* VV.) tienen,	you have, *i.e.* your graces have.
¿trae V. su hijo consigo?	do you bring your son with you?
¿no conoce V. á sus amigos?	do you not know your friends?

REMARK. — Official titles of address at court or in government circles are likewise joined with the third person of the verb. The principal are: vuestra (*or* su) majestad (V.M.), *your majesty;* vuestra (*or* su) alteza (V.A.), *your highness*, to a prince or prince-

regent; vuecelencia *or* vuecencia (V.E.), *your excellency*, to a crown minister, an ambassador, or a *grande* of Spain; usía (V.S.), *your honor*, to a judge or an alcalde.[1] In the Chambers the mutual address of the members is su señoría (S.S.), *his lordship*. The Regents of the kingdom in royal minorities have the corporate title of *Majestad*, like the king whom they represent; and the municipal councils that of *señoría*, or lordship.

Title of address is *el tratamiento*; as, el tratamiento de alteza, *the address of highness*. To "thee and thou" any one is *tutearle*, or *llamarle de tú*; the latter may be applied to any pronoun of address, —*llamar á uno de vos, de usted*, to use *vos*, *usted*, to any one.

Inflection.

184. The personal pronoun admits of a fuller inflection than any other part of speech, save the verb. The dative and accusative cases have two forms: the first of which is called the *conjunctive*, because governed by the verb; and the second, *disjunctive*, because governed by a preposition, and thus disjoined from the verb:—

Conjunctive.	Disjunctive.
me da, *he gives (to) me.*	acude á mí, *he applies to me.*
te busca, *he seeks thee.*	á tí busco, *I seek thee.*

185. The association of both the conjunctive and disjunctive forms to the same verb constitutes the redundant or *pleonastic* construction, very common in Spanish:—

me da á mí, *or* á mí me da,	he gives (to) me.
te busca á tí, *or* á tí te busca,	he seeks thee.
le digo á V., *or* á V. le digo,	I say to you (to him to you).
les estimo á VV., *or* á VV. les estimo,	I esteem you (them your graces).

[1] Formerly also much used by the lower orders to any gentleman, but rather provincial now.

186. The personal pronouns are inflected as follows:—

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	First Person.			
N.	yo,	*I.*	nosotros-as,	*we.*
G.	de mí,	*of me, of myself.*	de nosotros-as,	*of us, of ourselves.*
D.	me — á mí,	*to me, to myself.*	nos — á nosotros-as,	*to us, to ourselves.*
A.	me — á mí,	*me, myself.*	nos — á nosotros-as,	*us, ourselves.*
P.	mí,	*me, myself.*	nosotros-as,	*us, ourselves.*
	Second Person.			
N.	tú,	*thou.*	N. vosotros-as,	*you.*
G.	de tí,	*of thee, of thyself.*	G. de vosotros-as,	*of you, of yourselves.*
D.	te — á tí,	*to thee, to thyself.*	D. os — á vosotros-as,	*to you, to yourselves.*
A.	te — á tí,	*thee, thyself.*	A. os — á vosotros-as,	*you, yourselves.*
P.	tí,	*thee, thyself.*	P. vosotros-as,	*you, yourselves.*
N.	vos,	*you.*		
G.	de vos,	*of you, of yourself.*		
D.	os — á vos,	*to you, to yourself.*		
A.	os — á vos,	*you, yourself.*		
P.	vos,	*you, yourself.*		
	Third Person — Masculine.			
N.	él,	*he, it.*	ellos,	*they.*
G.	de él,	*of him, of it.*	de ellos,	*of them.*
D.	le — á él,	*to him, to it.*	les — á ellos,	*to them.*
A.	le, lo — á él,	*him, it.*	los, les — á ellos,	*them.*
P.	él,	*him, it.*	ellos,	*them.*
	Third Person — Feminine.			
N.	ella,	*she, it.*	ellas,	*they.*
G.	de ella,	*of her, of it.*	de ellas,	*of them.*
D.	le — á ella,	*to her, to it.*	les — á ellas,	*to them.*
A.	la — á ella,	*her, it.*	las — á ellas,	*them.*
P.	ella,	*her, it.*	ellas,	*them.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	Third Person—Neuter.	
N.	ello, lo, *it, that, so.*	(Wanting.)
G.	de ello, *of it.*	
D.	á ello, *to it.*	
A.	lo, *it, that, so.*	
P.	ello, *it.*	
	Reflexive Substitute of Third Person.	
G.	de sí, *of himself, of herself, of itself.*	de sí, *of themselves, of each other.*
D.	se — á sí, *to himself, to herself, to itself.*	se — á sí, *to themselves, to each other.*
A.	se — á sí, *himself, herself, itself, one's self.*	se — á sí, *themselves, each other.*
P.	sí, *himself, herself, itself.*	sí, *themselves, each other.*

REMARKS ON THE CASES.

Nominative.

187. The subject nominative of the personal pronoun is usually suppressed, unless required on account of emphasis, contrast, ambiguity, or distinctness:—

voy á casa,	I am going home.
volverá pronto,	he will return soon.
¿qué escribes? están locos,	what are you writing? they are crazy.
¿qué he de hacer yo?	what am *I* to do?
él se va, ella se queda,	he goes, she stays.
no sabe lo que yo quisiera,	he does not know what I want.

a. Sometimes its use is merely rhetorical:—

yo soy la luz verdadera,	I am the true light.
yo he dicho en mis discursos,	I have said in my speeches.

188. The subject of an impersonal verb is not expressed: —

conviene; me parece,	it is fitting; it seems to me.
basta; se sigue,	it is enough; it follows.
llueve; hay,	it rains; there is, there are.

a. But when it points with emphasis to an idea or to a following *que*, the subject *ello* is employed: —

¿qué es ello?	what is it?
ello es que hay animales muy científicos (*Iriarte*),	the fact is that there are some very scientific animals.

REMARK. — In *es que*, the fact is that, there is an ellipse. The full form *es el caso que*, or *el caso es que*, is often met with.

189. When, in English, the pronoun-subject has a substantive in apposition with it that limits or defines it, in Spanish the substantive, accompanied by the definite article, replaces the pronoun as the subject of the verb, and the latter is put in the person and number appropriate to the suppressed pronoun: —

los Españoles estamos muy atrasados,	we Spaniards are very backward.
tenemos el gusto los liberales de ver el cambio,	we liberals have the satisfaction of seeing the change.
la mayor ofensa que los príncipes podeis hacer á Dios, es no osar nadie avisaros. (*Guevara*, 1537.)	the greatest offence that ye princes can commit against God, is that none dare warn you.

a. If the pronoun and apposition are both expressed, the latter must always retain the definite article: —

nosotros los Españoles,	we Spaniards.
vosotras las señoras,	you ladies.

190. The position of the pronoun-subject is subservient to the general laws of taste; but emphasis, enthusiasm, and often elegance, are exhibited by placing it after the verb, as in the interrogative state:—

no fue él en verdad el único intolerante de su siglo,	indeed he was not the only intolerant man of his time.
hombre del cual pienso yo que no le hay superior en la historia,	a man who I think has no superior in history. (*Cánovas del Castillo*, 1877.)

Genitive.

191. The genitive has all the meanings of the preposition **de**, *of*, *from*, *by*, *with*, *at*, *to*, and often it is not translated at all:—

habla de tí, de nosotros,	he speaks of thee, of us.
se rie de mí, de ellos,	he laughs at me, at them.
esta casa es de ella,	this house belongs to her (is of).
se olvida de sí, de ello,	he forgets (of) himself (of) it.

Dative.

192. The dative is not only translated by *to*, but also by *for*, *from* (with the idea of taking away), and very often it imparts to a following definite article the meaning of a possessive adjective:—

me habla, te da,	he speaks to me, he gives thee.
nos procura,	he gets for us.
le cortó el brazo,	he cut his (another's) arm.
se hirió la mano,	he wounded his (own) hand.
les quita el sueño,	he takes away their sleep.

a. In English, the signs of the dative (*to*, *for*, *from*) are often suppressed:—

me da, le dice,	he gives me, he tells him.
nos procura destinos,	he gets us places (positions).

193. In Spanish, the dative, with another pronoun-object, is very frequently superfluous, and may be considered as an expletive: —

llévatelo (*of a purchase*),	take it (for thyself).
se lo comió,	he ate it up (for himself).
quítatemelo (*of removal*),	take it away from me.
échatemela (la pluma),	toss it to me (the pen).

194. Since the datives **le** and **les** are common to both genders, some writers improperly employ the accusatives **la** and **las** for these feminines: —

le digo, la digo,	I say to him, I tell her.
les presto el libro,	I lend them (men) the book.
las presto la pluma,	I lend them (women) the pen.

Accusative.

195. The accusative case is governed directly by the verb: —

me ve, te llama,	he sees me, he calls thee.
nos aman, os engañan,	they love us, they deceive you.
le conoce, la sigue,	he knows him, he follows her.
los odia, las recibe,	he hates them, he receives them.
el libro — le *or* lo tomo,	the book — I take it (him).
la pluma — la veo,	the pen — I see it (her).
los libros — los tomo,	the books — I take them.
las plumas — las veo,	the pens — I see them.

REMARK. — Many modern writers use *lo* of persons as well as of things, but the student should follow the dominant practice which makes *le* refer to persons and masculine words, while *lo* is limited to things to which gender cannot be assigned.

196. The use of **les** for **los** is frequently met with, but is discouraged by the Academy. In the pleonastic construction with **ustedes**, however, it is admissible: —

les busqué á ustedes,	I looked for you, I sought you.
los conocí en seguida,	I knew them at once.
les mandó que no saliesen,	he ordered them not to go out.

REMARK. — In the ancient language, from which the last example is taken, many verbs seem to have governed the dative which are now usually found with the accusative.

197. The pronouns **le** or **lo**, **la**, **los**, **las**, have an indefinite signification of *one*, *some*, *any*, *such*, negative *none*, when they stand in the predicate with the impersonal verb **hay**, *there is*, *there are*, and relate to a substantive taken in an indeterminate sense: —

cree que no hay dia de juicio, y **le** (*or* lo) hay,	he believes that there is no judgment day, and there is one.
trae una silla si **la** hay por ahí,	bring a chair if there is one thereabouts.
compraré billetes si **los** hay,	I shall buy tickets if there are any.
si hubiese alguna sociedad patriótica como **las** hay políticas,	if there were some patriotic society as there are political ones.

198. The same pronouns signify *some*, *one*, *ones*, when they are used with personal verbs relating to a substantive taken in a partitive sense: —

¿tiene V. pan? le *or* lo tengo,	have you bread? I have (some).
¿quién quiere agua? la quiero yo,	who wants water? I want some.
¡felices páscuas tenga usted! — las tenga usted muy felices,	a merry Christmas to you! — may you have very merry ones.
¿tiene V. ganas de comer? las tengo y urgentes,	have you an appetite? I have, and a pressing one.

199. **Lo**, accusative of **ello**, represents a phrase, an idea, to which gender cannot be assigned: —

¿cree usted lo que dice?	do you believe what he says?
no lo creo,	I do not believe it.
¿conviene hacerlo ó no?	is it worth while to do it or not?

200. **Lo** is equivalent to *one, such,* when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be,* referring to a foregoing substantive: —

¿es ella huérfana? lo es,	is she an orphan? she is (one).
¿son ellas huérfanas? lo son,	are they orphans? they are.
¿es usted caballero? lo soy,	are you a gentleman? I am.
sea cristiano ó no lo sea,	whether he be a Christian or not.
afirmaba el autor que lo era tambien de un Viaje,	the author affirmed that he was one of some Travels too.
ví que decía "carta"; éralo en efecto,	I saw that it said "Epistle"; in fact it was one.

201. When **lo** stands in the predicate of the verb *to be,* and relates to an adjective, it is equivalent to *so:* —

si él está contento, yo no lo estoy,	if he is satisfied, I am not (so).
¿será ocioso emprenderlo?	will it be vain to undertake it?
sí que lo será,	yes, it will be.
los ladrones son muy honrados, pero tambien lo son los verdugos,	robbers are very honest people, but so are hangmen likewise.

REMARK. — The idiomatic formulae, Is it I? is it thou? it is I, it is thou, etc., are expressed in Spanish by the simple verb *to be* (I am, thou art; am I? art thou? etc.): —

¿quién es? yo soy,	who is it? it is I.
¿son ustedes? nosotros somos,	is it you? it is we.
¿soy yo, Señor? tú eres,	Lord, is it I? it is thou.

Prepositional.

202. The prepositional case is that form of the pronoun before which all prepositions must stand. It is the same as the nominative in form, save in **mí, tí,** and **sí**: —

sin mí, para tí,	without me, for thee.
con él, por usted,	with him, by you.
á nosotros, de vosotros,	to us, of *or* from you.

203. By exception, the preposition **con**, *with*, unites as one word to the forms **-migo, -tigo, -sigo** — the "*go*" being a forgotten remnant of the Latin *cum* in *mecum, tecum, secum:* —

conmigo, contigo,	with me, with thee.
consigo,	with himself, herself, etc.
but	
con él, con ella,	with him (it), with her (it).
con ello, con nosotros,	with it, with us.

204. The adverb **allí**, *there, in it*, is often used instead of a pronoun in the prepositional case: —

¿está en la cajita? allí está,	is it in the box? it is in it.
la pintura — clava allí los ojos,	the painting — fix your eyes on it.

Position of the Object.

205. The conjunctive forms of the dative and accusative cases regularly stand before the finite verb; but to infinitives, gerunds, and imperatives conjugated affirmatively, they are appended as one word: —

me oye, oirme,	he hears me, to hear me.
oyéndome, óyeme	hearing me, hear (thou) me.
te digo, decirte,	I tell thee, to tell thee.
diciéndote, díme,	telling thee, tell (thou) me.
no le escuches,	do not listen to him.
no me digas eso,	do not tell me that.

206. Objective pronouns may, however, be appended to the finite verb when it begins a sentence, unless negative: —

réstanos decir (no nos resta),	it remains for us to say.
nególes el cielo este gozo,	heaven denied them this boon.
séale la tierra leve,	light be the dust above him!
pláceme, dijo el cura,	it pleases me, said the curate,

207. If an infinitive depend on a verb or on another infinitive, the pronoun may stand before the verb or be attached to either infinitive: —

no quiso decirme, *or* no me quiso decir,	he did not care to tell me.
voy á buscarlos, *or* los voy á buscar,	I am going to look for them.
sin volver á preguntarles, *or* sin volverles á preguntar,	without asking them again (returning to ask them).

a. If the verb or infinitive do not admit an object, the pronoun attaches to the word that governs it according to the primary rule: —

los vió venir,	he saw them come.
vino á verme,	he came to see me.
al oirnos discurrir así,	on hearing us discourse thus.

208. When the gerund is in the progressive form of the verb with **estar,** *to be;* **ir,** *to go;* **venir,** *to come;* **andar,** *to go,* the object-pronoun may attach to it, or stand before the verb; but the latter disposition is preferable: —

lo estamos viendo todos los dias,	we are seeing it every day.
los voy buscando,	I am looking for them.
os vamos comprendiendo,	we are getting to understand you.
nos iba siguiendo,	he went on following us.

209. The first and second persons plural of the imperative mode lose the *s* and the *d* of the respective endings when the reflexives **nos** and **os** are attached to them: —

amémonos (*for* amémosnos),	let us love one another.
vámonos (*for* vayámosnos),	let us go.
amáos (*for* amados),	love (ye) one another.
detenéos (*for* detenedos),	stop (yourselves).
rendíos (*for* rendidos),	surrender (yourselves).

REMARK. — The above constitute the natural and regular laws for the position of the conjunctive pronouns. There are some deviations in practice from them which the student is advised not to imitate, since their application would be more or less quaint and inelegant, or dependent on a wide experience of the language at all epochs.

Disjunctive Form.

210. The disjunctive or prepositional form of the dative and accusative cases is used when the verb, from its intransitive nature or signification, does not (in Spanish) admit an object without a preposition: —

acudió á mí, á tí, á vos,	he applied to me, to thee, to you.
viene á nosotros y nos dice,	he comes to us and says (to us).
nos acercamos á vosotros,	we draw near to you.
se dirijió á ellos, á ellas,	he addressed (himself to) them.

211. It is likewise used with all kinds of verbs in emphatic, intensive, and antithetic utterances, in exclamations, and in answer to a question without the verb: —

¡a tí llamo, Señor!	Lord, to Thee I call!
los lazos que á mí le unen,	the bonds that unite him to me.
¿á él buscas ahora?	are you looking for *him* now?
nadie osa avisar á vosotros y reprender á vuestros cortesanos,	no one ventures to warn *you* and rebuke your *courtiers*.
la candela alumbra á los otros y quema á sí misma,	the lamp gives light to others and consumes itself.
el príncipe nos puede avisar y nosotros á él,	the prince may warn us and we him.
¿á quién busca fulano?	whom is such a one looking for?
á V., á mí, á ellos,	for you, for me, for them.
¡á él eso!	(do you say) that *to him!*

212. When there are two verbs, the one of which is intransitive and the other transitive, directly or indirectly, each may have its appropriate regimen: —

llego á ellos y les digo,	I come up to them and say (to them).

213. Some verbs require the disjunctive with one signification and the conjunctive with another: —

no vuelvas más á él,	do not return to him again.
me vuelve la cara,	he turns his face to me.
cedo á ella,	I give way to her.
le cedo el paso,	I allow her to pass.

Pleonastic Construction.

214. The conjunctive and disjunctive pronouns may be associated to the same verb, not merely to give emphasis, but also to amplify the phrase. Either pronoun may come first, but greater intensity is often secured when precedence is given to the disjunctive: —

á tí te conviene eso,	that is for your interest.
á él le aprecian mucho,	they regard him highly.
¿á mí qué me importa?	what do *I* care?
quiso engañarnos á nosotros,	he wanted to deceive us.
¿á vosotros os gusta eso?	do you like that? (does that please you?)

215. Any substantive or appositive may replace the disjunctive pronoun, preserving the redundant construction with the conjunctive: —

le aseguro al ministro,	I assure the minister.
á los Indios les obligaron á trabajar,	they compelled the Indians to work.
á los caballeros les pareció bien,	it seemed good to the gentlemen.
al hombre no le es permitido obrar con libertad,	man is not allowed to act with freedom.
á todos nos reportará un beneficio,	it will bring us all a benefit.
á los Españoles nos gusta charlar (*or* parlar),	we Spaniards like to gossip (it pleases us S. to gossip).

216. A similar redundant construction obtains with the conjunctive pronoun and a substantive in the accusative: —

eso no lo hago,	I'll not do that.
es amigo de apuntarlo todo,	he is fond of jotting down everything.
todo me lo enviaba mi dama,	my lady sent me everything.
casa no la tenían,	house they had none.
cosa que no le fué posible el cumplirla,	a thing that it was not possible for him to fulfil.
hombres como Cárlos quinto nadie los volverá ya más á ver,	no one will ever again see men like Charles the Fifth.

Inflection of Usted.

217. **Usted** is inflected like any personal substantive; as, *hombre*, *mujer*. To avoid its unpleasant repetition, it has for pronominal substitutes the datives and accusatives of *él* and *ella*, together with the common reflexive and reciprocal substitute of the third person:—

	Singular.		Plural.	
N.	ustéd,	*you.*	ustédes,	*you.*
G.	de usted,	*of you.*	de ustedes,	*of you.*
D.	á usted, *subs.* le,	*to you.*	á ustedes, les,	*to you.*
A.	á usted, *subs.* le, la,	*you.*	á ustedes, los, las (les),	*you.*
P.	usted,	*you.*	ustedes,	*you.*
G.	de sí,	*of yourself.*	de sí,	*of yourselves.*
D.	se — á sí,	*to yourself.*	se — á sí,	*to yourselves.*
A.	se — á sí,	*yourself.*	se — á sí,	*yourselves.*
P.	sí,	*yourself.*	sí,	*yourselves.*

218. To avoid the disagreeable repetition of a formal address, *usted* as subject may be given once, and left understood afterward:—

usted no sabe lo que quiere,	you do not know what you want.

219. As object, *usted* may be represented by its pronominal substitutes:—

devuelvo á V. el libro y le pido otro,	I return you the book and ask you for another.
vengo á ver á VV. y á decirles,	I come to see you and to say to you.
oigo á V., mas no le veo,	I hear you, but I do not see you.
busqué á VV., mas no les encontré,	I looked for you, but I did not find you.

220. In short sentences, *usted*, as subject, may be suppressed; and, as object, may be replaced by one of its substitutes, provided no ambiguity would arise:—

me hace un gran favor,	you do me a great favor.
es cuanto le tengo que decir,	that is all I have to tell you.
les digo y lo repito,	I tell you and I repeat it.

221. The oblique cases of *usted* may replace the possessive adjective:—

á los piés de V., señora,	at your feet, lady (*at presentation or exit*).
beso á V. la mano, caballero,	I kiss your hand, sir (*formal salutation.*

222. *Usted*, as subject, may stand before or after the verb to which it is nominative. In the compound tenses it can never separate the auxiliary and participle, but takes its place before or after both:—

usted no sabe, *or* no sabe V.,	you do not know.
lo hallarán ustedes,	you will find it.
espero que nos hará V. el favor de quedar con nosotros,	I hope you will do us the favor of remaining with us.
¿ha recibido V. el libro?	have you received the book?

a. The substitutes of *usted* follow the general law of position laid down for conjunctive pronouns:—

le digo, les digo,	I tell you (*sing. and pl.*).
diciéndole, diciéndoles,	telling you.
decirle, buscarles,	to tell you, to look for you.
retírese V., no se retire V.,	retire, do not retire.

223. *Usted* and its substitutes form the pleonastic construction when joined to the same verb:—

le diré á V.,	I shall tell you.
le busco á V.,	I look for you.
¿qué le pasa á V. (*sing.*)?	what is the matter with you?
¿qué les pasa á VV. (*pl.*)?	what is the matter with you?

224. All adjectives, past participles, and variable words agree in gender and number with *usted* when they qualify or relate to it:—

es usted huérfana,	you are an orphan.
está V. engañado, señor,	you are deceived, sir.
está V. engañada, señora,	you are deceived, madam.
VV. mismos son los traidores,	you yourselves are the traitors.
VV. mismas son las traidoras,	you yourselves are the traitor-esses.

The Reflexive Pronoun.

225. The pronouns of the first and second persons have, in the oblique cases, a reflexive meaning when they refer to the same person as the subject:—

me hallo ocupado,	(I find myself,) I am busy.
te engañas,	thou deceivest thyself.
nos preguntamos,	we ask ourselves.
os arrojais,	you cast yourselves.

226. Pronouns of the third person, including *usted*, refer, in the oblique cases, to a *different* person or thing from the subject. Hence, each gender employs the common substitute **se** to express reflexive or reciprocal action on the *subject:*—

se olvida de él,	he forgets him (another).
se olvida de sí,	he forgets himself.

le engaña,	he deceives him.
se engaña,	he deceives himself.
lo abre; se abre,	he opens it; it opens (itself).
los hieren,	they strike them.
se hieren,	they strike themselves.
V. la engaña; V. se engaña,	you deceive her; you deceive yourself.
VV. las engañan; VV. se engañan,	you deceive them; you deceive yourselves.
se toman alimento para ellos,	they take along food for them.
se toman alimento para sí,	they take along food for themselves.

227. When *se* represents a neuter or an impersonal subject, it may be translated by *one*, *they*, *we*, *you*, *people*, taken in an indeterminate sense, or the verb with *se* may be rendered by the passive voice: —

se dice (*it says itself*),	they say, it is said.
se avisa,	they give notice, notice is given.
nada se saca con eso,	you'll gain nothing by that.
aquí se come bien,	here you dine well.
se ha mandado,	orders have been issued.
se ve, se conoce,	it is clear, it is evident.

228. A reflexive verb, as a rule, replaces the passive voice, which may often be translated by the indefinite *they*: —

aquí se habla Español,	Spanish is spoken here.
se equivocan mucho,	they are much mistaken.
se encuentra gente,	you find people.
se compran libros viejos,	old books are bought.
se entregan las armas,	they give up their arms (the arms surrender themselves or are surrendered).

229. The reflexive *se* is very generally omitted in translation as superfluous in English:

se digna protegerme,	he deigns to aid me.
se marchan en seguida,	they depart at once. [poser.
se va haciendo cajista,	he is getting to be a (type) com-
se queda con él,	he keeps it (remains with it).
se vuelve loco de gozo,	he is overcome with joy.
se niega á complacerme,	he refuses to accommodate me.

230. *Se* stands in the dative to replace a possessive adjective with a determinative object: —

se pone la levita,	he puts on his coat.
se quita el abrigo,	he takes off his overcoat.
se ha cortado la mano,	he has cut his hand.

231. The dative of interest is frequently met with in Spanish, and sometimes has the force of an expletive: —

se propone,	he proposes (to himself).
se lo comió,	he ate it up (for himself).
cójetela — la moneda,	pick it up — the coin.
lléveselo V. — el libro,	take it — the book.
súbetelo — el baul,	carry it up stairs — the trunk.
échatemelo, [fermos,	toss it to me. [die to me).
á mí se me mueren ménos en-	I lose fewer cases (fewer cases

232. *Se* has very often an adverbial force, or it receives the action of a transitive verb, leaving it practically intransitive: —

se va, se vuelve,	he goes away, he turns around.
se cae, se lleva,	he falls down, he carries off.
se sale, se muere,	it leaks, he is dying.
se rompe, se dobla,	it breaks, it folds.
se abre, se cierra,	it opens, it shuts.

Two Objective Pronouns.

233. When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, the dative precedes the accusative, except only the reflexive *se*, which always stands first, whichever be its case: —

me lo da, me la da,	he gives it to me.
te los busca, te las busca.	he seeks them for thee.
nos lo presta,	he lends it to us.
os los ofrezco,	I offer them to you.
te lo llevas,	thou takest it for thyself.
se me olvida,	(it forgets itself to me) I forget.

234. When the conjunctive datives **le**, *to him, to her, to it, to you*, and **les**, *to them, to you*, meet a pronoun-object beginning with **l**, they assume the common form **se**. This word was anciently written *ge*, and is not to be confounded with the reflexive of the third person [1]:—

se le doy — el libro,	I give it (the book) to him.
se lo presto — á ella,	I lend it to her.
se lo digo — á usted,	I say it to you (*sing.*).
se les envia — á ellos,	he sends them (persons) to them.
se los presta — á ellas,	he lends them (books) to them.
se lo digo — á ustedes,	I say it to you (*plur.*).

a. The mutations of *le, les* into *se* appear, then, as follows:—

le le	*and*	les le	*become*	se le;	*ancient,*	ge le.
le la		les la		se la;		ge la.
le lo		les lo		se lo;		ge lo.
le les		les les		se les;		ge les.
le los		les los		se los;		ge los.
le las		les las		se las;		ge las.

---

[1] *Se*, substitute for *le, les*, and *se*, reflexive, came to be identical in form by the early vitiated pronunciation of the primitive *ge*. The Latin *illi, illis*, first produced the Spanish datives *li* and *lis*, later *le, les*, which, before a pronoun-object in *l*, passed over into *ge*, like *muger* from *mulier*, and *ageno* from *alienus*. But *ge* and the reflexive *se* were anciently pronounced almost alike,—*shé* (Alsatian-French, *jé*),—and hence the graphic confusion of them near the close of the fifteenth century. Each should, therefore, be kept functionally distinct, although they are constantly interchanging with apparent identity:—

se lo procura (se = le),	he gets it for him.
se lo procura (se = se),	he gets it for himself.
se los compran (se = les),	they buy them for them.
se los compran (se = se),	they buy them for themselves.

235. The following table presents examples of two conjunctive pronouns, the first of which is in the dative case, and the second in the accusative. When these pronouns are *attached* to the verbal form, as represented in the second column, the verbal form must be accented; thus, **digotelo**, *I tell thee so:* —

FIRST PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.					
Before the Verb.	**Attached to the Verb.**			**Reflexive.**	
me le, me la, me lo, me los (les), me las,	-mele, -mela, -melo, -melos (les), -melas,	him, her, it, it, them (*m.*), them (*f.*),	to me.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to myself.
nos le, nos la, nos lo, nos los (les), nos las,	-nosle, -nosla, -noslo, -noslos (les), -noslas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to us.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to ourselves.
SECOND PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.					
te le, te la, te lo, te los (les), te las,	-tele, -tela, -telo, -telos (les), -telas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to thee.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to thyself.
os le, os la, os lo, os los (les), os las,	-osle, -osla, -oslo, -oslos (les), -oslas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to you.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to yourself. to yourselves.

THIRD PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.					
Before the Verb.	**Attached to the Verb.**			**Reflexive.**	
se le, se la, se lo, se los (les), se las,	-sele, -sela, -selo, -selos (les), -selas,	him, her, it, it, them (*m.*), them (*f.*),	to him. to her. to you.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to himself. to herself. to itself. to yourself.
se le, se la, se lo, se los (les), se las,	-sele, -sela, -selo, -selos (les), -selas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to them. to you.	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to themselves. to yourselves.

236. In the following table the first pronoun is the reflexive in the accusative case, and the second a conjunctive in the dative:—

REFLEXIVE WITH ALL PERSONS.—ORDER, ACC. AND DAT.			
se me, se te, se le, se (le) á V.	-seme, -sete, -sele, -se(le) á V.	himself, herself, itself, themselves,	to me, to thee, to him, her, it. to you (your grace).
se nos, se os, se les, se (les) á VV.,	-senos, -seos, -seles, -se(les) á VV.,	himself, herself, itself, themselves,	to us. to you. to them. to you (your graces).

237. The position of two objective pronouns, with respect of the governing verb, follows the same laws as that of the simple objective:—

me lo da,	he gives it to me.
dámelo,	give it to me (*imperative*).
no me lo dés,	do not give it to me.
dárselo,	to give it to him (*or* to them).
dándoselo,	giving it to him (*or* to them).
quieren quitármelo, / me lo quieren quitar,	they wish to take it from me.
entréguenseme las armas,	let the arms be delivered to me.
habiéndotelo dicho,	having told thee so.
se me figúra,	I imagine.
figúratelo,	imagine *or* fancy it.
no te lo figúres,	do not imagine it.

238. The pleonastic construction is the same for two objectives as for one: —

se lo doy á usted, á ustedes,	I give it to you (*sing. and plur.*).
á ese caballero se lo he dicho,	I have told it to that gentleman.
á mí me lo han asegurado,	they assured me so.
nos hizo Dios merced á tí y á mí,	God was gracious to you and to [me.

Mismo, Propio.

239. Every pronoun-subject may be intensified by adding to it, in the proper gender and number, the adjective **mismo, a,** *self;* **mismos, as,** *selves:* —

yo mismo, yo misma,	I myself (*man or woman*).
tú mismo, tú misma,	thou thyself.
él mismo, ella misma,	he himself, she herself.
nosotros mismos, nosotras mismas,	we ourselves.
usted mismo, usted misma,	you yourself.
ustedes mismos *or* mismas,	you yourselves.

REMARK. — Note the effect of the graphic accent on the signification of *tu* and *el:*

él mismo, *he himself.*	el mismo, *the same.*
tú mismo, *thou thyself.*	tu mismo padre, *thy very father.*

240. In the oblique cases of the personal pronoun, *mismo* or *propio* may be used, but only with the disjunctive or prepositional forms: —

me retráigo de mí mismo,	I withdraw from myself.
te engañas á tí propio,	thou deceivest thyself.
se condena á sí misma,	she condemns herself.
os quereis á vosotros mismos,	you are fond of yourselves.
VV. se vuelven contra sí propios,	you turn against your own selves.

a. *Mismo* may be added to nouns with the reflexive meanings of the third person: —

el hombre mismo,	the man himself.
la mujer misma,	the woman herself.
el libro mismo,	the book itself.
los derechos mismos,	the rights themselves.
las casas mismas,	the houses themselves.

REMARK. — The English word *self*, joined to nouns or adjectives without a pronoun, may be generally rendered by *propio*, *a*, by a circumlocution, or by a single word: —

el amor propio, *self-love.*	el gobierno popular, *self-government.*
la abnegacion propia, *self-denial.*	orgulloso, *self-conscious.*
el orgullo, *self-consciousness.*	egoista, *selfish.*
el egoísmo, *selfishness.*	prensa automática, *self-acting press.*
automático, a, *self-acting.*	

una máquina que se alimenta á sí misma, *a self-feeding machine.*

241. After adverbs of time and place, *mismo* is invariable and signifies *this* or *that very*, or its force may be rendered by the tone of voice: —

mañana mismo, hoy mismo,	to-morrow, this very day.
ahora mismo, ayer mismo,	this very moment, only yesterday.
aquí (allí) mismo,	in this (that) very place.

242. *Mismo*, with the definite article, has the significations of *self*, *very*, *even*: —

el mismo cielo, *the sky itself*, *the very sky*, *even the sky*.
las mismas mujeres, *the women themselves*, *the very women*, *even the women*.

a. *Even*, in this sense, may also be expressed by **hasta**, with or without *mismo*: —

hasta las mujeres, *or* hasta las mismas mujeres, *even the women*, or *even the very women*.

b. **Mismo, a**, as a common adjective, with an article, signifies *the same*: —

el mismo dia,	the same day.
la misma noche,	the same night.
los mismos libros,	the same books.

Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns.

243. Possessive adjectives and pronouns are varied and inflected like any adjective in **o**. Unlike the English usage, they agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

244. Possessive adjectives are conveniently classed as *conjunctive* and *absolute*, according as they stand *before* the noun or *after* it. The conjunctives lose their final syllable, and consequently their gender distinction, except in the first and second persons plural, in which both forms are identical. They are varied as follows: —

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.			
Conjunctive.	**Absolute.**		**Conjunctive.**	**Absolute.**		
Common.	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	*Common.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
mi,	mio,	mia,	mis,	mios,	mias,	my.
tu,	tuyo,	tuya,	tus,	tuyos,	tuyas,	thy.
su,	suyo,	suya,	sus,	suyos,	suyas,	his, her, its, your.
nuestro-a,	nuestro,	nuestra,	nuestros-as,	nuestros,	nuestras,	our.
vuestro-a,	vuestro,	vuestra,	vuestros-as,	vuestros,	vuestras,	your.
su,	suyo,	suya,	sus,	suyos,	suyas,	their, your.

245. The conjunctive forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand *before* the nouns they qualify when no particular emphasis is intended:—

mi padre, mis padres,	my father, my parents.
mi casa, mis casas,	my house, my houses.
tu dinero, tus dias,	thy money, thy days.[1]
su tio, sus tios (§ 106),	his uncle, his uncle and aunt.
su trabajo, sus trabajos,	their labor, their trials.
nuestro libro, nuestra pluma,	our book, our pen.
nuestros libros, nuestras plumas,	our books, our pens.

246. Since **su**, **sus**, signify *one's*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *their*, *your*, and are therefore often equivocal, the genitive case of the appropriate personal pronoun which they

[1] *Tus dias* also means "thy saint's day," the anniversary of one's christening or baptism; birthday is not celebrated in Spain. So they say, hoy es su santo, *or* el dia de su santo, *or simply* hoy son sus dias, *to-day is his saint* or *saint's day* or *to-day are "his days"* = his birthday, in English.

represent may be added to the noun, or the definite article may replace *su, sus,* when the context would be indecisive, or when emphasis requires: —

su libro de él, de ella,	his, her book (his book of him, of her).
su libro de ellos, de ellas,	their book (their book of them, *m.* and *f.*).
los libros de él, de ellos,	his, their books (the books of [him, of them).

247. *Your* is also expressed by *su, sus,* when the address is carried on by *usted;* otherwise *vuestro, a,* which corresponds to *vos, vosotros, as.* Instead of *su, de usted* (*de V.*) alone may be used, or both *su* and *de V.*, constituting the favorite pleonastic construction: —

su libro, el libro de V., *or* su libro de V.,	your book (*to one person*).
su libro, el libro de VV., *or* su libro de VV.,	your book (*to several persons*).
sus libros, los libros de V., *or* sus libros de V.,	your books (*to one person*).
sus libros, los libros de VV., *or* sus libros de VV.,	your books (*to several persons*).
¿tenéis vuestros libros?	have you your books?

REMARK. — The conjunctive possessive adjective may be strengthened by adding to it the word **propio, a,** *own:* —

mi propio padre,	my own father.
mi propia casa,	my own home (house).
sus propios asuntos,	his own affairs.
tu propia fé te ha salvado,	thine own faith hath saved thee.

248. The absolute or uncontracted forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after an impersonal noun, accompanied by the definite article, and are preferred when greater intensity is required, as in

spirited language, in contrast, and for rhetorical effect: —

la fé tuya, el deseo mio,	thy faith, my desire.
los achaques suyos,	his (physical) infirmities.[1]
la edad nuestra,	our age, *or* our times.

REMARK. — Except in the vocative case, the absolute forms are not used of persons in common prose with the *definite* article. See § 250.

249. The absolute possessive adjectives of the first person are regularly employed in direct address (the vocative case), but without the definite article: —

amigo mio, amigos mios,	my friend, my friends.
padre nuestro, Dios mio,	Our Father, Heavens! (My God!)
hijo mio, muy señor mio,	my son, my dear sir (*in letters*).
muy señores nuestros,	gentlemen (our dear sirs).[2]

a. But if an ordinary adjective, or past participle used as an adjective, accompany the direct address, either the conjunctive or the absolute forms may be used: —

mi querido hijo, *or* querido hijo mio,	my dear son.[3]
mi inolvidable amigo,	my never-to-be-forgotten friend.
mis buenos señores,	my good sirs.
mi pobre muchacho, *or*	my unfortunate boy, *or*
pobre muchacho mio,	my poor fellow.

250. The definite article, with all absolute forms, is suppressed in certain phrases: —

---

[1] *Moral* infirmities would be *debilidades.*

[2] Used by one *firm* writing to another *firm* or *razon social.* We would say simply "gentlemen."

[3] The *father* would usually write to his son: *mi querido hijo;* the *mother*, *querido hijo mio,* which will serve as an example of the intensity of postposition.

de parte tuya,	on thy part, from thee.
á casa nuestra,	to our house.
á fé mia, suya,	on my *or* his word.
á instancias vuestras,	at your instance.
á costa suya,	at his *or* their expense.

251. The absolute forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after a personal or impersonal noun taken in an *indeterminate* sense (with *a, an, some,* expressed or implied). The adjective then assumes the idiomatic pronominal signification *of mine, of thine, of his,* etc. :—

un amigo mio, nuestro,	a friend of mine, of ours.
un pariente tuyo, vuestro,	a relative of thine, of yours.
unos conocidos de V., de VV.,	some acquaintances of yours.
unos criados suyos,	some servants of his (of theirs).
le daré á V. uno viejo mio,	I shall give you an old one of mine.
hablé con él de un asunto tuyo,	I spoke to him of a matter of yours.

REMARK. — We may also say, uno de mis amigos, *one of my friends*, etc.; but there is more definiteness in this style of phrase than in the other.

a. The same rule obtains when the noun is in the predicate after the verb *to be*, or its equivalent :—

es discípulo mio, suyo,	he is a pupil of mine, of his.
son paisanos nuestros,	they are from our province.

b. A substantive grouped with one or more possessive adjectives, and denoting possession, is put in the genitive :—

"es íntimo amigo mio, tuyo, y de toda nuestra casa,"	he is an intimate friend of mine, of yours, and of all our family.

252. The conjunctive possessive adjectives have the same pronominal signification as the absolute ones do

with indeterminate expressions, when the former stand between a demonstrative and a noun: —

este mi amigo,	this friend of mine.[1]
esa tu casa,	that house of thine.
aquel su jardin,	yon garden of his, of theirs.
estos nuestros amigos,	these friends of ours.

253. Instead of the possessive adjective, the dative of the personal pronoun, or of *usted*, must be used with the verb, and the definite article with the noun, when reference is made to parts of the body or articles of dress: —

le tomó la mano (á ella),	he took her hand (the h. to her).
beso á usted la mano,[2]	I kiss your hand (the h. to you).
me conmueve el alma,	it stirs my heart (to me the h.).
se hería el pecho,	he smote his (own) breast.
me duele la cabeza,	my head aches (the h. a. to me).
te pisa el vestido,	he steps on thy dress.
se quita los zapatos,	he takes off his (own) shoes.
les pone la ropa,	he puts on their clothes (to them).
me he cortado el dedo,	I have cut my finger.

a. If there can be no possible doubt as to the person referred to, the article will suffice without the dative: —

recibió un golpe en el brazo,	he received a blow in his arm.
ella levantó los ojos,	she raised her eyes.
bajó la cabeza y callóse,	he bowed his head and was silent.

254. Possessive pronouns are regularly accompanied by the definite article, both agreeing in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing: —

---

[1] In Biblical language, este tu hermano, *this thy brother;* aquellos tus acusadores, *those thine accusers;* but not in modern common English.

[2] The lady says this to the gentleman (adding caballero, *sir*), on a formal presentation, or when she or he leaves the room; his term is: á los piés de V., señora, *at your feet, lady*, on presentation or leave-taking.

su padre de V. y el mio,	your father and mine.
su casa y la tuya,	his house and thine.
mis amigos y los vuestros,	my friends and yours.
nuestros hermanos y los de V.,	our brothers and yours.
enjugáron nuestras lágrimas, las de mi hija y mias,	they wiped away my daughter's tears and mine.

255. The possessive pronouns are varied as follows:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
Masc.	**Fem.**	**Neut.**	**Masc.**	**Fem.**	
el mio,	la mia,	lo mio,	los mios,	las mias,	mine.
el tuyo,	la tuya,	lo tuyo,	los tuyos,	las tuyas,	thine.
el suyo,	la suya,	lo suyo,	los suyos,	las suyas,	his. hers. its.
el de V. *or* el suyo,	la de V. *or* la suya,	lo de V. *or* lo suyo,	los de V. *or* los suyos,	las de V. *or* las suyas,	yours.
el nuestro,	la nuestra,	lo nuestro,	los nuestros,	las nuestras,	ours.
el vuestro,	la vuestra,	lo vuestro,	los vuestros,	las vuestras,	yours.
el suyo,	la suya,	lo suyo,	los suyos,	las suyas,	theirs.
el de VV. *or* el suyo,	la de VV. *or* la suya,	lo de VV. *or* lo suyo,	los de VV. *or* los suyos,	las de VV. *or* las suyas,	yours.

256. Each one of these forms is inflected like any adjective with the definite article:—

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	Masc.	**Fem.**	**Neut.**	**Masc.**	**Fem.**	
N. A. P.	el mio,	la mia,	lo mio,	los mios,	las mias,	mine.
G.	del mio,	de la mia,	de lo mio,	de los mios,	de las mias,	of mine.
D.	al mio,	á la mia,	á lo mio,	á los mios,	á las mias,	to mine.

su libro es semejante al mio,	his book is similar to mine.
tus costumbres son distintas de las nuestras,	thy habits are different from ours.
mi heredad linda con la de usted,	my property joins yours.

257. The possessive pronoun loses the article when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*, and is used in a general sense: —

el triunfo es nuestro,	the triumph is ours.
esta casa es mia,	this house is mine.
este libro es suyo, *or* de él,	this book is his.
los premios son vuestros,	the prizes are yours.
tuya es la culpa,	thine is the fault.

REMARK. — But if the possessive in the predicate has a specific meaning, the article is regularly employed: —

este sombrero es el mio,	*this* hat is mine (*i.e.*, the one that belongs to me).
esta casa es la mia,	*this* house is mine.

a. In the predicate *suyo* may be replaced by the genitive of the personal pronoun when ambiguity requires it: —

este libro es de él, de ella,	this book is his, hers.
esta pluma es de usted,	this pen is yours.
los árboles son de ellos,	the trees are theirs.
estos papeles son mios y no de ustedes,	these papers are mine and not yours (*pl.*).

258. The possessive may be employed substantively; *lo* is always so used: —

los mios,	my people, my party (mine).
los nuestros,	our friends, our adherents (ours).
lo mio y lo suyo,	what is mine and his.
á lo suyo vino, y los suyos no le recibieron,	he came to his own (estate), and his own (people) received him not.

DEMONSTRATIVES.

259. The demonstratives are determinative adjectives with substantive and pronominal functions. They agree in gender and number with the noun they limit, except the neuter forms which are substantives by nature. They are inflected by the aid of the case prepositions, and varied as follows: —

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
Masc.	**Fem.**	**Neut.**		**Masc.**	**Fem.**	
este,	esta,	esto,	this (by me).	estos,	estas,	these (by me).
ese,	esa,	eso,	that (by you).	esos,	esas,	those (by you).
aquel,	aquella,	aquello,	that (yonder).	aquellos,	aquellas,	those (yonder).
el,	la,	lo,	that (of).	los,	las,	those (of).

260. To these may be added: **estotro, a,** — **estotros, as,** *this other, these other;* **esotro, a,** — **esotros, as,** *that other, those other;* **aquel otro, aquella otra,** etc., *that other, those other.* Likewise the archaic forms **aqueste, aquese,** for **este, ese,** *this, that.*

261. The demonstratives *este, ese,* and *aquel* naturally stand before the noun which they limit: —

este niño, esta casa,	this child, this house.
ese precio, aquel dia,	that price (you mention), that day.
estos libros, esas calles,	these books, those streets.

262. In lively or intensive language, the demonstratives *este, ese, aquel,* may follow a noun accompanied by the definite article: —

el hombre este, la casa esta,	this man (here), this house.
las mujeres esas, los dias aquellos,	those women, those days.

263. In general, *este* signifies that which is near the speaker, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *ese*, that which is near the person addressed, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *aquel*, that which is remote from both: —

este libro, esta pluma,	this book, this pen (near me).
ese libro, esa pluma,	that book, that pen (near you).
aquel libro, aquella pluma,	that book, that pen (yonder).
este pais, esta ciudad,	this country, city (where I am).
ese pais, esa ciudad,	that country, city (where you are).
aquel pais, aquella ciudad,	that country, city (distant from both).

REMARK. — Observe that *ese* means *that, where our correspondent is*, no matter how many thousand miles away; if we are in New York, and he in Valparaiso, we write to him of his town, and he to us of ours, as *esa ciudad*; while Montevidéo and Quebec would be *aquella ciudad* to both. To each, respectively, the United States and Chili would be *ese pais, that country* (*where you are*); while Canada or Buenos Ayres would be *aquel pais* to both.

a. In correspondence, the words **ciudad**, *city*, and **plaza**, *market*, are usually suppressed with *esta* and *esa* after the preposition **en**, *in;* **en esta** is therefore rendered *here*, and **en esa**, *there* or *with you:* —

en esta no hay novedad,	there is nothing new here.
¿cómo van los negocios en esa?	how is business with you?

b. When speaking of the same place, city, etc., relative distances therein are expressed by *este, ese*, and *aquel:* —

esta calle, este barrio,	this street, this district (where we are).
esa calle, ese barrio,	that street (where you live, *or* of which you speak).
aquellas calles, aquellos barrios,	those (remote) streets.

264. With reference to time historically considered, *este* denotes the present day, or the time of which we are speaking represented as present; *ese*, a period or circumstance occurring within our personal memory; *aquel*, any period or circumstance occurring previous to our day: —

esta época,	these days (this epoch).
ese suceso,	that event (which I remember).
aquellos sucesos,	those events (before my time).

This law is seldom violated by correct writers.

a. Within the limit of personal experience, relative distances or events are expressed the same way: —

esta semana, este año,	this week, this year.
ese suceso, ese año,	that event, that year (spoken of).
aquel dia, aquel año,	that day, that year (long ago).

265. *Ese* has often the contemptuous sense of the Latin *iste*: —

los pillos esos,	those rascals.
esos esplotadores,	those (political) harpies.
esas tias, *or* las tias esas,	those women (in contempt).[1]

REMARK. — *Ese* is also found with many popular idioms associated with de Dios, *of God*, in the sense of "blessed"; as, por esos trigos, campos, barrios "de Dios," *in those blessed fields, districts*, etc., to indicate vaguely, wittily, or satirically indefinite location: —

"véngase un par de horas por esas calles de Dios, y verá cómo todos piensan de ese modo" (*Escenas Matritenses*),	come along for an hour or two and take a stroll about the streets, and you'll see if everybody is of your way of thinking.

[1] Literally, "aunts"; popularly used of the supposed grasping *nobility*, as well as of lewd women.

El Carnaval es una licencia para que toda persona decente pueda correr como un loco *por esas calles de Dios*, con un rabo más largo que el de Luzbel, y un pedazo de carton en la cara, haciendo el oso delante de todo el mundo.	Carnival is a general privilege permitted to any respectable person to run madly about *the blessed streets* with a tail longer than Lucifer's, and a piece of pasteboard attached to his face, playing his pranks before everybody.

266. The neuter forms *esto, eso, aquello,* mean *this thing, that thing;* thus: **esto**, *what I say;* **eso**, *what you say;* **aquello**, *that* (remote thing), in narration: —

esto es cuanto tengo que decir,	this is all I have to say.
eso no es nada,	that is nothing.
eso es ya otra cosa,	that makes a difference.
eso es; eso sí,	that's a fact; that indeed.
aquello fué una lástima,	that was a pity (to see).

267. The definite article is used as a demonstrative pronoun, assuming the gender and number of the noun it replaces: —

mi libro y el de mi hermano,	my book and that of my brother.
estos libros y los de mi hermano,	these books and my brother's.
su casa y la de su padre,	his house and that of his father.
sus casas y las de su padre,	his houses and those of his father.
los relojes de oro y los de plata,	the gold and silver watches.

REMARK. — The genitive after the demonstrative pronoun may often be embraced in the English possessive case: My book and my brother's, his house and his father's, etc.

a. Lo, aquello, and *la, las,* are used elliptically in certain phrases: —

lo de Castro,	the (affair) of Castro.
lo de ayer,	the affair of yesterday.
aquello del filósofo griego,	that (thought) of the Greek philosopher.

á la de Dios es Cristo,[1]	like a good fellow.
tomar las de Villadiego,	to take French leave.

268. As substantives, *éste* refers to the last mentioned of two persons or things, and *aquél* to the first: —

éste, *this*, ésta, *this*, éstos, *these*, éstas, *these*, } the latter.	aquél, *that*, aquélla, *that*, aquéllos, *those*, aquéllas, *those*, } the former.
divididos estaban caballeros y escuderos, **éstos** contándose sus vidas, y **aquéllos** sus amores,	parted sat knights and esquires; the latter reviewing their lives, and the former their gallantries.

Observe that the order in Spanish is regularly the reverse of the English, although Mesonero Romanos writes: —

Sacrificando aquéllas, y poniendo éstas sobre las niñas de mis ojos,	reluctantly parting with the former, and warmly cherishing the latter.

---

[1] *A la* or *á lo de Dios es Cristo*, seems to derive from, *after the* (fashion) *of* [him whose] *God is Christ*, and to suggest a reference by the Moors and Jews to the dominant Christian Spaniard, by whom it was handed down in the lower signification of a "gay fellow," — in Spanish, a *valenton*. In the *Lazarillo de Tórmes* (1552) we find: puesto á lo de Dios es Cristo, *dressed up like a dandy;* and in the *Guzman de Alfarache*, gente de lo de Dios es Cristo, *boon companions*. Phrases like these and such as *tomar las de Villadiego*, *averigüelo Vargas*, etc., come from local circumstances soon forgotten, while the term remained. Tomar las *calças* de Villadiego, *to catch up Villadiego's small clothes*, redolent of some whilom scandal from which Villadiego escaped without stopping to arrange his toilet, is first given in the *Celestina* (1499–1500), then in Blasco de Garay (1545), in Perez del Castillo (1560), in Cipriano de Valera (1588), in Percivale's *Spanish-English Dictionary* (London, 1592), in that of Minsheu (1599), in Cervántes (1605), Covarrubias (1611), Quevedo (1627), and the Spanish Academy's *Dictionary* (1729), with the ellipse *calzas* supplied. After that date, the "breeches" disappear, and few Spaniards to-day understand the original reference. *Averigüelo Vargas* means, literally, *let Vargas ferret it out*, or, more generally, *find it out if you can*, — a variation of Horace's *credat Iudaeus Apella*.

269. *Este*, *ese*, and *aquel* are also used as substantives, in the signification of *this*, *this one*, *he*; *that*, *that one*, *he*, preserving their gender variation as adjectives, and assuming the graphic accent:—

este no es mi libro.	this is not my book.
¿es este el tuyo?	is this one thine?
aquel que está sobre el armario es mio,	that one which is on the wardrobe is mine.
entónces dijo éste,	then said he.
¿qué es lo que hace aquél?	what is that (fellow) doing?

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

270. The relative pronouns are:—

quien, quienes, *who*; **que** (invariable), *who*, *which*, *that*.
el cual, la cual; los cuales, las cuales, } *who*, *which*.
el que, la que; los que, las que, }
lo cual, *which* (thing); **lo que,** *that which*, *what*.
cuyo, cuya; cuyos, cuyas, *whose*, *of which*, *which*.

aquel que, or **el que,** *he who*, } *the one who*, *the one which*
aquella que, or **la que,** *she who*, } or *that*.
aquellos que, or **los que,** } *those who*, or *those which*, *the ones*
aquellas que, or **las que,** } *who* or *which*.
quien, *he who*, *the one who*; **quienes,** *those who*, *the ones who*.
aquello que, *that* (thing, saying or matter) *which*.

Quien.

271. **Quien** is now properly used of *persons* only. Its nominative is *que*, when the antecedent is a *word* of either gender or number, and *quien*, *el cual*, or *que* when it connects a compound sentence of which each member makes complete sense by itself:—

el hombre **que**, la mujer **que**,	the man who, the woman who.
ayer topé con un amigo, **quien** (**el cual** *or* **que**) me contó todo lo sucedido,	yesterday I fell in with a friend, who gave me an account of all that has happened.
el duelo nos vino de los pueblos del Norte, **quienes** (**los cuales**) decidían sus pleitos por las armas,	duelling came to us from the Northern peoples, who were accustomed to decide their differences by arms.

REMARK. — Although we cannot use *quien* when the antecedent is a mere term without independence, yet we may say, for example, hombre es **quien** viene, *it is a man who comes;* mujeres son **quienes** salen, *they are women who are going out;* when the antecedent is used indefinitely and stands in the predicate with the verb *to be.*

272. In the oblique cases, *quien* was formerly employed for both numbers, and applied to things as well as persons, echoing its Latin origin (*quem*); but at present such use must be regarded as archaic: —

¡siglos dichosos aquellos **á quien** los antiguos pusieron nombre de dorados!	happy ages those to which the ancients applied the epithet golden!
los Siete Sabios **á quien** tanto veneraba la Grecia.	the Seven Wise Men whom Greece so much venerated.

REMARK. — *Quien* may, however, be used with proper names of cities, and applied to corporations and other collective terms denoting persons; such as, *pueblos*, *naciones*, *Academia*, *consejo*, etc.

273. The accusative of *quien* is either **á quien** or **que** (not **á que**), *whom.*[1]

---

[1] Hence the sentence, *este es el hombre* **á que** *V. debe la vida*, is *incorrect.* See Monsanto and Languellier's *Spanish Grammar*, p. 133. We could say: *esta es la* circunstancia **á que** *V. debe la vida;* not *el* hombre *á que.*

274. The inflection of *quien* is as follows: —

	Singular.	Plural.	
N.	que (quien),	que (quienes),	who.
G.	de quien,	de quienes,	of whom.
D.	á quien,	á quienes,	to whom.
A.	á quien, *or* que,	á quienes, *or* que,	whom.
P.	con quien,[1]	con quienes,[1]	with whom.

el hombre **que** escribe,	the man who writes.
las muchachas **que** cosen,	the girls who sew.
el amigo **de quien** hablamos,	the friend of whom we speak.
las personas **á quienes** acudo,	the persons to whom I apply.
el vecino **que** (*or* **á quien**) busco,	the neighbor whom I seek.
las señoras **que** (**á quienes**) visito,	the ladies whom I visit.
los oficiales **con quienes** comí,	the officers with whom I dined.

Que.

275. **Que** relates to persons or things in the nominative or accusative cases only; in the other cases its use is limited to things. Being invariable in number and gender, its inflection is indicated by prepositions, as follows: —

	Singular.	Plural.	
N.	que,	que,	who, which, that.
G.	de que,	de que,	of which.
D.	á que,	á que,	to which.
A.	que,	que,	whom, which, that.
P.	con que,	con que,	with which.

[1] Any preposition may, of course, supplant *con* in the prepositional case; as, **por** quien, *by whom;* **para** quien, *for whom*, etc.

el libro **que** está encima de la mesa,	the book which (that) is on the table.
las plumas **que** no hacen señal,	the pens which do not make a [mark.
la huelga **de que** se habla,	the strike of which they speak.
el gobierno **á que** estamos sujetos,	the government to which we are subject.
los estudios **á que** me aplico,	the branches to which I apply [myself.
las manzanas **que** V. me dió,	the apples which you gave me.
la facilidad **con que** se hace,	the ease with which it is done.
la casa **en que** vivo,	the house in which I live.

REMARK. — In Spanish, the preposition must always stand before the word it governs. Hence the vulgar English constructions, *the strike they speak of*, *the government we are subject to*, *the house I live in*, must first be restored to the literary form before rendering into Spanish.

276. The accusative case of the relatives *quien* and *que* must never be omitted in Spanish: —

la persona **que** ví,	the person (whom) I saw.
las casas **que** compré,	the houses (which) I bought.

REMARK. — The conjunction **que**, *that*, must not be confounded with the relative pronoun. The former is frequently left out in Spanish after certain verbs, although the Academy very properly censures the omission: —

te ruego encarecidamente (que) no te marches hasta que yo vuelva,	I earnestly request you not to go away until I come back.
supliquemos al eterno Padre (que) quiera reconocer las palabras que le decimos (*Granada*),	let us implore the Eternal Father to be pleased to acknowledge the words that we address to him.

Literally: I request *that* you may not go, etc.; let us implore *that* the Father may be pleased, etc.

El cual, el que.

277. **El cual** and **el que** are the substitutes of *quien* and *que*, and therefore relate to persons or things. They are, in general, preferred when an inflected relative is desirable to avoid *ambiguity*, or the unpleasant recurrence of the word *que*, as *connectives* between compound sentences, and especially after short prepositions when the antecedent substantive is accompanied by the *indefinite* article, or is used *partitively*: —

los Moros se dejaron maniatar de los Cristianos, **los cuales** con mucha presteza lo hicieron,	the Moors suffered their hands to be tied by the Christians, who were not slow to do it.
llamó á un mozo de cordel,[1] **al que** le entregó una carta,	he summoned a messenger, to whom he delivered a letter.
seguimos al ama del canónigo, **el cual** vivia en un cuarto bajo,	we followed the housekeeper of the canon, who lived on the ground floor.
se dedicó al cuidado de su hija, en **la cual** veia el retrato de su mujer,	he devoted himself to the care of his daughter, in whom he beheld the image of his wife.
una real órden en **la cual** se decía que,	a royal order in which it was said that, *etc.*
un incidente con **el que** no se había contado,	an incident on which he had not counted.
hay injurias de **las que** no se debe hacer caso,	there are wrongs of which no notice should be taken.

278. The inflection of *el cual* is as follows (that of *el que* varies the article in the same manner, but *que* does not change): —

---

[1] A *mozo de cordel* is a public "porter," who carries a coil of rope (*cordel*) on his shoulder, and serves to transport heavy burdens, or to run of errands. Lately "errand-boys" have been introduced into Madrid, called *mandaderos*.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
N.	el cual,	la cual,	los cuales,	las cuales.	who, which.
G.	del cual,	de la cual,	de los cuales,	de las cuales,	of whom, of which.
D.	al cual,	á la cual,	á los cuales,	á las cuales,	to whom, to which.
P.A.	al cual,	á la cual,	á los cuales,	á las cuales,	whom (persons).
I.A.	el cual,	la cual,	los cuales,	las cuales,	which (things).
P.	con el cual,	con la cual,	con los cuales,	con las cuales,	with whom, with which.

279. The substitutes must be used when the relative is governed by compound prepositions, or such as are not monosyllables: —

un médico **ante el que** huyen las dolencias,	a physician before whom aches and pains disappear.
un velador **encima del cual** hay un juego de café,	a stand on which there is a coffee set.
las noticias **segun las cuales** quiso obrar,	the information according to which he saw fit to act.
la torre **desde la cual** se domina la vega entera,	the tower from which you can take in the whole plain.

280. The adverb **donde**, *where*, is frequently used as a relative: —

la calle por **donde** ha ido,	the street by which he went.

281. **Lo cual**, *which*, refers always to an idea, a thought, or a preceding sentence: —

le aconsejé que tomase un criado, **lo cual** no quiso hacer,	I advised him to engage a servant, which he would not do.
dicho lo cual, salió,	saying which, he went out.

282. **Lo que**, *that which, what,* **todo lo que**, *all that,* likewise relate to an idea, and not to a word :—

me dijo **lo que** había sucedido,	he told me what had passed.
V. me dará **lo que** le parece,	you may give me what you like.
á lo que veo, no consta,	by what I see, it is not proven.
todo lo que dice es verdad,	all that he says is the truth.

a. Lo que occasionally signifies *how, how much,* especially in exclamations :—

¡ si él supiera **lo que** yo los deseaba ! (*Cervántes.*)	if he only knew how much I longed for them !
¡ **lo que** debe V. saber !	how much you must know !

REMARK. — In popular language one often hears **lo que** employed in the sense of *as for*, probably an ellipse for *por lo que toca á* :—

lo que es este señor, no alcanzo comprenderle,	as for this gentleman, I do not succeed in understanding him.

283. **Cuanto** and **todo cuanto**, *as much, as many, quite as much — many,* often replace the relative expression **todos los que, todo lo que,** *all who, all which, all that,* the *que* being absorbed :—

A la más dulce De **cuantas** niñas Del feliz Túria La márgen pisan.	To the sweetest Of *all* the maidens *That* tread the borders Of the pleasant Turia.[1]
es el más divertido de **cuantos** libros he leido,	it is the most amusing of *all* the books *that* I ever read.
le ofreció **todo cuanto** poseía,	he offered him *all that* he possessed.
recibieron con gozo cuanto los Españoles les daban,	they joyfully received all that the Spaniards gave them.

[1] The *Turia* is the ancient Roman, and modern poetical, name of the river *Guadalaviar*, that flows through the city of Valencia.

284. Cuyo, a, *whose, of which, which,* relates to persons and things, and agrees in gender and number with the object possessed: —

el jóven **cuyo** padre conozco,	the youth whose father I know.
la hija **cuya** madre está enferma,	the daughter whose mother is ill.
un oficial **cuyos** méritos son imponderables,	an officer whose merits cannot be exaggerated.
por **cuya** causa,	for which cause.
la muerte, debajo de **cuyo** yugo hemos de pasar todos,	death, under whose yoke we must all pass.
en un lugar de La Mancha, de **cuyo** nombre no quiero acordarme,	in a village of La Mancha, the name of which I do not care to call to mind.
una música misteriosa, **cuyas** notas se perdían en el silencio,	mysterious music, whose strains died away in silence.

a. **A quien** is often employed in the signification of *cuyo*, on the same principle that requires the dative of the personal pronoun with a definite substantive to render the possessive adjective (§ 253), usually combined with the redundant construction: —

como indivíduo, **á quien** empiezan á faltarle las fuerzas, *or*, **cuyas** fuerzas empiezan á faltarle,	like an individual whose powers begin to fail him.
un hombre, **á quien su** empleo (*or*, **cuyo** empleo) apénas le daba para comer,	a man whose occupation scarcely yielded him a subsistence.

285. El que, with its variations **la que, los que, las que,** is used in the sense of *he who, she who, the one* or *one who; they who, those who, the ones who* (gen. **el de quien,** etc.), when it relates to *persons.* Relating to *things,* it signifies *the one which* or *that, those which* or *that, the ones which* or *that* (gen. **el de que,** etc.): —

el que habla,	he who speaks.
V. es **el que** me ofende,	you are the one who offends me.
el aturdimiento **del que** no se da cuenta de su mobilidad,	the stupefaction of one who cannot account for his movements.
los que salen son amigos mios,	those who are going out are friends of mine.
no es **la que** buscaba,	she is not the one I was looking for.
estos libros son **los que** más aprecio,	these books are the ones I prize most.
aquel de quien hablo,	he of whom I speak.
al que se va, se le olvida.	him who goes away they forget, *or*, out of sight, out of mind.

286. Each member of the relative may be inflected, — the antecedent like the definite article, and the relative proper like *quien* or *que*, according to whether persons or things are referred to. In the oblique cases, however, the antecedent *aquel* is more common than *el*, when reference is made to persons; otherwise, either is employed according to the demonstrative meaning: —

aquel de quien lo oí,	he from whom I heard it.
aquella á quien visito,	she whom I visit.
aquellos con quienes anda,	those with whom he goes.
echa de ménos aquella ruidosa alegría que llenaba la casa,	he misses that boisterous glee that used to pervade the house.

REMARK. — *El*, as the antecedent of *que*, is the definite article with a demonstrative application, and hence it can never assume the accent (*él*), which is the characteristic of the personal pronoun.

287. Instead of *el que* and *aquel que*, **quien** is employed in the same senses, including in itself both the antecedent and the relative: —

quien calla, otorga,	he who is silent, consents.
quien se hace de miel, se le comen las moscas,	he who makes himself honey, will be devoured by the flies.
él es quien lo dijo,	he is the one who said so.
á quien Dios quiere guardar ¿quien lo destruirá?	who can destroy him whom God wishes to preserve?
obró como quien es (es decir, conforme á su condicion ó carácter),	he acted like the one that he is (*i.e.*, like one of his station or character).
como quien se dirige á . . .	as you go towards . . .
como quien dice (como si se dijera),	as one who says (as if one should say).
lo que es el aire, no hay quien lo detenga,	as for the wind, there is none that can detain it.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

288. The interrogative pronouns are chiefly distinguishable from the relatives by the use of the graphic *accent*, applied alike in direct and indirect questions. They are:—

quién, pl. **quiénes**, *who?*	**qué** (invariable), *what?*
cúyo, a, pl. **cúyos, as**, **de quién**, pl. **de quiénes**, } *whose?*	**cuál**, pl. **cuáles**, *which? what?*

289. **Quién** is declined like any substantive:—

¿quién es? ¿quiénes son?	who is it? who are they?
¿de quién habla V.?	of whom do you speak?
¿á quién visitamos?	whom do we visit?
¿para quién lo hizo?	for whom did he do it?
¿con quiénes comen hoy?	with whom do they dine to-day?
díme con quién andas, y te diré quién eres,	tell me with whom you go, and I will tell you who you are.

290. *Whose*, used interrogatively, is expressed by **cúyo, a,** or by **de quién**:—

¿cúyo es este libro? cúyo libro es este? *or*, ¿de quién es este libro?	whose book is this?
¿cúyas (*or*, de quién, de quiénes) son las casas aquellas?	whose houses are those (262)?
¿de cúyos proyectos habláis?	of whose plans do you speak?
¿en beneficio de quién lo hace V.?	for whose benefit do you do it?

291. Qué, *what?* is used as a substantive and as an adjective in both numbers and genders: —

¿qué dice? ¿qué hora es?	what does he say? what time is it?
¿de qué habla V.?	of what are you speaking?
¿qué ruído es ese?	what noise is that?

a. **Qué** is also employed in exclamations to signify *what! what a!* and before an adjective alone, *how!* —

¡qué dia! ¡qué desgracia!	what a day! what a misfortune!
¡qué buena y hermosa es!	how good and beautiful she is!
¡á qué alturas ha subido!	to what heights has he risen!
¡con qué aplomo lo dice!	with what coolness he says it!

REMARK. — To add still greater emphasis, an adjective may be placed after the noun with *tan* or *más*: —

¡qué dia **tan** hermoso!	what a beautiful day!
¡qué libros **más** pesados!	what dull books!

292. Cuál, *which?* is used when one or more objects of a certain number are specifically or vaguely referred to, and it also replaces **qué,** *what?* when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*: —

¿cuál de los libros quiere V.?	which of the books do you want?
¿á cuál de mis amigos has visto hoy?	which of my friends have you seen to-day?
¿cuál es la fecha de la carta?	what is the date of the letter?
¿cuáles son los motivos?	what are the grounds?
ignoro cuáles sean,	I do not know what they are.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

293. **Ajeno, a** (Lat. *alienus*), *of others, another's, others', other people's*, is an adjective in Spanish; the neuter, **lo ajeno**, signifies *what belongs to another*, or *to others*: —

el dinero **ajeno**, la casa **ajena**,	another's money, house.
los bienes **ajenos**,	property of others.
no te metas en negocios **ajenos** ni en vidas **ajenas**,	do not meddle with other people's affairs or lives.
busca lo tuyo y no lo **ageno**,	seek thine own, and not another's.

a. **Ajeno** is also an adjective with the regimen *de*, and signifies *foreign to, disconnected with*: —

esto es **ajeno de** mi carácter,	this is foreign to my character.
ajeno de los negocios públicos,	disconnected with public affairs.
ajeno de la conversacion,	a stranger to the conversation.

294. **Ál** (Lat. *alius, aliud*), *another person, another thing*, is now obsolete, or is occasionally used to give an antique flavor to modern discourse; it is replaced by *otro, de otro modo*, etc.: —

so el sayal ay **ál** (*Proverbs*, 1556),	under the sackcloth there is another.
é los unos ni los otros non fagades nin fagan ende **ál** (*Law of* 1492),	and let none of you do or suffer aught else to be done (*inde aliud*).
en **ál** estuvo que en encantamentos (Cervántes, *Don Quijote*),	he was for something else than enchantments.

295. **Álguien** (Lat. *aliquem*), *somebody, some one, anybody, any one*, is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive (*de*): —

álguien ha estado aquí,	some one has been here.
¿ha venido **álguien**?	has any one come?
si pregunta por mí **álguien**, díle que no estoy,	if anybody asks for me, tell him that I am not in.

296. Alguno, a (Lat. *alĭc-unus*), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. As related to persons, it means *somebody, some one, anybody, any one; some, any, a few.* Unlike *álguien,* it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

alguno de VV. me tocó,	some one of you touched me.
esto lo hizo **alguno** de mis enemigos,	some one of my enemies did this.
algunos no lo creen, otros sí,	some do not credit it, others do.
hay **algunos** que no lo sienten,	there are some who do not regret it.
algun hombre (§ 123), **alguna** mujer,	some man, some woman.
algunos amigos, **algunas** señoras,	a few friends, a few ladies.

REMARK. — If it be said absolutely, "some one has touched me," *álguien* would be preferred; but if we mean some one of a specific number or group, *alguno* (fem. *alguna*) must be used. So, álguien toca á la puerta, *some one knocks at the door;* vaya á ver si es alguno de los que esperamos, *go and see if it is some one of those we are expecting;* ¿Ha llegado álguien? *has anybody come?* ¿Ha llegado alguno? *has any one come (that we looked for)?*

297. Alguno, as related to things, signifies *some, any, a few:*—

algun dia, **alguna** época,	some day, some period.
algunos siglos, **algunas** veces,	some centuries, sometimes.
¿tiene V. **algun** remedio?	have you any help (for it)?
posee **algunas** fincas,	he owns some real estate.
de estos libros, **algunos** no valen un ardite,	of these books, some are not worth a farthing.
algunas de estas pizarras no sirven ya,	some of these slates will not answer any longer.

REMARK. — "Some," in a vague sense, as *some or other*, *one or another*, is translated by the idiomatic adjective expression, **alguno que otro** (*fem.* **alguna que otra**):—

él estaba al puesto hojeando **alguno que otro** libro,	he stood at the stall turning over the pages of some book.

298. "Some" or "any," in partitive questions, are not generally expressed in Spanish, but their answers are given by an objective personal pronoun (*le*, *lo*, *los*, *las*), or by *alguno* with an adjective. **Algunos** and **unos cuantos** very exactly render the English *some* in the emphatic sense of *a few*:—

¿tiene V. vino de Valdepeñas?	have you any Valdepeñas wine?
le tengo y de primera clase,	I have some, and first-class.
¿quién vende libros viejos?	who sells old books?
los hay en aquella tienda,	there are some in yonder shop.
yo poseo **unos cuantos** raros en casa,	I have a few rare ones at home.

299. **Algo** (Lat. *alicum* for *aliquod*) and **alguna cosa**, *something*, *anything*, are used interchangeably; the former, however, is invariable and absolute:—

halló { **algo** / **alguna cosa** } en el camino,	he found something in the road.
¿tiene V. { **algo bueno?** / **alguna cosa** buena? }	have you anything good?
hay **algo** malicioso en él,	there is something malicious in him.

a. **Algo** is often employed as an adverb in the signification of *somewhat*, *rather*:—

estoy **algo** malucho,	I am somewhat ailing.
ella está **algo** interesada,	she is rather selfish.
esta carne es **algo** cara,	this meat is somewhat dear.

REMARK. — This "somewhat" is very often expressed by a diminutive termination, as *illo*, applied to the adjective; and when the remark is delicate, by *ico*, with or without *algo*: —

la carne es **carilla**,	the meat is rather dear.
ella es algo **bonitica**,	she is somewhat pretty.

300. **Ambos, as,** *both*, is used either as a substantive or an adjective, and of persons or things. It may be replaced by *los dos* (fem. *las dos*): —

venían **ambos** á caballo,	both came on horseback.
tengo **ambas** manos heladas,	both of my hands are frozen.

We could say with equal propriety: *venian* **los dos á caballo**, *tengo* **las dos** *manos heladas*.

a. Instead of *ambos, as,* **entrambos, as,** is met with in the same sense, although originally signifying *between two* (entre ambos). An idiomatic variation is also **ambos á dos, entrambos á dos,** *between the two;* as, le mataron **ambos á dos,** *they both slew him*, i.e., *between them both.*

b. "Both," in the sense of *each*, is rendered by **uno y otro**, plur. **unos y otros**: —

personas de **uno y otro** sexo,	persons of both sexes.
estudió hombres y cosas, escribiendo despues sobre **unos y otras**,	he studied men and things, subsequently writing on each (or both).

301. **Cada** (Gr. κατά), *each, every,* is an invariable adjective employed only in the singular, and always stands before the substantive: —

cada hombre; **cada** mujer,	each man; each woman.
cada año; **cada** semana,	every year; every week.
cada dia tiene su afan,	each day has its cares.
á **cada** paso; por **cada** tomo,	at every step; for each volume.

a. *Cada* may stand with a plural substantive only when the latter is preceded by a numeral:—

cada dos dias,	every two days.
cada tres años,	every three years.
cada mil soldados,	every thousand soldiers.

302. When *cada* is employed substantively or distributively, it associates itself with *uno* (fem. *una*) or *cual*, forming **cada uno, cada cual:**—

cada uno tiene sus quehacéres,	each has his occupations. [him.
cada cual lleva lo suyo,	every one takes what belongs to
cada uno de los jueces,	each (one) of the judges.
cada una de las damas,	each (one) of the ladies.
cada uno segun sus obras,	every one according to his deeds.

303. *Every* may also be expressed by **todos los** (fem. **todas las**), agreeing with a plural noun including a period of time:—

todos los años, dias,	every year, every day.
todas las semanas, veces,	every week, every time.

304. **Cierto, a,** *a certain* —, is an adjective which is always followed by a noun without the indefinite article:—

cierto hombre; **cierta** señora,	*a* certain man; *a* certain lady.
ciertos libros; **ciertas** cosas,	certain books; certain things.
bajo **ciertas** condiciones,	on certain conditions.

REMARK.—If by *certain*, we wish to indicate authenticity, the above adjective ceases to be indefinite and always stands *after* the noun, or in the predicate alone:—

noticias **ciertas**,	sure, authentic news.
la noticia es **cierta**,	the intelligence is true.
no es **cierto** lo que V. dice,	what you say is not so.

305. Cosa, *a thing* (fem.), is often used in the signification of *something, anything;* and with a negative, *nothing:* —

es **cosa** muy de ver,	it is something well worth seeing.
¿hay **cosa** más chocante?	is there anything more extraordinary?
caminaron sin que les aconteciese **cosa** que de contar fuese,	they journeyed on without anything occurring to them worthy of note.
no vale **cosa**,	that is not worth anything.
no es **cosa** (que valga),	that is nothing (important).
no quiero otra **cosa**,	I do not want anything else, *or* I care for nothing else.

306. Fulano (*fem.* **fulana**) (Span.-Arab. *fulân*), means *so and so, such a one,* or it expresses an evasion not easily rendered. It is used only of persons in the singular, to indicate any one whose name we do not know, or recall, or care to give. When used *alone,* it commonly assumes the form of **fulano de tal**[1]; if *two* different persons are referred to in the same vague manner, **fulano** and **mengano** are associated; and, if *three,* **fulano, mengano y zutano** represent the "Tom, Dick, and Harry," of vulgar English[2]: —

¿quién será **fulano**?	who can so and so be?
¿quién lo dijo? ¿qué sé yo? **Fulano de tal.**	who said so? I don't know; such a one.
ayer me escribió **fulano de tal**,	yesterday so and so wrote me.

[1] "So and so of such a name," *fulano* representing the Christian name (*nombre*), and *tal* the surname (*apellido*); as, for example, *Juan de Valdés.*

[2] *Mengano* and *zutano* are undoubtedly alliterative merely, made up of invented stems with the common ending *ano. Zutano* is explained unsatisfactorily by Dietz and Mahn, each in his own way. Neither mentions *mengano,* which, in turn, may be connected with the obsolete *Mengo* or *Mingo,* familiar for Domingo, *Dominic,* or plain "Dick," although I incline to think them alliterations, corresponding in principle to *riff-raff, pell-mell,* etc.

no les va en ello más que el gusto de que los mande **fulano** ó **mengano**,	they have no other interest in it than the pleasure of being ordered about by this one and that.
no conozco ni **fulano**, ni **mengano**, ni **zutano**,	I know neither this one, that one, nor the other.

307. **Mismo, a** (archaic, *mesmo, a,* still used in rural districts; low Lat. *metipsimus;* Ital. *medesimo;* old Fr. *mesme*), is an adjective with occasional substantive functions. The neuter is **lo mismo,** *the same* (*thing*).

308. When **mismo** stands before a noun, it has the meaning of *the same,* if coupled with the definite article; of *same* and *very,* with the demonstrative adjective; of *very,* with a possesive adjective; and *the same* (*one and the same*), with the indefinite article or its plural *unos, unas:* —

el mismo dia; **la misma** noche,	the same day; the same night.
los mismos pensamientos,	the same thoughts.
este mismo caso,	this same (*or* this very) circumstance.
esas mismas casas,	those same houses.
mis mismos amigos, enemigos,	my very friends, enemies.
una misma suerte, patria,	the same fate, country.
unos mismos padres (§ 106),	the same father and mother.
viene á ser **lo mismo**,	it amounts to the same (thing).

a. Before or after the noun, **mismo** with the definite article means also *very* or *self:* —

el **mismo** dia; el dia **mismo**,	the very day; the day itself.
las **mismas** mujeres,	the very women; the women themselves.

See also §§ 239–242.

309. **Nada** (Lat. res *nata,* with a negative, *not a living thing*), *nothing* or *not anything,* stands before

the verb without a negative, or after the verb with **no**, *not*. Hence, in the latter case, and generally in Spanish, two negatives strengthen the negation: —

nada tengo, *or* **no** tengo **nada**,	I have nothing — not anything.
nada veo, *or* **no** veo **nada**,	I see nothing — I do not see a.
nada vale, *or* **no** vale **nada**,	it is worth nothing — not worth a.
nada me dijo, *or* **no** me dijo **nada**,	he told me nothing — did not tell me anything.

310. Although etymologically feminine, *nada* is always associated with the absolute form of an adjective, and in that case regularly follows the negative verb: —

no hizo nada **bueno** ni **malo**,	he did nothing good or bad.
no exijo nada **gravoso**,	I require nothing onerous.

311. Instead of *nada*, the forms *ninguna cosa* or *cosa alguna* are constantly met with in the same signification. The former may stand before the verb, or after it with the additional negation, while the latter can only follow a negative verb; with an adjective only the first form, *ninguna cosa*, can be used, the adjective agreeing with the feminine *cosa*: —

ninguna cosa tengo, **no** tengo **ninguna cosa**, *or* **no** tengo **cosa alguna**,	I have nothing, *or* I have not anything.
no tengo ninguna cosa **buena**, *or* no tengo **nada bueno**; *but not* no tengo cosa **alguna** buena,	I have nothing good.

312. **Nada**, **ninguna cosa**, or **cosa alguna**, may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anything* or *aught*: —

a. In exclamatory or interrogative sentences that involve a negative answer: —

¡cómo negarle á él **nada**!	how can one refuse *him* anything!
¿quién habrá visto ni oido **nada** que iguale á ello?	who can have seen or heard anything to equal that?

b. After verbs that contain in themselves a negative idea: —

guárdese V. de decirle **nada**, i.e., *see that you do not* tell him anything.	beware how you tell him anything;

c. After the prepositions **sin**, *without;* **ántes de**, *before;* the conjunctions **sin que**, *without* (that); **ántes que**, *before* (that): —

sin preguntarle **nada**,	without asking him anything.
ántes de decirles **nada**,	before telling them anything.
sin que me dijese **nada**,	without his telling me anything.
ántes que contestase **nada**,[1]	before I answered anything.

d. After comparatives and superlatives: —

mejor que **nada** de todo cuanto le he oido,	better than anything that I ever heard him say.

313. **Nada** is often used elliptically as an exclamation designed to cut off farther remark or discussion, and may be variously rendered by *say no more, never mind, well, there:* —

nada, nada, voy á verle en seguida (*for* no digas más),	say no more; I'll go and see him at once.
pues **nada**, *or* con que, } hasta la vista,	well; until we meet again.

[1] If *nunca* stands after the verb with *nada*, the verb is negative: no vale nunca nada, *he never amounts to anything;* nunca vale nada, *he is never worth anything.*

314. **Nada** may be followed by **de**, with substantives, to signify *nothing of, no:* —

que **nada de** esto transluzca,	let nothing of this leak out.
él no tiene **nada de** juego ni licores (no tiene vicios),	he has no (propensity to) gaming or strong drink (no bad habits).

315. **No — nada**, also means *not — at all:* —

no importa **nada**,	that does not matter at all.
no me gusta **nada**,	I don't like that at all (*literally*, it does not please me at all).

a. **Nada** is likewise employed without other negatives, in the same sense of *not at all, in no respect:* —

yo **nada** temo la muerte,	I do not at all fear death.
él es **nada** perezoso,	he is not at all indolent.

316. **Nadie,**[1] *no one, nobody*, is the negative of *álguien*, and is subject to the same limitations (§ 295); that is, it is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive. Like *nada*, it requires another negative only when it comes after the verb: —

nadie pase, *or* **no** pase **nadie**,	let no one pass (*or* go in).
nadie ha venido todavía, *or* **no** ha venido **nadie** todavía,	nobody has come yet.
á **nadie** veo, *or* **no** veo á **nadie**,	I do not see any one.
nadie vió jamás á Dios,	no man hath seen God at any time.
¿quién ha llamado? — **nadie**,	who called (*or* knocked)? — No one.
no he visto á **nadie**,	I have not seen anybody.

[1] *Nadie* (ancient, *nadi*) is from the Latin *natus* — with a negative, *not a living soul;* the form *nadie* seems to be an assimilation of *nadi* to the ending *e* in *este*, *ese*. In the sixteenth century, it is often replaced by the formula *no — hombre* = *no — nadie:* El **no** maravillarse **hombre** de nada, *for a man to wonder at nothing*. See my edition of the *Works of Mendoza*, Madrid, 1877, p. 106.

317. **Nadie** may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anybody*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* (§ 312, *a–d*):—

¿quién habrá visto **nadie** que sea más comedido?	who can have seen anybody more civil.
¿cómo negaré **nada** á nadie?	how can I refuse any one anything?
guárdese V. de descubrir el secreto á **nadie**,	beware how you disclose the secret to anybody.
sin ser oido de **nadie**,	without being heard by any one.
salió **sin que nadie** le viese,	he went out without anybody's seeing him.
nunca quiso escuchar á **nadie**, *or*, **no** quiso escuchar **nunca** á **nadie**,	he never would listen to any one.
una de **las más nuevas** historias que **nadie** pudo pensar,	one of the strangest pieces of fiction that any one could conceive.

318. **Ninguno,**[1] **a,** *nobody, no one, none, no,* the negative of *alguno* (§ 296), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. Unlike *nadie*, it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

¿cuál de ellos salió?—**Ninguno,**	which one of them went out?—No one.
ninguno de los enemigos,	none (not one) of the enemies.
ninguna de las casas,	none (not one) of the houses.
ningun enemigo (§ 123),	no enemy.
ninguna casa,	no house.
ninguno consintió en ello,	nobody agreed to it.
no se fíe V. en **nadie**,	do not put confidence in anybody.

[1] *Ninguno* is from the Latin *nec-unus* for *nullus*, with the intercalation of an *n* (*nencunus*) after the analogy of *renglon* for *reglon* (augmentative of *regla* [*regŭla*]) and of *cementerio* for *cemeterio*.

no se fíe V. en **ninguno** (de ellos),	do not put confidence in any (of them).
¿tiene V. libros?—**no** tengo **ninguno**,	have you any books?—I have none.

319. Like *nada* and *nadie*, **ninguno** requires an additional negative when it stands after the verb:—

no quiere á **ninguno** de los dos,	he likes neither of the two.
no consta en **ninguna** ley,	it does not appear by any law.
no tengo **ningun** libro; **ninguna** casa,	I have no book; no house.
nunca quiso aceptar **ningun** regalo,	he never would accept any present.

320. **Ninguno** is translated by *any one, any*, when it stands after a verb without *no*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* and *nadie* (§§ 312, 317):—

sin que ninguno de ellos me lo diga,	without any of them telling me so.
admiráronse todos, y **más** los duques que **ninguno** (§ 106),	all were astonished, and the duke and duchess more than any one.

321. After a negative verb, *alguno, a*, is more elegantly employed than *ninguno*, especially after *sin;* but it must be associated with a substantive expressed, and always stand after it:—

no siente remordimiento **alguno**,	he feels no compunction.
sin trabajo ni fatiga **alguna**,	without any toil or fatigue.
sin duda **alguna**,	without any doubt.

a. If the noun be understood, *ninguno* alone can be used:—

estaba colgado de sus palabras **sin** hablar **ninguna**,	he hung on his words without uttering (himself) any.

322. The English *no, not any,* as an adjective, when it is unemphatic, may be simply expressed by a verb made negative by **no,** followed by a noun without article: —

no tengo tiempo,	I have no time.
no tiene casa,	he has no house.
no tenemos libros,	we have no books.
no tienen amigos,	they have no friends.
no hay necesidad de ello,	there is no necessity for it.
no hay contestacion,	"no answer" (to a message).

a. To make this construction emphatic, we have only to put *ninguno, a,* before the noun, or better, *alguno, a,* after it: —

no tengo tiempo **alguno,**	I have no time at all.
no hay **ninguna** contestacion, *or* **no** hay contestacion **alguna,**	there is no answer whatever.

323. **Otro, a** (Lat. *altĕr, alt'ro*), *another, other* (pl. *others*), is used both as an adjective and a substantive, embracing persons or things. It does not admit the indefinite article as in English (*an-other*), but requires the definite article when a distinct person or thing is to be specified: —

otro indivíduo; **el otro** i.,	another individual; the other i.
otra persona; **la otra** persona,	another person; the other p.
otro dia; **el otro** dia,	another day; the other day.
otra noche; **la otra** noche,	another night; the other night.
otros dicen; **los otros** creen,	others say; the others believe.
otras piensan de distinto modo,	others (*fem.*) think differently.
venga **otro**; trae **el otro,**	bring on another; bring the o.
dáme **otra**; dáme **la otra,**	give me another; give me the o.
tengo **otros**; tengo **los otros,**	I have others; I have the others.
busco **otras,**	I look for others.
no quiero **las otras,**	I don't want the others.

324. *The other part, the others,* when they mean *the rest,* are expressed respectively by **lo demás** and **los** or **las demás**:—

lo demás me importa poco,	I care little for the other part.
no he visto á **los demás**,	I have not seen the others.
en cuanto á **las demás** me callo,	as for the rest, I say nothing.

REMARK.—**Al otro dia** means *on the next day.* The genitive of possession is expressed by *ajeno* (§ 293); as, los bienes **ajenos**, *not* los bienes **de otros**, *other people's property* or *goods.*

325. **Propio, a** (formerly *proprio*), *self, own,* may stand after the personal pronouns like *mismo,* and after the possessive adjectives and pronouns to strengthen their meaning:—

tú **propio** *or* **propia**,	thou thyself.
tu **propio** amigo,	thy own friend.
por sí **propios**,	of themselves.
este dinero es suyo **propio**,	this money is his own.

REMARK.—**Propio de** signifies *adapted to, suitable for*:—

un juego **propio de** niños,	a game suitable for children.

326. **Quiera**, *you wish, you please,* subjunctive of the verb *querer,* is joined to or associated with pronouns, to form various indefinite expressions.

327. **Quienquiera**, *whoever, any one whatever,* relates only to persons, and in an absolute sense:—

quienquiera que sea,	whoever (that) it be.
eso lo diría á **quienquiera**,	I would affirm that to any one.
sería antipático, no tan solo en él, sino en **quienquiera** que **sea**,	that would be repulsive, not only in him, but in anybody whatever.

a. **Quien** alone, followed by a verb in the indicative or subjunctive, often admits the signification of *any one who*, especially in the oblique cases: —

lo digo á **quien quiera** aceptar la apuesta,	I say it to any one who may care to accept the wager.

328. **Cualquiera**, pl. **cualesquiera**, *any* (*whatever*), *any* (*you please*), is both an adjective and a substantive, relating to persons or things: —

a. As an adjective, it may precede or follow the noun; but in the latter case, only in the singular: —

cualquier dia (§ 123) — noche,	any day; any night.
cualesquier motivos — personas,	any reasons; any persons.
un libro — una pluma **cualquiera**,	any book; any pen.

b. Followed by *de*, **cualquiera** signifies likewise *any*, and of two, *either*: —

cualquiera de los bultos,	any of the packages.
cualquiera de los dos,	either of the two.

REMARK. — **Un cualquiera** means "a nobody," a person of no account, or of no pedigree.

329. **Cualquiera**, followed by **que** and a verb in the subjunctive, means *whichever*, *whatever*: —

cualquier cosa **que** V. diga,	whatever you say.
cualquier motivo **que** se presente,	whatever motive be alleged, *or* assigned.
cualesquiera cosas **que** compren,	whatever things they buy.
cualquiera que V. guste,	whichever you like.

330. *Whatever* may also be expressed by **sea el que, la que**, pl. **sean los que, las que**, with a noun and a verb in the subjunctive: —

sea el que quiera el motivo **que** se presente,	whatever reason be assigned.
sea el que quiera el trabajo **que** nos cueste vivir,	whatever be the trouble that living costs us.

331. *Whatever*, as a neuter substantive, is rendered by **todo lo que** and **por más que**, with the subjunctive; *what*, in this relation, by **lo que**:—

todo lo que V. me mandáre eso haré,	whatever you order me, I will do.
por más que diga, no lo creo,	whatever he say, I do not credit [him.
diga **lo que** quiera,	say what he may.

332. **Sendos, as** (corrupted from the Latin *singulos -as*), *one for each*, *each one*, is used distributively and only in the plural:—

tenían las cuatro ninfas **sendos** vasos hechos á la romana,	the four nymphs had each a vase made in the Roman fashion.
salieron de la nave seis enanos, tañendo **sendas** harpas,	six dwarfs came forth from the vessel, each playing a harp.

333. **Tal** (pl. **tales**), *such*, *such a* (pl. *such*), is used as a substantive and an adjective of persons and things.

a. Without an indefinite article, as an adjective:—

tal hombre; **tal** mujer,	such *a* man; such *a* woman.
tal dia; **tal** casa,	such *a* day; such *a* house.
tales hombres; **tales** dias,	such men; such days.
tales vidas; **tales** personas,	such lives; such persons.

REMARK. — The same use extends to all the cases:—

no diga V. **tal** cosa,	do not say such *a* thing.
la historia **de tal** época,	the history of such *a* period.
no me fío **en tales** hombres,	I do not trust such men.

b. Without an indefinite article, as a neuter substantive: —

no hay **tál** en este pais,	there is no such (thing) here.
no creo **tál**,	I don't believe such a (thing).

334. **Tal** is preceded by the indefinite article *only* when used with names of persons, and in the sense of *one, a certain.* With common nouns, **cierto**, without the article, has the same meaning, *a certain.* Hence **un tal, una tal**, and **cierto, cierta**, are adjectives replacing **fulano** or **fulan ode tal,** which can only be employed as a substantive (§§ 304, 306): —

me lo dijo **fulano de tal**,	such a one told me so.
se lo dió **un tal** Perez,	one Perez gave it to him.
cierto sargento, **un tal** García, se puso al frente de la sublevacion,	a certain sergeant, one Garcia, put himself at the head of the insurrection.

REMARK. — *Tal* often serves to strengthen an affirmation, denial, or interrogation: —

sí **tal**; no **tal**; ¿qué **tal**?	yes; no; how are you?

335. Idioms with *tal* are: tal cual, *such as*, and *so so, pretty well;* tal y tal, *such and such* (*pl.* tales y tales, *etc.*).

336. **Todo, a** (Lat. *totus*), *all, whole, every, anything.* is employed as an adjective, a substantive, and an indefinite pronoun.

337. As an adjective, it is followed by the definite article, or other determinative word if the noun requires one: —

todo el dia; **toda la** noche,	all day; the whole night.
todos los hombres,	all men.
todas las clases,	all classes.
esto fué **toda su** locura,	his whole folly consisted in this.
por **todo aquel** dia,	throughout that whole day.
hizo un viaje por **toda** España,	he made a journey over all Spain.
todo Madrid concurrió á la fiesta,	all Madrid turned out at the festival.

REMARK. — In poetical or intensive prose language, the adjective may follow the noun: —

armóse de sus armas **todas** (*Cervantes*),	he armed himself with all his arms.

338. Instead of *todo*, **entero, a**, *entire, whole, all*, may be used, placed always after the noun: —

el pueblo **entero**,	the whole village.
la noche **entera**,	the whole night.
dias **enteros**; la España **entera**,	whole days; all Spain.

339. An idiomatic use of *todo* is found especially with expressions of time, in which is meant some indefinite point within the general period mentioned: —

en **todo** el mes de setiembre,	some time in September.
en **todo** el año que viene,	some time during the coming year.

340. **Todo**, as an adjective, may be followed by the noun directly, in the sense of *every* in the singular, or *all* in the plural: —

todo Español que se respeta á sí mismo,	every Spaniard who respects himself.
todo corazon sensible,	every heart that feels.
todo remedio es ya vano,	every appliance is now vain.
en **todo** caso; á **toda** hora,	in every case; at all hours.
por **todos** modos,	in every way (in all ways).
en **todas** partes,	everywhere (in all directions).

REMARK. — After *por*, *todo* frequently means the same as **único, a**, *sole*, *only*, with which it is freely exchanged: —

me dió por **toda** respuesta que . . .	he gave me as his only answer that . . .

341. As a substantive, *todo* refers to persons and things, in all genders and in both numbers: —

a. In the singular, mostly as a neuter — *all, everything:* —

todo se concluyó,	all is over (is finished).
todo era gritos y alboroto,	all was shrieks and confusion.
hombre pobre **todo** es trazas,	a poor man is all projects.
todo manifiesta su remordimiento,	everything proves his compunction.
en esta mesa hay de **todo**,	on this table there is everything.

REMARK. — The neuter use of *todo* is frequently associated with a pleonastic *lo:* —

lo ha confesado **todo**,	he has confessed everything.
todo lo gastas en vanidades,	you spend your all on frivolities.

b. In the plural in both genders: —

todos están ya presos,	all are now in prison.
aprobáron la medida **todos**,	all favored the measure.
no **todos** piensan del mismo modo,	not all think the same way (have the same way of thinking).
las he visto á **todas** (*women*),	I have seen them all.
todos están de venta (*books*),	all are for sale.

342. **Todo** is often synonymous with cualquier cosa, *anything* (*whatever*) in a good or bad sense: —

ese hombre es capaz de **todo**,	that man is capable of anything.
á **todo** me hallarás dispuesto,	you will find me ready for a.

343. Finally, **todo** qualifies relative pronouns, neuter adjectives (substantives) and adverbs, in the sense of *every one, all, quite, thoroughly;* as, todo el que, todo aquel que, *every one who;* todos los que, *all those who;* todos cuantos, todo cuanto, *all who* or *that;* todo lo cual, *all of which;* todo lo que, *all that;* todo cansado, *quite tired;* todo lo demás, *all the rest* (*omne cæterum*), etc.

344. **Uno, a,** is an adjective, a substantive, and a pronoun, signifying in the singular *an* or *a, one, each other;* and in the plural, *some, each other, one another:* —

a. Singular: —

un hombre (§ 123); **una** ventana,	a man; a window.
un dia; **una** semana,	one day; one week.
¿tiene V. **un** libro? — tengo **uno,**	have you a book? — I have one.
¿puede **uno** ver qué es?	can one see what it is?
los dos hermanos se quieren **uno** á **otra** (§ 106),	the brother and sister are fond of each other.
estos hombres se apoyan **uno** [en **otro,**	these men sustain one another.

b. Plural: —

unos bollos; **unas** almendras,	(some) cakes; almonds.
son **unos** desconocidos,	they are unknown persons.
unos van y **otros** vienen, [**otros,**	some go and others come.
los obreros se ayudan **unos** á	the laborers help one another.
estas planchas de metal se dan **una** contra **otra,** *or* **unas** contra **otras,**	these plates of metal strike against each other, *or* one another.

345. *Uno,* as an indefinite numeral, may stand in contrasted clauses, but usually at the present day without the article: —

de **un** momento á **otro**,	from one minute to another.
de **una** manera ú **otra**,	in one way or another.
uno fué justiciado y el **otro** soltado,	the one was executed and the other set free.
uno y **otro**; **uno** ú **otro**,	both; either.
ni **uno** ni **otro**,	neither.

346. As an indefinite pronoun, *uno* may be followed by the partitive genitive: —

abrió **una** de las ventanas,	he opened one of the windows.
me regaló **uno** de sus libros,	he gave me one of his books.

a. The plural of *uno* in this construction is **algunos, as**, *some*, not *unos*: —

algunos de sus amigos,	some of his friends.

REMARK. — We may say **unos** amigos **suyos**, *some friends of his*, but not **unos de** *sus amigos*. The singular of **alguno** may be used thus distributively, but it is vaguer than **uno** — *some one or other of his friends*.

347. *Uno, a*, replaces a substantive with or without an adjective, to avoid the repetition of the former: —

tengo un reloj de oro y **uno** de plata, ambos preciosos,	I have a gold watch and a silver one, both very fine ones.
unas veces gastaba levita negra, y otras **una** de colores,	sometimes he wore a black frock coat, and others a colored one.
hablando de carabinas, él tiene **una** á cañon liso muy buena,	speaking of rifles, he has a very good smooth-bore (one).
careciendo yo de abrigo, él me prestó **uno** viejo suyo,	I being without an overcoat, he lent me an old one of his.

348. **Uno**, *one*; **se**, *they, you*; **gente**, *people*; are used in the vague signification of *some one, any one*; or the verb may be put in the third person plural: —

no sabe **uno** qué hacer, / no **se** sabe qué hacer,	one does not know what to do.
llama **gente**, *or* llama álguien,	somebody knocks.
llaman á la puerta,	there is a rap at the door.
¿quién es? — **gente** de paz.[1]	who is it? — a friend (peace-folk).

349. **Varios, as,** *several, a good many,* is used as an adjective and a substantive: —

varios amigos vinieron,	several friends came.
de estos brillantes tengo **varios**,	of these diamonds, I have several.
he visto **varios** ejemplares de esta obra,	I have seen several copies of this work.

REMARK. — Instead of *varios*, and parallel with it, the term **una porcion de,** *a considerable number of, considerable, several,* is popularly used followed by a noun in the singular or plural, or by a collective word: —

aboné **una porcion de** dinero,	I paid considerable money.
una porcion de gente,	a considerable number of people.
he gastado **una porcion de** duros en ello,	I have expended several dollars on that.
una porcion de veces,	several times, a number of times.
recibí **una porcion de** encargos,	I was entrusted with several messages.

The Verb.

350. Before proceeding to the conjugation of verbs, it is indispensable to give the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb **haber** . . , *to have* . . , by the aid of which the compound tenses of all other verbs are formed.

---

[1] In every Spanish apartment-door there is fixed a *ventanilla* or small opening, with a metal slide, which the servant slips back on answering a knock or ring, and inquires, *¿Quién?* refusing to open till the caller exclaims, *¡Gente de paz!* or simply, ¡Paz! *peace;* and among the old-fashioned, *¡Ave María!*

REMARK. — *To have*, as an auxiliary, then, is expressed in Spanish by **haber**; but, as an independent verb, meaning *to possess*, by **tener**: —

tengo un libro, *not* **he** un libro,	I have a book.
he tenido un libro, *not* **tengo** tenido un libro,	I have had a book.
tenerlo, *but* **haber**lo tenido,	to have it, to have had it.

Still *tener* may be occasionally employed as an auxiliary, as well as other verbs: —

la carta que **tengo** (*or* llevo) escrita,	the letter that I have written.

Conjugation of the Active Auxiliary Verb.

351. Haber, *to have;* stems: **hab, hub, habr.**

INFINITIVE.	GERUND.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
hab-**er**, *to have.*	hab-**iendo**, *having.*	hab-**ido**, *had.*

INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.	
Present.		**Present.**	
he,	*I have.*	hay-**a**,	*I may have.*
has,	*thou hast.*	hay-**as**,	*thou mayst have.*
ha,	*he has.*	hay-**a**,	*he may have.*
hemos,	*we have.*	hay-**ámos**,	*we may have.*
hab-**eis**,	*ye have.*	hay-**áis**,	*ye may have.*
han,	*they have.*	hay-**an**,	*they may have.*
Imperfect.		**Imperfect** (*first form*).	
hab-**ía**,	*I had.*	hub-**iera**,	*I might have.*
hab-**ías**,	*thou hadst.*	hub-**ieras**,	*thou mightst have.*
hab-**ía**,	*he had.*	hub-**iera**,	*he might have.*
hab-**íamos**,	*we had.*	hub-**iéramos**,	*we might have.*
hab-**íais**,	*ye had.*	hub-**iérais**,	*ye might have.*
hab-**ían**,	*they had.*	hub-**ieran**,	*they might have.*

INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.	
Past Definite.		**Imperfect** (*second form*).	
hub-**e**,	*I had.*	hub-**iese**,	*I might have.*
hub-**iste**,	*thou hadst.*	hub-**ieses**,	*thou mightst have.*
hub-**o**,	*he had.*	hub-**iese**,	*he might have.*
hub-**imos**,	*we had.*	hub-**iésemos**,	*we might have.*
hub-**isteis**,	*ye had.*	hub-**iéseis**,	*ye might have.*
hub-**ieron**,	*they had.*	hub-**iesen**,	*they might have.*
Future.		**Future.**	
habr-**é**,	*I shall have.*	hub-**iere**,	*I should have.*
habr-**ás**,	*thou wilt have.*	hub-**ieres**,	*thou shouldst have.*
habr-**á**,	*he will have.*	hub-**iere**,	*he should have.*
habr-**émos**,	*we shall have.*	hub-**iéremos**,	*we should have.*
habr-**éis**,	*ye will have.*	hub-**iéreis**,	*ye should have.*
habr-**án**,	*they will have.*	hub-**ieren**,	*they should have.*
Conditional (*apodasis*).		**Conditional** (*protasis*).	
habr-**ía**,	*I should have.*	hub**iera**	*or* hub**iese**, (if) *I had*, etc.
habr-**ías**,	*thou wouldst have.*	hub**ieras**	*or* hub**ieses**,
habr-**ía**,	*he would have.*	hub**iera**	*or* hub**iese**,
habr-**íamos**,	*we should have.*	hub**iéramos**	*or* hub**iésemos**,
habr-**íais**,	*ye would have.*	hub**iérais**	*or* hub**iéseis**,
habr-**ían**,	*they would have.*	hub**ieran**	*or* hub**iesen**,

Remarks on Haber.

352. In nearly all the persons of the indicative present, the original Latin stem and endings have shrunken, while the vowels *a* and *e* of the first person singular have been *attracted* and reduced to *ē* (*ai* = *e*), after the analogy of **sé** from *sapio* (*sai-po*), and **quepo** from *capio* (*caipo*). Hence: —

Latin	h*a*beo,	by *hai*-bo, becomes modern Spanish	**he.**
	habes,	ha*b*s	**has.**
	habet,	ha-*bt*,	**ha.**
	habēmus,	habēmos (*archaic*),	**hemos.**
	habētis,	habēdes (*obsolete*),	**habēis.**
	habent,	ha*b*n-*t*,	**han.**

a. The subjunctive present is from the Latin *habeam* = *hab*-ya[*m*], **haya,** so that the *y* here properly belongs to the ending.

b. The past definite **hube** is formed from h*ab*u*i*, by the above law of vowel-attraction, yielding *haubi* (old Span. *hobe*). From this preterit-stem *hub*, are derived the imperfects and future subjunctive, by regular processes : Lat. h*ab*u*eram* = *haubēra*, *hobiera* (§ 19), **hubiera**; h*ab*u*issem* = *haubēsse*, *hobiese*, **hubiese**; h*ab*u*erim* = *haubēri*, *hobiere*, **hubiere.**

c. The future and conditional indicative are properly compound tenses made up of the endings of the present and imperfect joined to the infinitive. In the case of *haber*, the *e* falls away, leaving the stem *habr* to receive the endings *e*, *as*, *a* ; *ía*, *ías*, *ía*, etc.

353. Apart from its character as an auxiliary, *haber* is not at present employed as an independent verb, save in the following cases (§ 350, remark) :—

a. In certain special significations :—

el caco no pudo ser **habido,**	the thief could not be taken.
habido consejo,	a council having been held.
se las **habrá** conmigo,	he will have to do with me.
cuya ánima Dios **haya,**	may God have his soul.

b. In the simple tenses, when *haber* is followed by the preposition *de* and the infinitive of some other verb ; it then has the meaning of *duty*, or refers to *future* action — *to be to, to have to, must* :—

¿que **había de** hacer yo? [casa,	what was I to do?
hoy **hemos de** comer fuera de	to-day we are to dine out.
mañana **has de** trabajar,	to-morrow you are to work.
han de tenerlo en casa á la una,	they must have it home by one.

c. In the simple and compound tenses, when followed by *que* and the infinitive of some other verb. **Haber** is

then used impersonally, and denotes *obligation* or *necessity*, and is translated by *to be necessary:*—

hubo que emplear dos dias en ello,	it was necessary to lay out a couple of days on it.
¿qué **hay que** hacer?	what is to be done?
ha habido que salir á escape,	it was necessary to get out in haste.
hay que tener paciencia,	we must have patience.
hay, ántes, **que** condenar esta política en los reyes Católicos,	this policy is rather to be condemned in the Catholic sovereigns.
no **hay que** dudarlo,	there is no doubting it.
no **hay que** censurarlo en él,	it is not right to blame him for it.

REMARK. — In the personal verb, the imperative singular **he** for *habe*, and popularly the plural **hed** for *habed*, still survive with the adverbs **aquí**, *here;* **ahí** and **allí**, *there;* and regularly attach to themselves the pronoun objects *me*, *te*, *le*, *la*, *lo*, *nos*, *os*, *los*, *las*. The radical meaning of **he** in those positions is not *have*, but *behold:*—

he aquí (*behold here*),[1]	this is (*pointing to what follows*).
he ahí (*behold there*),	that is (*pointing to what precedes*).
héme aquí; **hélo** ahí,	here I am; there it is.
hélos; **hélas**,	behold them, *or* there they are.
hédnos aquí, Señor, ante vuestra presencia,	behold us here, Lord, in thy presence.

354. As an impersonal verb, **haber** regularly builds its own compound tenses:—

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	**Gerund.**	**Absolute Past Participle.**
haber, *there . . to be.*	**habiendo,** *there being.*	**habido,** *there having been.*

[1] In Biblical language, simply *lo* or *behold:*—

¡**he aquí**, os lo he dicho ántes! | behold, I have told you before!

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
PRESENT. **hay,** *there is, there are.*	PRESENT. **haya,** *there may be.*
IMPERFECT. **había,** *there was, there were.*	IMPERFECT (*first form*). **hubiera,** *there might be.*
PAST DEFINITE. **hubo,** *there was, there were.*	IMPERFECT (*second form*). **hubiese,** *there might be.*
FUTURE. **habrá,** *there will be.*	FUTURE. **hubiere,** *there should be.*
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*). **habría,** *there would be.*	CONDITIONAL (*protasis*). **hubiera** *or* **hubiese,** (if) *there were.*

Imperative Mode:—haya *or* **que haya,** *let there be.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haber habido, *there . . to have been.*	**habiendo habido,** *there having been.*

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
PAST INDEFINITE. **ha habido,** *there has,—have, been.*	PAST INDEFINITE. **haya habido,** *there may have been.*
PLUPERFECT. **había habido,** *there had been.*	PLUPERFECT (*first form*). **hubiera habido,** *there might have been.*
PAST ANTERIOR. **hubo habido,** *there had been.*	PLUPERFECT (*second form*). **hubiese habido,** *there might have been.*
FUTURE PERFECT. **habrá habido,** *there will have been.*	FUTURE PERFECT. **hubiere habido,** *there should have been.*
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*). **habría habido,** *there would have been.*	CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*). **hubiera** *or* **hubiese habido,** (if) *there had been.*

Remarks on Haber Impersonal.

355. The infinitives are dependent on other verbs in some finite form:—

puede haber — haber habido,	there may be — have been.

356. *Hay* is a contraction of *ha* with the now obsolete **y** (Lat. *ibi* = *i'i*, *y*), *there;* **ha-y**, *it has there, there is, there are* (Fr. *il y a*). The old Spanish original *ha*, negative *non ha* (still preserved in Portuguese), has been handed down in the legal phrase for denying a petition: **no ha lugar**, *there is no occasion;* or for dismissing a case — equivalent to *nolle prosequi.*

357. A vulgar, but very common, form of the imperative and desiderative *haya* among the illiterate classes, is **haiga**, as if from *faciat* (*faica, faiga, haiga*):—

que **haiga** salud,	let there be health.
que no **haiga** novedad,	let nothing befall you.

Both these phrases are heard among the lowly in taking leave of one another. Likewise in the *personal* verb, in the respectful formula employed in an undertone when a deceased person is referred to. Thus, Ramon de la Cruz, in the "Sainete" entitled *Las Castañeras Picadas*, says humorously:—

Felices, señora Paca
Javiera, con muchos gustos,
Y los aumentos de gracia
Que yo la deseo en vida
Del difunto (que Dios **haiga**).

Active Conjugation of the Regular Verb.

358. The inflection of all regular verbs in the Active Voice proceeds after three models which are characterized by the ending of the infinitive, thus:—

Infinitives in **-ar** characterize the First Conj.: **hablar,** *to speak.*
Infinitives in **-er** characterize the Second Conj.: **comer,** *to eat.*
Infinitives in **-ir** characterize the Third Conj.: **vivir,** *to live.*

a. All verbs, whether regular, irregular, impersonal, or defective, belong to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive-ending, however much their inflection may differ in other respects from the models of regular verbs.

359. In the regular verb the terminations are applied directly to the unchanged stem, found by suppressing the infinitive-endings:—

habl-**ar**;	habl-**amos**,	to speak;	we speak.
com-**er**;	com-**emos**,	to eat;	we eat.
viv-**ir**;	viv-**imos**,	to live;	we live.

a. The indicative future and conditional are originally compound forms, consisting of the infinitive joined to the endings of the indicative present and imperfect of the auxiliary verb **haber**:—

hablar-**é**;	hablar-**ía**,	I shall — I should speak.
vivir-**án**;	vivir-**ían**,	they will — they would live.

REMARK. — Hence the literal meaning of the Spanish future is "I have to speak," expressed likewise by *he de hablar;* and the literal meaning of the conditional is "I had to speak," or *había de hablar.* Anciently, the object-pronoun could stand between the infinitive and the auxiliary; as, *hablar***os***hé*, *hablar***les***hía*, and *hablar***les***ía;* modern: *os hablaré*, *les hablaría.* Thus the proverb in its original form:—

díme con quien andas, **decirtehé** quién eres (*for* **te diré**),	tell me with whom you associate, I will tell you what you are.

360. In the irregular verb throughout, the gerund, past participle, present and imperfect indicative, present subjunctive, and imperative, are derived from the stem of the infinitive (*present stem*); the imperfect (both forms) and future subjunctive are derived from the stem of the past definite (*preterit stem*); the future and conditional of the indicative always follow the *infinitive* by adding to it the endings of *haber* (§ 352, *c*):—

I. Present Stem:—

Infinitive,
Gerund (*usually*),
Past participle,
Present indicative,
Present subjunctive,
Imperative,
Imperfect indicative.

II. Preterit Stem:—

Past definite indicative,
Imperfects subjunctive,
Future subjunctive,
Gerund (*occasionally*).

III. From the Infinitive:—

Future indicative,
Conditional of the indicative.

361. Table of verb-endings:—

	INFINITIVE.	GERUND.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
1.	-ar,	-ando,	-ado.
2.	-er,	-iendo,	-ido.
3.	-ir,	-iendo,	-ido.

INDICATIVE MODE.			SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
Present.			Present.		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-o,	-o,	-o.	-e,	-a,	-a.
-as,	-es,	-es.	-es,	-as,	-as.
-a,	-e,	-e.	-e,	-a,	-a.
-amos,	-emos,	-imos.	-emos,	-amos,	-amos.
-ais,	-eis,	-ís.	-eis,	-ais,	-ais.
-an,	-en,	-en.	-en,	-an,	-an.

INDICATIVE MODE.			SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
Imperfect.			**Imperfect** (*first form*).		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-aba,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-iera,	-iera.
-abas,	-ías,	-ías.	-aras,	-ieras,	-ieras.
-aba,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-iera,	-iera.
-ábamos,	-íamos,	-íamos.	-áramos,	-iéramos,	-iéramos.
-ábais,	-íais,	-íais.	-árais,	-iérais,	-iérais.
-aban,	-ían,	-ían.	-aran,	-ieran,	-ieran.
Past Definite.			**Imperfect** (*second form*).		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-é,	-í,	-í.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-aste,	-iste,	-iste.	-ases,	-ieses,	-ieses.
-ó,	-ió,	-ió.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-amos,	-imos,	-imos.	-ásemos,	-iésemos,	-iésemos.
-ásteis,	-ísteis,	-ísteis.	-áseis,	-iéseis,	-iéseis.
-aron,	-ieron,	-ieron.	-asen,	-iesen,	-iesen.
Future.			**Future.**		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-é,	-é,	-é.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-ás,	-ás,	-ás.	-ares,	-ieres,	-ieres.
-á,	-á,	-á.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-émos,	-émos,	-émos.	-áremos,	-iéremos,	-iéremos.
-éis,	-éis,	-éis.	-áreis,	-iéreis,	-iéreis.
-án,	-án,	-án.	-aren,	-ieren,	-ieren.
Conditional.			**IMPERATIVE MODE.**		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-ía,	-ía,	-ía.	—	—	—
-ías,	-ías,	-ías.	-a,	-e,	-e.
-ía,	-ía,	-ía.	-e (V.),	-a (V.),	-a (V.).
-íamos,	-íamos,	-íamos.	-emos,	-amos,	-amos.
-íais,	-íais,	-íais.	-ad,	-ed,	-id.
-ían,	-ían,	-ían.	-en (VV.),	-an (VV.),	-an (VV.).

FIRST CONJUGATION.

362. Model verb — **hablar**, *to speak.*

SIMPLE TENSES.

Infinitive.	Gerund.	Past Participle.
habl-**ar**, *to speak.*	habl-**ando**, *speaking.*	habl-**ado**, *spoken.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.		
PRESENT.		PRESENT.		
habl-**o**,	*I speak.*	habl-**e**,	*I may*	*speak.*
habl-**as**,	*thou speakest.*	habl-**es**,	*thou mayst*	
habl-**a**,	*he speaks.*	habl-**e**,	*he may*	
V. habla,	*you speak.*	V. hable,	*you may*	
habl-**amos**,	*we speak.*	habl-**emos**,	*we may*	
habl-**ais**,	*ye speak.*	habl-**eis**,	*ye may*	
habl-**an**,	*they speak.*	habl-**en**,	*they may*	
VV. hablan,	*you speak.*	VV. hablen,	*you may*	
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT (*first form*).		
habl-**aba**,	*I was*	habl-**ara**,	*I might*	*speak.*
habl-**abas**,	*thou wast*	habl-**aras**,	*thou mightest*	
habl-**aba**,	*he was*	habl-**ara**,	*he might*	
V. hablaba,	*you were*	V. hablara,	*you might*	
habl-**ábamos**,	*we were*	habl-**áramos**,	*we might*	
habl-**ábais**,	*ye were*	habl-**árais**,	*ye might*	
habl-**aban**,	*they were*	habl-**aran**,	*they might*	
VV. hablaban,	*you were*	VV. hablaran,	*you might*	
PAST DEFINITE.		IMPERFECT (*second form*).		
habl-**é**,	*I spoke.*	habl-**ase**,	*I might*	*speak.*
habl-**aste**,	*thou spokest.*	habl-**ases**,	*thou mightest*	
habl-**ó**,	*he spoke.*	habl-**ase**,	*he might*	
V. habló,	*you spoke.*	V. hablase,	*you might*	
habl-**amos**,	*we spoke.*	habl-**ásemos**,	*we might*	
habl-**ásteis**,	*ye spoke.*	habl-**áseis**,	*ye might*	
habl-**aron**,	*they spoke.*	habl-**asen**,	*they might*	
VV. hablaron,	*you spoke.*	VV. hablasen,	*you might*	

Indicative Mode.			**Subjunctive Mode.**		
FUTURE.			FUTURE.		
hablar-**é**,	*I shall*	*speak.*	habl-**are**,	*I should*	*speak.*
hablar-**ás**,	*thou wilt*		habl-**ares**,	*thou shouldst*	
hablar-**á**,	*he will*		habl-**are**,	*he should*	
V. hablará,	*you will*		V. hablare,	*you should*	
hablar-**émos**,	*we shall*		habl-**áremos**,	*we should*	
hablar-**éis**,	*ye will*		habl-**áreis**,	*ye should*	
hablar-**án**,	*they will*		habl-**aren**,	*they should*	
VV. hablarán,	*you will*		VV. hablaren,	*you should*	
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL (*protasis*).		
hablar-**ía**,	*I should*	*speak.*	habl**ara**	*or* hablase,	(if) *I spoke*, etc.
hablar-**ías**,	*thou wouldst*		habl**aras**	*or* hablases,	
hablar-**ía**,	*he would*		habl**ara**	*or* hablase,	
V. hablaría,	*you would*		V. hablara	*or* hablase,	
hablar-**íamos**,	*we should*		habl**áramos**	*or* habl**ásemos**,	
hablar-**íais**,	*ye would*		habl**árais**	*or* habl**áseis**,	
hablar-**ían**,	*they would*		habl**aran**	*or* hablasen,	
VV. hablarían,	*you would*		VV. hablaran	*or* hablasen,	

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
——	——	habl-**emos**,	*let us speak.*
habl-**a**,	*speak (thou).*	habl-**ad**,	*speak (ye).*
habl-**e**,	*let him speak.*	habl-**en**,	*let them speak.*
hable V.,	*speak.*	hablen VV.,	*speak.*
——	——	no habl-**emos**,	*let us not speak.*
no habl-**es**,	*speak (thou) not.*	no habl-**eis**,	*speak (ye) not.*
no habl-**e**,	*let him not speak.*	no habl-**en**,	*let them not speak.*
no hable V.,	*do not speak.*	no hablen VV.,	*do not speak.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	**Gerund Past.**
haber hablado, *to have spoken.*	habiendo hablado, *having spoken.*

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
PAST INDEFINITE.			PAST INDEFINITE.		
he hablado,	*I*	*have spoken*, etc.	haya hablado,	*I*	*may have spoken*, etc.
has hablado,	*thou*		hayas hablado,	*thou*	
ha hablado,	*he*		haya hablado,	*he*	
V. ha hablado,	*you*		V. haya hablado,	*you*	
hemos hablado,	*we*		hayámos hablado,	*we*	
habeis hablado,	*ye*		hayáis hablado,	*ye*	
han hablado,	*they*		hayan hablado,	*they*	
VV. han hablado,	*you*		VV. hayan hablado,	*you*	
PLUPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT (*first form*).		
había hablado,	*I*	*had spoken*, etc.	hubiera hablado,	*I*	*might have spoken*, etc.
habías hablado,	*thou*		hubieras hablado,	*thou*	
había hablado,	*he*		hubiera hablado,	*he*	
V. había hablado,	*you*		V. hubiera hablado,	*you*	
habíamos hablado,	*we*		hubiéramos hablado,	*we*	
habíais hablado,	*ye*		hubiérais hablado,	*ye*	
habían hablado,	*they*		hubieran hablado,	*they*	
VV. habían hablado,	*you*		VV. hubieran hablado,	*you*	
PAST ANTERIOR.			PLUPERFECT (*second form*).		
hube hablado, (when)	*I*	*had spoken*, etc.	hubiese hablado,	*I*	*might have spoken*, etc.
hubiste hablado,	*thou*		hubieses hablado,	*thou*	
hubo hablado,	*he*		hubiese hablado,	*he*	
V. hubo hablado,	*you*		V. hubiese hablado,	*you*	
hubimos hablado,	*we*		hubiésemos hablado,	*we*	
hubísteis hablado,	*ye*		hubiéseis hablado,	*ye*	
hubieron hablado,	*they*		hubiesen hablado,	*they*	
VV. hubieron hablado,	*you*		VV. hubiesen hablado,	*you*	
FUTURE PERFECT.			FUTURE PERFECT.		
habré hablado,	*I*	*shall have spoken*, etc.	hubiere hablado,	*I*	*should have spoken*, etc.
habrás hablado,	*thou*		hubieres hablado,	*thou*	
habrá hablado,	*he*		hubiere hablado,	*he*	
V. habrá hablado,	*you*		V. hubiere hablado,	*you*	
habrémos hablado,	*we*		hubiéremos hablado,	*we*	
habréis hablado,	*ye*		hubiéreis hablado,	*ye*	
habrán hablado,	*they*		hubieren hablado,	*they*	
VV. habrán hablado,	*you*		VV. hubieren hablado,	*you*	

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*).		
habría hablado,	*I*	*should have spoken*, etc.	hubiera	*or* hubiese	(if) *I had spoken*, etc. hablado,
habrías hablado,	*thou*		hubieras	*or* hubieses	
habría hablado,	*he*		hubiera	*or* hubiese	
V. habría hablado,	*you*		V. hubiera	*or* hubiese	
habríamos hablado,	*we*		hubiéramos	*or* hubiésemos	
habríais hablado,	*ye*		hubiérais	*or* hubiéseis	
habrían hablado,	*they*		hubieran	*or* hubiesen	
VV. habrían hablado,	*you*		VV. hubieran	*or* hubiesen	

SECOND CONJUGATION.

363. Model verb — **comer,** *to eat.*

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	**Gerund.**	**Past Participle.**
com-**er,** *to eat.*	com-**iendo,** *eating.*	com-**ido,** *eaten.*

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
PRESENT.			PRESENT.		
cóm-**o,**	*I eat.*		com-**a,**	*I may*	*eat.*
com-**es,**	*thou eatest.*		com-**as,**	*thou mayst*	
com-**e,**	*he eats.*		com-**a,**	*he may*	
V. come,	*you eat.*		V. coma,	*you may*	
com-**emos,**	*we eat.*		com-**amos,**	*we may*	
com-**eis,**	*ye eat.*		com-**ais,**	*ye may*	
com-**en,**	*they eat.*		com-**an,**	*they may*	
VV. comen,	*you eat.*		VV. coman,	*you may*	

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
IMPERFECT.			IMPERFECT (*first form*).		
com-**ía**,	*I was*	*eating.*	com-**iera**,	*I might*	*eat.*
com-**ías**,	*thou wast*		com-**ieras**,	*thou mightest*	
com-**ía**,	*he was*		com-**iera**,	*he might*	
V. comía,	*you were*		V. comiera,	*you might*	
com-**íamos**,	*we were*		com-**iéramos**,	*we might*	
com-**íais**,	*ye were*		com-**iérais**,	*ye might*	
com-**ían**,	*they were*		com-**ieran**,	*they might*	
VV. comían,	*you were*		VV. comieran,	*you might*	
PAST DEFINITE.			IMPERFECT (*second form*).		
com-**í**,	*I ate.*		com-**iese**,	*I might*	*eat.*
com-**iste**,	*thou atest.*		com-**ieses**,	*thou mightest*	
com-**ió**,	*he ate.*		com-**iese**,	*he might*	
V. comió,	*you ate.*		V. comiese,	*you might*	
com-**imos**,	*we ate.*		com-**iésemos**,	*we might*	
com-**isteis**,	*ye ate.*		com-**iéseis**,	*ye might*	
com-**ieron**,	*they ate.*		com-**iesen**,	*they might*	
VV. comieron,	*you ate.*		VV. comiesen,	*you might*	
FUTURE.			FUTURE.		
comer-**é**,	*I shall*	*eat.*	com-**iere**,	*I should*	*eat.*
comer-**ás**,	*thou wilt*		com-**ieres**,	*thou shouldst*	
comer-**á**,	*he will*		com-**iere**,	*he should*	
V. comerá,	*you will*		V. comiere,	*you should*	
comer-**émos**,	*we shall*		com-**iéremos**,	*we should*	
comer-**éis**,	*ye will*		com-**iéreis**,	*ye should*	
comer-**án**,	*they will*		com-**ieren**,	*they should*	
VV. comerán,	*you will*		VV. comieren,	*you should*	
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL (*protasis*).		
comer-**ía**,	*I should*	*eat.*	**comiera**	*or* **comiese**,	(if) *I ate*, etc.
comer-**ías**,	*thou wouldst*		**comieras**	*or* **comieses**,	
comer-**ía**,	*he would*		**comiera**	*or* **comiese**,	
V. comería,	*you would*		V. comiera	*or* comiese,	
comer-**íamos**,	*we should*		**comiéramos**	*or* **comiésemos**,	
comer-**íais**,	*ye would*		**comiérais**	*or* **comiéseis**,	
comer-**ían**,	*they would*		**comieran**	*or* **comiesen**,	
VV. comerían,	*you would*		VV. comieran	*or* comiesen,	

Imperative Mode.

Singular.		Plural.	
——	——	com-**amos,**	*let us eat.*
com-**e,**	*eat (thou).*	com-**ed,**	*eat (ye).*
com-**a,**	*let him eat.*	com-**an,**	*let them eat.*
coma V.,	*eat.*	coman VV.,	*eat.*
——	——	no com-**amos,**	*let us not eat.*
no com-**as,**	*eat (thou) not.*	no com-**ais,**	*eat (ye) not.*
no com-**a,**	*let him not eat.*	no com-**an,**	*let them not eat.*
no coma V.,	*do not eat.*	no coman VV.,	*do not eat.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	**Gerund Past.**
haber comido, *to have eaten.*	habiendo comido, *having eaten.*

Indicative Mode.			**Subjunctive Mode.**		
Past Indefinite.			Past Indefinite.		
he comido,	*I*	*have eaten,* etc.	haya comido,	*I*	*may have eaten,* etc.
has comido,	*thou*		hayas comido,	*thou*	
ha comido,	*he*		haya comido,	*he*	
V. ha comido,	*you*		V. haya comido,	*you*	
hemos comido,	*we*		hayámos comido,	*we*	
habeis comido,	*ye*		hayáis comido,	*ye*	
han comido,	*they*		hayan comido,	*they*	
VV. han comido,	*you*		VV. hayan comido,	*you*	
Pluperfect.			Pluperfect (*first form*).		
había comido,	*I*	*had eaten,* etc.	hubiera comido,	*I*	*might have eaten,* etc.
habías comido,	*thou*		hubieras comido,	*thou*	
había comido,	*he*		hubiera comido,	*he*	
V. había comido,	*you*		V. hubiera comido,	*you*	
habíamos comido,	*we*		hubiéramos comido,	*we*	
habíais comido,	*ye*		hubiérais comido,	*ye*	
habían comido,	*they*		hubieran comido,	*they*	
VV. habían comido,	*you*		VV. hubieran comido,	*you*	

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
PAST ANTERIOR.			PLUPERFECT (*second form*).		
hube comido, (when)	*I*	*had eaten,* etc.	**hubiese comido,**	*I*	*might have eaten,* etc.
hubiste comido,	*thou*		**hubieses comido,**	*thou*	
hubo comido,	*he*		**hubiese comido,**	*he*	
V. hubo comido,	*you*		V. hubiese comido,	*you*	
hubimos comido,	*we*		**hubiésemos comido,**	*we*	
hubísteis comido,	*ye*		**hubiéseis comido,**	*ye*	
hubieron comido,	*they*		**hubiesen comido,**	*they*	
VV. hubieron comido,	*you*		VV. hubiesen comido,	*you*	
FUTURE PERFECT.			FUTURE PERFECT.		
habré comido,	*I*	*shall have eaten,* etc.	**hubiere comido,**	*I*	*should have eaten,* etc.
habrás comido,	*thou*		**hubieres comido,**	*thou*	
habrá comido,	*he*		**hubiere comido,**	*he*	
V. habrá comido,	*you*		V. hubiere comido,	*you*	
habrémos comido,	*we*		**hubiéremos comido,**	*we*	
habréis comido,	*ye*		**hubiéreis comido,**	*ye*	
habrán comido,	*they*		**hubieren comido,**	*they*	
VV. habrán comido,	*you*		VV. hubieren comido,	*you*	
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*).		
habría comido,	*I*	*should have eaten,* etc.	**hubiera** *or* **hubiese**		(if) *I had eaten,* etc. **comido,**
habrías comido,	*thou*		**hubieras** *or* **hubieses**		
habría comido,	*he*		**hubiera** *or* **hubiese**		
V. habría comido,	*you*		V. hubiera *or* hubiese		
habríamos comido,	*we*		**hubiéramos** *or* **hubiésemos**		
habríais comido,	*ye*		**hubiérais** *or* **hubiéseis**		
habrían comido,	*they*		**hubieran** *or* **hubiesen**		
VV. habrían comido,	*you*		VV. hubieran *or* hubiesen		

REMARK. — The first person singular present indicative is written **cómo**, *I eat*, to distinguish it from **como**, *as*. The graphic accent then here is merely *distinctive*.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

364. Model verb — **vivir**, *to live.*

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	**Gerund.**	**Past Participle.**
viv-**ir**, *to live.*	viv-**iendo**, *living.*	viv-**ido**, *lived.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.	
PRESENT.		PRESENT.	
viv-**o**,	*I live.*	viv-**a**,	*I may live.*
viv-**es**,	*thou livest.*	viv-**as**,	*thou mayst live.*
viv-**e**,	*he lives.*	viv-**a**,	*he may live.*
V. vive,	*you live.*	V. viva,	*you may live.*
viv-**imos**,	*we live.*	viv-**amos**,	*we may live.*
viv-**ís**,	*ye live.*	viv-**ais**,	*ye may live.*
viv-**en**,	*they live.*	viv-**an**,	*they may live.*
VV. viven,	*you live.*	VV. vivan,	*you may live.*
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT (*first form*).	
viv-**ía**,	*I was living.*	viv-**iera**,	*I might live.*
viv-**ías**,	*thou wast living.*	viv-**ieras**,	*thou mightest live.*
viv-**ía**,	*he was living.*	viv-**iera**,	*he might live.*
V. vivía,	*you were living.*	V. viviera,	*you might live.*
viv-**íamos**,	*we were living.*	viv-**iéramos**,	*we might live.*
viv-**íais**,	*ye were living.*	viv-**iérais**,	*ye might live.*
viv-**ían**,	*they were living.*	viv-**ieran**,	*they might live.*
VV. vivían,	*you were living.*	VV. vivieran,	*you might live.*
PAST DEFINITE.		IMPERFECT (*second form*).	
viv-**í**,	*I lived.*	viv-**iese**,	*I might live.*
viv-**iste**,	*thou livedst.*	viv-**ieses**,	*thou mightest live.*
viv-**ió**,	*he lived.*	viv-**iese**,	*he might live.*
V. vivió,	*you lived.*	V. viviese,	*you might live.*
viv-**imos**,	*we lived.*	viv-**iésemos**,	*we might live.*
viv-**isteis**,	*ye lived.*	viv-**iéseis**,	*ye might live.*
viv-**ieron**,	*they lived.*	viv-**iesen**,	*they might live.*
VV. vivieron,	*you lived.*	VV. viviesen,	*you might live.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.	
FUTURE.		FUTURE.	
vivir-**é**,	*I shall live.*	viv-**iere**,	*I should live.*
vivir-**ás**,	*thou wilt live.*	viv-**ieres**,	*thou shouldst live.*
vivir-**á**,	*he will live.*	viv-**iere**,	*he should live.*
V. vivirá,	*you will live.*	V. viviere,	*you should live.*
vivir-**émos**,	*we shall live.*	viv-**iéremos**,	*we should live.*
vivir-**éis**,	*ye will live.*	viv-**iéreis**,	*ye should live.*
vivir-**án**,	*they will live.*	viv-**ieren**,	*they should live.*
VV. vivirán,	*you will live.*	VV. vivieren,	*you should live.*
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*).		CONDITIONAL (*protasis*).	
vivir-**ía**,	*I should live.*	vivi**era**	*or* vivi**ese**,
vivir-**ías**,	*thou wouldst live.*	vivi**eras**	*or* vivi**eses**,
vivir-**ía**,	*he would live.*	vivi**era**	*or* vivi**ese**,
V. viviría,	*you would live.*	V. viviera	*or* viviese,
vivir-**íamos**,	*we should live.*	vivi**éramos**	*or* vivi**ésemos**,
vivir-**íais**,	*ye would live.*	vivi**éraís**	*or* vivi**éseis**,
vivir-**ían**,	*they would live.*	vivi**eran**	*or* vivi**esen**,
VV. vivirían,	*you would live.*	VV. vivieran	*or* viviesen,

(if) *I lived*, etc.

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
——	——	viv-**amos**,	*let us live.*
viv-**e**,	*live (thou).*	viv-**id**,	*live (ye).*
viv-**a**,	*let him live.*	viv-**an**,	*let them live.*
viva V.,	*live.*	vivan VV.,	*live.*
——	——	no viv-**amos**,	*let us not live.*
no viv-**as**,	*live (thou) not.*	no viv-**ais**,	*live (ye) not.*
no viv-**a**,	*let him not live.*	no viv-**an**,	*let them not live.*
no viva V.	*do not live.*	no vivan VV.,	*do not live.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haber vivido, *to have lived.*	habiendo vivido, *having lived.*

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
PAST INDEFINITE.			PAST INDEFINITE.		
he vivido,	*I*	*have lived,* etc.	**haya vivido,**	*I*	*may have lived,* etc.
has vivido,	*thou*		**hayas vivido,**	*thou*	
ha vivido,	*he*		**haya vivido,**	*he*	
V. ha vivido,	*you*		V. haya vivido,	*you*	
hemos vivido,	*we*		**hayámos vivido,**	*we*	
habeis vivido,	*ye*		**hayáis vivido,**	*ye*	
han vivido,	*they*		**hayan vivido,**	*they*	
VV. han vivido,	*you*		VV. hayan vivido,	*you*	
PLUPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT (*first form*).		
había vivido,	*I*	*had lived,* etc.	**hubiera vivido,**	*I*	*might have lived,* etc.
habías vivido,	*thou*		**hubieras vivido,**	*thou*	
había vivido,	*he*		**hubiera vivido,**	*he*	
V. había vivido,	*you*		V. hubiera vivido,	*you*	
habíamos vivido,	*we*		**hubiéramos vivido,**	*we*	
habíais vivido,	*ye*		**hubiérais vivido,**	*ye*	
habían vivido,	*they*		**hubieran vivido,**	*they*	
VV. habían vivido,	*you*		VV. hubieran vivido,	*you*	
PAST ANTERIOR.			PLUPERFECT (*second form*).		
hube vivido, (when)	*I*	*had lived,* etc.	**hubiese vivido,**	*I*	*might have lived,* etc.
hubiste vivido,	*thou*		**hubieses vivido,**	*thou*	
hubo vivido,	*he*		**hubiese vivido,**	*he*	
V. hubo vivido,	*you*		V. hubiese vivido,	*you*	
hubimos vivido,	*we*		**hubiésemos vivido,**	*we*	
hubísteis vivido,	*ye*		**hubiéseis vivido,**	*ye*	
hubieron vivido,	*they*		**hubiesen vivido,**	*they*	
VV. hubieron vivido,	*you*		VV. hubiesen vivido,	*you*	
FUTURE PERFECT.			FUTURE PERFECT.		
habré vivido,	*I*	*shall have lived,* etc.	**hubiere vivido,**	*I*	*should have lived,* etc.
habrás vivido,	*thou*		**hubieres vivido,**	*thou*	
habrá vivido,	*he*		**hubiere vivido,**	*he*	
V. habrá vivido,	*you*		V. hubiere vivido,	*you*	
habrémos vivido,	*we*		**hubiéremos vivido,**	*we*	
habréis vivido,	*ye*		**hubiéreis vivido,**	*ye*	
habrán vivido,	*they*		**hubieren vivido,**	*they*	
VV. habrán vivido,	*you*		VV. hubieren vivido,	*you*	

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*).		
habría vivido,	*I*	*should have lived*, etc.	hubiera	*or* hubiese	(if) *I had lived*, etc. vivido,
habrías vivido,	*thou*		hubieras	*or* hubieses	
habría vivido,	*he*		hubiera	*or* hubiese	
V. habría vivido,	*you*		V. hubiera	*or* hubiese	
habríamos vivido,	*we*		hubiéramos	*or* hubiésemos	
habríais vivido,	*ye*		hubiérais	*or* hubiéseis	
habrían vivido,	*they*		hubieran	*or* hubiesen	
VV. habrían vivido,	*you*		VV. hubieran	*or* hubiesen	

Remarks on the Three Conjugations.

365. The subject-pronouns are to be expressed with the verb, only when they are *intensive*, *emphatic*, or *adversative*, and when (by the identical endings of the first and third persons of certain tenses) obscurity would result from the omission (see §§ 187–190):—

REMARK.—Identical endings of the first and third persons are found in the present subjunctive, imperfect indicative and subjunctive, future subjunctive, and the conditionals:—

yo, él	hable;	coma;	viva;	*I* or *he*	may	speak;	eat;	live.
	hablaba;	comía;	vivía;		was	speaking;	eating;	living.
	hablara;	comiera;	viviera;		might	speak;	eat;	live.
	hablase;	comiese;	viviese;		might	speak;	eat;	live.
	hablare;	comiere;	viviere;		should	speak;	eat;	live.
	hablaría;	comería;	viviría;		should / would	speak;	eat;	live.

366. The graphic accent (in the present century always *acute*, ′) distinguishes otherwise homonymous or identical forms in verbs of the first conjugation:—

h*a*blo,	h*a*ble,	habl*a*re,	habl*ó*,	habl*é*,	hablar*é*.
habl*a*ra,	habl*a*ras,	habl*á*reis,	hablar*á*,	hablar*á*s,	hablar*é*is.

Except the first persons plural of the present indicative and the past definite in the first and third conjugations, wherein no written accent is authorized: —

habl*a*mos; viv*i*mos,	we speak; we live.
habl*a*mos; viv*i*mos,	we spoke; we lived.

REMARK. — Much confusion often arises in reading Spanish books printed before A.D. 1550 when the graphic accent (usually *grave* ˋ) began to be employed by the best printers. Martin Nucio (or *Nuyts*) of Antwerp, from 1556 gave a new impulse to this branch of orthography; and in 1580 we find the use of accents generalized, especially to mark the future tense.[1]

367. Of the imperative mode, only the second person singular and plural are original persons. All the others are simply persons of the subjunctive present with an optative, desiderative, or a hortative meaning. For example: —

habla, *speak* (original form), to one to whom *tú* is used.
hable V., *speak* (polite), subjunctive, "may your grace speak."
hablad, *speak* (original form), to two or more to whom *vosotros* is used.
hablen VV., *speak* (polite), subjunctive, "may your graces speak."

hable (subjunctive), *let him speak.*	**hablen** (subjunctive), *let them speak.*

hablemos (subjunctive), *let us speak.*

a. Observe that **habla** and **hablad** (and so **come, comed; vive, vivid,** and all original imperatives) cannot be made *negative.* To render the imperative negative in Spanish, the corresponding *subjunctive* forms must always be used: —

habla, *speak* (thou).	**no hables,** *do not speak.*
hablad, *speak* (ye).	**no hableis,** *do not speak.*

[1] See *Obras de Iuan Boscan*, Antwerp, Nucio, 1556, Editor's *Prologue* (reprinted in my edition, Madrid, 1875, p. 511), and Herrera's edition of *Garcilasso*, Seville, 1580.

b. The other forms being already in the present subjunctive, merely assume the adverb *no* to render them negative:—

hable, *let him speak.*	**no hable,** *let him not speak.*
hable V., *speak* (your grace).	**no hable V.,** *do not speak.*
hablen, *let them speak.*	**no hablen,** *let them not speak.*
hablen VV., *speak* (your graces).	**no hablen VV.,** *do not speak.*
hablemos, *let us speak.*	**no hablemos,** *let us not speak.*
"no se muera vuestra merced, sino tome mi consejo, y viva muchos años,"	do not die, your grace, but take my advice, and live many years.

(*literally*, "let not your grace die; but let him take my advice, and let him live many years.")

368. The terminations **-aste, -iste,** and **-ásteis, -isteis,** of the second person singular and plural of the past definite tense are now *popularly* assimilated into *astes, istes:*—

tú habl**astes,** for *hablaste,*	thou didst speak.
tú viv**istes,** for *viviste,*	thou didst live.
habl**astes,** for *hablásteis,*	ye did speak.
com**istes,** for *comísteis,*	ye did eat.

369. The *d* of the participial ending *ado* is very generally omitted in pronunciation at the present day, not only in Madrid, but throughout Spain, in familiar or social life, not in grave discourse:—

habláo, for *hablado.* | **regaláo,** *given* (for *regalado*).

It is not convenient to call this a *vice*, since it is observed by nine-tenths of the Spanish people when speaking familiarly. Not so with *ido*, however, except among the admirers of the bull-baiting fraternity.

370. The compound tenses of all Spanish verbs, active and neuter, transitive and intransitive, are at the present day formed by means of the verb *haber* only:—

ha ido; **hemos** venido,	he has gone; we have come.
se **han** ido; **he** llegado,	they have gone off; I have arrived.

a. Anciently they said: **es** ido, *is gone;* **son** venidos, *are come;* but not at present.

Regular Euphonic Changes.

371. All verbs in **-car**, **-gar**, and **-zar** (that is, those having the stem-ending **c**, **g**, or **z**) change those letters into **qu**, **gu**, and **c**, respectively, as often as, by inflection, they meet the weak vowel *e* (see §§ 13; 15; and 28, *a*). These mutations occur in the following places only: In the first person singular of the past definite, in the present subjunctive throughout, and consequently in all those persons of the imperative that are not original (§ 367):—

a. **tocar**, *to touch.*

PAST DEF. **toqué** (*but* tocaste, tocó, tocamos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **toque, toques, toque, toquemos, toqueis, toquen.**
IMPERAT. —— (toca), **toque, toquemos,** (tocad), **toquen.**

b. **llegar**, *to arrive.*

PAST DEF. **llegué** (*but* llegaste, llegó, llegamos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **llegue, llegues, llegue, lleguemos, llegueis, lleguen.**
IMPERAT. —— (llega), **llegue, lleguemos,** (llegad), **lleguen.**

c. **alcanzar**, *to reach.*

PAST DEF. **alcancé** (*but* alcanzaste, alcanzó, alcanzamos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **alcance, alcances, alcance, alcancemos, alcanceis, alcancen.**
IMPERAT. —— (alcanza), **alcance, alcancemos,** (alcanzad), **alcancen.**

372. Verbs in **-guar** assume in like positions the *diæresis* before *e* (§§ 17; 21; 32, *a*):—

a. **averiguar**, *to investigate, to ascertain.*

PAST DEF. **averigüé** (*but* averiguaste, averiguó, averiguamos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **averigüe, averigües, averigüe, averigüemos, averigüeis, averigüen.**
IMPERAT. —— (averigua), **averigüe, averigüemos,** (averiguad), **averigüen.**

373. Verbs in **-cer** and **-cir**, preceded by a *consonant*, change the stem-ending *c* into *z* as often as, by inflection, it meets one of the strong vowels *a* or *o* (according to § 14; see also § 28; 28, *a*). This mutation occurs in the following places only: In the first person singular of the indicative present, in all the persons of the present subjunctive, and consequently in those persons of the imperative that are not original (§ 367): —

a. **vencer**, *to overcome.*

INDIC. PRES. **venzo** (*but* vences, vence, vencemos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **venza, venzas, venza, venzamos, venzais, venzan.**
IMPERAT. —— (vence), **venza, venzamos,** (venced), **venzan.**

b. **esparcir**, *to scatter.*

INDIC. PRES. **esparzo** (*but* esparces, esparce, esparcimos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **esparza, esparzas, esparza, esparzamos, esparzais, esparzan.**
IMPERAT. —— (esparce), **esparza, esparzamos,** (esparcid), **esparzan.**

374. Verbs in **-cer** and **-cir**, preceded by a *vowel*, strengthen the stem-ending by inserting before it a *z* as often as the stem meets an *a* or an *o*: —

a. **carecer**, *not to have, to be without.*

INDIC. PRES. **carezco** (*but* careces, carece, carecemos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **carezca, carezcas, carezca, carezcamos, carezcais, carezcan.**
IMPERAT. —— (carece), **carezca, carezcamos,** (careced), **carezcan.**

b. **nacer,** *to be born.*

INDIC. PRES. **nazco** (*but* naces, nace, nacemos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **nazca, nazcas, nazca, nazcamos, nazcais, nazcan.**
IMPERAT. —— (nace), **nazca, nazcamos,** (naced), **nazcan.**

c. **conocer,** *to know* (persons).

INDIC. PRES. **conozco** (*but* conoces, conoce, conocemos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **conozca, conozcas, conozca, conozcamos, conozcais, conozcan.**
IMPERAT. —— (conoce), **conozca, conozcamos,** (conoced), **conozcan.**

d. **lucir,** *to shine, to display.*

INDIC. PRES. **luzco** (*but* luces, luce, lucimos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **luzca, luzcas, luzca, luzcamos, luzcais, luzcan.**
IMPERAT. —— (luce), **luzca, luzcamos,** (lucid), **luzcan.**

Except **mecer,** *to shake, to rock;* **empecer,** *to injure;* **cocer,** *to boil* (**cuezo, cueza,** etc.); and **escocer,** *to smart* (**escuezo, escueza,** etc.), which, with their compounds, follow § 373 for the stem-ending. **Hacer,** *to do, to make,* and its compounds, change the radical **c** into *g* before a *strong* vowel (**hago,** haces; **haga, hagas,** etc.).

REMARK. — The *z* of this class is properly an organic *s*, derived, in the case of verbs in *-ecer* (*-escer*), from Latin inceptives in *-escere*, and retained throughout in old Spanish. Verbs in *-acer* and *-ocer* come from Latin stems in *asc*, *osc*. With verbs in *-ucir* alone, the *z* is euphonic: —

LATER LATIN.	OLD SPANISH.	MODERN SPANISH.
caresco;	caresco;	carezco.
carescis, *etc.;*	caresces, *etc.;*	careces, *etc.*
nasco;	nasco;	nazco.
nascis, *etc.;*	nasces, *etc.;*	naces, *etc.*
cognosco;	conosco;	conozco.
cognoscis, *etc;*	conosces, *etc.;*	conoces, *etc.*
luceo;	lusco;	luzco.
luces, *etc.*	luces, *etc.;*	luces, *etc.*

375. Verbs in **-ger** and **-gir** change the radical **g** into **j**, before an *a* or *o* (§§ 16, 33): —

a. **coger**, *to gather.*

INDIC. PRES. **cojo** (*but* coges, coge, cogemos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **coja, cojas, coja, cojamos, cojais, cojan.**
IMPERAT. —— (coge), **coja, cojamos,** (coged), **cojan.**

b. **dirigir**, *to guide.*

INDIC. PRES. **dirijo** (*but* diriges, dirige, dirigimos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **dirija, dirijas, dirija, dirijamos, dirijais, dirijan.**
IMPERAT. —— (dirige), **dirija, dirijamos,** (dirigid), **dirijan.**

376. Verbs in **-guir**, and one in **-quir**, reject the orthographic **u**, returning to the simple radical **g** and **c** hard, when, by inflection, they would stand before an *a* or an *o*:—

a. **distinguir**, *to distinguish.*

INDIC. PRES. **distingo** (*but* distingues, distingue, distinguimos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **distinga, distingas, distinga, distingamos, distingais, distingan.**
IMPERAT. —— (distingue), **distinga, distingamos,** (distinguid), **distingan.**

b. **seguir**, *to follow* (irregular).

INDIC. PRES. **sigo** (*but* *s*igues, *s*igue, seguimos, seguís, *s*iguen, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **siga, sigas, siga, sigamos, sigais, sigan.**
IMPERAT. —— (*s*igue), **siga, sigamos,** (seguid), **sigan.**

c. **delinquir**, *to transgress* (law).

INDIC. PRES. **delinco** (*but* delinques, delinque, delinquimos, *etc.*).
SUBJ. PRES. **delinca, delincas, delinca, delincamos, delincais, delincan.**
IMPERAT. —— (delinque), **delinca, delincamos,** (delinquid), **delincan.**

REMARK. — Verbs in **-güir** are somewhat irregular, and will be treated with such.

377. The necessity of all the foregoing consonant-mutations is obviously to maintain in the stem the same *sound* throughout the conjugation that it has in the infinitive, whatever be the *orthography.*

378. Verbs having the stem-ending in a double consonant (**ch**, **ll**, **ñ**), regularly absorb the vowel **i** of the diphthongs **ie**, **io**, whenever they occur in the course of inflection; that is, in the gerund, the third person singular and plural of the past definite, and in the imperfects and future of the subjunctive:—

a. **bullir**, *to boil.*

GERUND. **bullendo.**
PAST DEF. *third singular and plural*, **bulló; bulleron.**
SUBJ. IMPERF. **bullera, bulleras,** *etc.;* **bullese, bulleses,** *etc.*
SUBJ. FUTURE. **bullere, bulleres, bullere, bulléremos,** *etc.*

b. **tañer**, *to play* (of music, *tangĕre*).

GERUND. **tañendo.**
PAST DEF. **tañó, tañeron.**
SUBJ. IMPERF. **tañera, tañeras,** *etc.;* **tañese, tañeses,** *etc.*
SUBJ. FUTURE. **tañere, tañeres, tañere, tañéremos,** *etc.*

c. **plañir**, *to lament.*

GERUND. **plañendo.**
PAST DEF. **plañó, plañeron.**
SUBJ. IMPERF. **plañera, plañeras,** *etc.;* **plañese, plañeses,** *etc.*
SUBJ. FUTURE. **plañere, plañeres, plañere, plañéremos,** *etc.*

d. Those in final radical **ch** do not uniformly absorb the vowel *i*:—

e. **henchir**, *to fill* (irregular).

GERUND. **hinchiendo** and **hinchendo.**
PAST DEF. **hinchió** and **hinchó; hinchieron** and **hincheron.**
SUBJ. IMPERF. **hinchiera** and **hinchera, hinchieras** and **hincheras,** *etc.;* **hinchiese** and **hinchese, hinchieses** and **hincheses,** *etc.*
SUBJ. FUTURE. **hinchiere** and **hinchere, hinchieres** and **hincheres,** *etc.*

Progressive Form of the Active Verb.

379. Spanish verbs may be translated into English in three different ways; namely:—

by the *absolute* form,	**hablo,**	*I speak.*
by the *emphatic* form,		*I do speak.*
by the *progressive* form,		*I am speaking.*

380. The progressive form may also be expressed in Spanish by associating with the gerund of the principal verb the auxiliary verb **estar**, *to be*, or one of its substitutes **hallarse** or **encontrarse**, *to find one's self, to be;* **quedar**, *to remain;* **ir** or **andar**, *to go;* **seguir**, *to go on;* **verse**, *to see one's self:* —

estoy *or* **voy**	**hablando,**	I am	speaking.
	comiendo,		eating.
	viviendo,		living.
estás *or* **vas**	**hablando,**	thou art	speaking.
	comiendo,		eating.
	viviendo,		living.
está *or* **va**	**hablando,**	he is	speaking.
	comiendo,		eating.
	viviendo,		living.

me **hallé escribiendo,**	I found myself (I was) writing.
te **encontraste jugando,**	you found yourself playing.
quedó durmiendo,	he remained (was) sleeping.
quedamos mirando,	we stood gazing.
siguió hablando,	he went on talking.

381. Of the two verbs in Spanish for "to be," — *ser* and *estar*, — the latter is alone employed with the gerund to make up the *progressive* form of an active verb; while *ser* is the only one that serves to build the *passive* voice.

REMARK. — *Estar* is from the Latin **sto, stare,** *to stand*, with the prothetic *e*, as in **escuela** (*schola*), **estudio** (*studium*), etc. (§ 41, remark). The second stem **estuv** is derived from a Latin basis *stabui* = *staubi*, *estove*, *estuve*, after the analogy of *habui* = *haubi*, *hobe*, *hube*.

382. Conjugation of **estar**, *to be:*—

INFINITIVE.	GERUND.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
estar, *to be.*	estando, *being.*	estado, *been.*

INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.	
Present.		**Present.**	
estoy, (*sto*),	*I am.*	esté, (*stem*),	*I may be.*
estás,	*thou art.*	estés,	*thou mayst be.*
está,	*he is.*	esté,	*he may be.*
V. está,	*you are.*	V. esté,	*you may be.*
estamos,	*we are.*	estemos,	*we may be.*
estais,	*ye are.*	esteis,	*ye may be.*
están,	*they are.*	estén,	*they may be.*
VV. están,	*you are.*	VV. estén,	*you may be.*
Imperfect.		**Imperfect** (*first form*).	
estaba,	*I was* (being).	estuviera,	*I might be.*
estabas,	*thou wast.*	estuvieras,	*thou mightest be.*
estaba,	*he was.*	estuviera,	*he might be.*
V. estaba,	*you were.*	V. estuviera,	*you might be.*
estábamos,	*we were.*	estuviéramos,	*we might be.*
estábais,	*ye were.*	estuviérais,	*ye might be.*
estaban,	*they were.*	estuvieran,	*they might be.*
VV. estaban,	*you were.*	VV. estuvieran,	*you might be.*
Past Definite.		**Imperfect** (*second form*).	
estuve,	*I was.*	estuviese,	*I might be.*
estuviste,	*thou wast.*	estuvieses,	*thou mightest be.*
estuvo,	*he was.*	estuviese,	*he might be.*
V. estuvo,	*you were.*	V. estuviese,	*you might be.*
estuvimos,	*we were.*	estuviésemos,	*we might be.*
estuvísteis,	*ye were.*	estuviéseis,	*ye might be.*
estuvieron,	*they were.*	estuviesen,	*they might be.*
VV. estuvieron,	*you were.*	VV. estuviesen,	*you might be.*

INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.	
Future.		**Future.**	
estaré,	*I shall be.*	estuviere,	*I should be.*
estarás,	*thou shalt be.*	estuvieres,	*thou shouldst be.*
estará,	*he will be.*	estuviere,	*he should be.*
V. estará,	*you will be.*	V. estuviere,	*you should be.*
estarémos,	*we shall be.*	estuviéremos,	*we should be.*
estaréis,	*ye will be.*	estuviéreis,	*ye should be.*
estarán,	*they will be.*	estuvieren,	*they should be.*
VV. estarán,	*you will be.*	VV. estuvieren,	*you should be.*
Conditional (*apodasis*).		**Conditional** (*protasis*).	
estaría,	*I should be.*	estuviera	*or* estuviese, (ii) *I had been.*
estarías,	*thou wouldst be.*	estuvieras	*or* estuvieses, (ii) *I had been.*
estaría,	*he would be.*	estuviera	*or* estuviese, (ii) *I had been.*
V. estaría,	*you would be.*	V. estuviera	*or* estuviese, (ii) *I had been.*
estaríamos,	*we should be.*	estuviéramos	*or* estuviésemos, (ii) *I had been.*
estaríais,	*ye would be.*	estuviérais	*or* estuviéseis, (ii) *I had been.*
estarían,	*they would be.*	estuvieran	*or* estuviesen, (ii) *I had been.*
VV. estarían,	*you would be.*	VV. estuvieran	*or* estuviesen, (ii) *I had been.*
IMPERATIVE MODE.			
—	—	estemos,	*let us be.*
está,	*be (thou).*	estad,	*be (ye).*
esté,	*let him be.*	estén,	*let them be.*
esté V.,	*be.*	estén VV.,	*be.*
—	—	no estemos,	*let us not be.*
no estés,	*be (thou) not.*	no esteis,	*be (ye) not.*
no esté,	*let him not be.*	no estén,	*let them not be.*
no esté V.,	*do not be.*	no estén VV.,	*do not be.*

383. The compound tenses of *estar* are regularly formed by means of the verb *haber* and the past participle *estado* (*status*), so that a synopsis will suffice to suggest the full inflection :—

Infinitive Past.	**Gerund Past.**
haber estado, *to have been.*	habiendo estado, *having been.*
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PAST INDEFINITE. he estado, *I have been.*	PAST INDEFINITE. haya estado, *I may have been.*
PLUPERFECT. había estado, *I had been.*	PLUPERFECT (*first form*). hubiera estado, *I might have been.*
PAST ANTERIOR. hube estado, (when) *I had been.*	PLUPERFECT (*second form*). hubiese estado, *I might have been.*
FUTURE PERFECT. habré estado, *I shall have been.*	FUTURE PERFECT. hubiere estado, *I should have been.*
CONDITIONAL PAST. habría estado, *I should have been.*	CONDITIONAL PAST. [*been.* hub-iera, hub-iese estado, (if) *I had*

Passive Voice.

384. The proper passive voice in Spanish is formed by the auxiliary **ser**, *to be*, joined to the past participle of the verb to be conjugated.

REMARK. — *Ser* is a contraction of the old Spanish *seer*, from the Latin verb **sedēre**, *to sit*. This stem forms the gerund *siendo* (old Span. *seyendo*), the past participle *sido* (old Span. *seydo*, from *seditus* for *sessus*), and the present subjunctive *sea* (old Span. *seya*, from *sedeam*, like *haya* from *habeam*, and *vaya* from a form *vadeam*). The future and conditional of the indicative regularly follow the infinitive *ser-é*, *ser-ía*. The present indicative follows *sum*, *est*, *sumus*, *sunt*; but in the second person singular, it adopts the future *eris* (*eres*), and in the plural, a regularized *sutis* (old Span. *sodes*, modern *sois*). The imperfect indicative derives from *eram*, *eras*, etc. The preterit stem *fu* builds the past definite indicative, the imperfects and future subjunctive. Therefore, the Latin *esse* does not reappear in Spanish, except in the present and imperfect indicative.

CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE AUXILIARY VERB.

385. **Ser**, *to be.*

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	**Gerund.**	**Past Participle.**
ser, *to be.*	**siendo,** *being.*	**sido,** *been.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.	
PRESENT.		PRESENT.	
soy (sum),	*I am.*	**sea** (*sedeam*),	*I may be.*
eres (*eris* for *es*),	*thou art.*	**seas,**	*thou mayst be.*
es (est),	*he is.*	**sea,**	*he may be.*
V. es,	*you are.*	V. sea,	*you may be.*
somos (sumus),	*we are.*	**seamos,**	*we may be.*
sois (*sutis* for *estis*),	*ye are.*	**seais,**	*ye may be.*
son (sunt),	*they are.*	**sean,**	*they may be.*
VV. son,	*you are.*	VV. sean,	*you may be.*
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT (*first form*).	
era,	*I was.*	**fuera,**	*I might be.*
eras,	*thou wast.*	**fueras,**	*thou mightest be.*
era,	*he was.*	**fuera,**	*he might be.*
V. era,	*you were.*	V. fuera,	*you might be.*
éramos,	*we were.*	**fuéramos,**	*we might be.*
érais,	*ye were.*	**fuérais,**	*ye might be.*
eran,	*they were.*	**fueran,**	*they might be.*
VV. eran,	*you were.*	VV. fueran,	*you might be.*
PAST DEFINITE.		IMPERFECT (*second form*).	
fuí,	*I was.*	**fuese,**	*I might be.*
fuiste,	*thou wast.*	**fueses,**	*thou mightest be.*
fué,	*he was.*	**fuese,**	*he might be.*
V. fué,	*you were.*	V. fuese,	*you might be.*
fuimos,	*we were.*	**fuésemos,**	*we might be.*
fuísteis,	*ye were.*	**fuéseis,**	*ye might be.*
fueron,	*they were.*	**fuesen,**	*they might be.*
VV. fueron,	*you were.*	VV. fuesen,	*you might be.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.	
FUTURE.		FUTURE.	
seré,	*I shall be.*	**fuere,**	*I should be.*
serás,	*thou wilt be.*	**fueres,**	*thou shouldst be.*
será,	*he will be.*	**fuere,**	*he should be.*
V. será,	*you will be.*	V. fuere,	*you should be.*
serémos,	*we shall be.*	**fuéremos,**	*we should be.*
seréis,	*ye will be.*	**fuéreis,**	*ye should be.*
serán,	*they will be.*	**fueren,**	*they should be.*
VV. serán,	*you will be.*	VV. fueren,	*you should be.*
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*).		CONDITIONAL (*protasis*).	
sería,	*I should be.*	**fuera** *or* **fuese,**	(if) *I were,* etc.
serías,	*thou wouldst be.*	**fueras** *or* **fueses,**	
sería,	*he would be.*	**fuera** *or* **fuese,**	
V. sería,	*you would be.*	V. fuera *or* fuese,	
seríamos,	*we should be.*	**fuéramos** *or* **fuésemos,**	
seríais,	*ye would be.*	**fuérais** *or* **fuéseis,**	
serían,	*they would be.*	**fueran** *or* **fuesen,**	
VV. serían,	*you would be.*	VV. fueran *or* fuesen,	

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
—	—	**seamos,**	*let us be.*
sé,	*be (thou).*	**sed,**	*be (ye).*
sea,	*let him be.*	**sean,**	*let them be.*
sea V.,	*be.*	sean VV.,	*be.*
—	—	no **seamos,**	*let us not be.*
no seas,	*be (thou) not.*	no **seáis,**	*be (ye) not.*
no **sea,**	*let him not be.*	no **sean,**	*let them not be.*
no sea V.,	*do not be.*	no sean VV.,	*do not be.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haber **sido,** *to have been.*	habiendo **sido,** *having been.*

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.		
PAST INDEFINITE.		PAST INDEFINITE.		
he sido,	*I have been.*	**haya sido,**	*I*	*may have been,* etc.
has sido,	*thou hast been.*	**hayas sido,**	*thou*	
ha sido,	*he has been.*	**haya sido,**	*he*	
V. ha sido,	*you have been.*	V. haya sido,	*you*	
hemos sido,	*we have been.*	**hayámos sido,**	*we*	
habeis sido,	*ye have been.*	**hayáis sido,**	*ye*	
han sido,	*they have been.*	**hayan sido,**	*they*	
VV. han sido,	*you have been.*	VV. hayan sido,	*you*	
PLUPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT (*first form*).		
había sido,	*I had been.*	**hubiera sido,**	*I*	*might have been,* etc.
habías sido,	*thou hadst been.*	**hubieras sido,**	*thou*	
había sido,	*he had been.*	**hubiera sido,**	*he*	
V. había sido,	*you had been.*	V. hubiera sido,	*you*	
habíamos sido,	*we had been.*	**hubiéramos sido,**	*we*	
habíais sido,	*ye had been.*	**hubiérais sido,**	*ye*	
habían sido,	*they had been.*	**hubieran sido,**	*they*	
VV habían sido,	*you had been.*	VV. hubieran sido,	*you*	
PAST ANTERIOR.		PLUPERFECT (*second form*).		
hube sido, (when)	*I had been.*	**hubiese sido,**	*I*	*might have been,* etc.
hubiste sido,	*thou hadst been.*	**hubieses sido,**	*thou*	
hubo sido,	*he had been.*	**hubiese sido,**	*he*	
V. hubo sido,	*you had been.*	V. hubiese sido,	*you*	
hubimos sido,	*we had been.*	**hubiésemos sido,**	*we*	
hubísteis sido,	*ye had been.*	**hubiéseis sido,**	*ye*	
hubieron sido,	*they had been.*	**hubiesen sido,**	*they*	
VV. hubieron sido,	*you had been.*	VV. hubiesen sido,	*you*	
FUTURE PERFECT.		FUTURE PERFECT.		
habré sido,	*I shall*	**hubiere sido,**	*I*	*should have been,* etc.
habrás sido,	*thou wilt*	**hubieres sido,**	*thou*	
habrá sido,	*he will*	**hubiere sido,**	*he*	
V. habrá sido,	*you will*	V. hubiere sido,	*you*	
habrémos sido,	*we shall*	**hubiéremos sido,**	*we*	
habréis sido,	*ye will*	**hubiéreis sido,**	*ye*	
habrán sido,	*they will*	**hubieren sido,**	*they*	
VV. habrán sido,	*you will*	VV. hubieren sido,	*you*	
	have been.			

Indicative Mode.			Subjunctive Mode.		
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*).			CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*).		
habría sido,	*I should*	*have been.*	**hubiera**	*or* hubiese	(if) *I had been,* etc. **sido,**
habrías sido,	*thou wouldst*		**hubieras**	*or* hubieses	
habría sido,	*he would*		**hubiera**	*or* hubiese	
V. habría sido,	*you would*		V. hubiera	*or* hubiese	
habríamos sido,	*we should*		**hubiéramos**	*or* hubiésemos	
habríais sido,	*ye would*		**hubiérais**	*or* hubiéseis	
habrían sido,	*they would*		**hubieran**	*or* hubiesen	
VV. habrían sido,	*you would*		VV. hubieran	*or* hubiesen	

CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB.

386. **Ser llamado**, *to be called.*

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive Mode.	**Gerund.**
ser { llamado, a, / llamados, as, } *to be called.*	siendo { llamado, a, / llamados, as, } *being called.*
Absolute Past Participle.	
llamado, a; llamados, as, *having been called.*	
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PRESENT.	PRESENT.
"*I am called,*" etc.,	"*I may be called,*" etc.,
soy llamado, a.	sea llamado, a.
eres llamado, a.	seas llamado, a.
es llamado, a.	sea llamado, a.
somos llamados, as.	seámos llamados, as.
sois llamados, as.	seáis llamados, as.
son llamados, as.	sean llamados, as.

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
IMPERFECT. "*I was called,*" etc., era llamado, **a.** éramos llamados, **as.**	IMPERFECT (*first form*). "*I might be called,*" etc., fuera llamado, **a.** fuéramos llamados, **as.**
PAST DEFINITE. "*I was called,*" etc., fuí llamado, **a.** fuimos llamados, **as.**	IMPERFECT (*second form*). "*I might be called,*" etc., fuese llamado, **a.** fuésemos llamados, **as.**
FUTURE. "*I shall be called,*" seré llamado, **a.** serémos llamados, **as.**	FUTURE. "*I should be called,*" etc., fuere llamado, **a.** fuéremos llamados, **as.**
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*). "*I should be called,*" sería llamado, **a.** seríamos llamados, **as.**	CONDITIONAL (*protasis*). (If) "*I were called,*" fuera *or* fuese llamado, **a.** fuéramos *or* fuésemos llamados, **as.**

Imperative Mode.

—— —— sé llamado, **a**, *be called.* sea llamado, **a**, *let him be called.*	seamos llamados, **as**, *let us be* } *called.* sed llamados, **as**, *be* } sean llamados, **as**, *let them be* }

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past:—haber sido { llamado, **a**, / llamados, **as**, } *to have been called.*

Gerund Past:—habiendo sido { llamado, **a**, / llamados, **as**, } *having been called.*

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PAST INDEFINITE. "*I have been called,*" he sido llamado, **a.** hemos sido llamados, **as.**	PAST INDEFINITE. "*I may have been called,*" haya sido llamado, **a.** hayámos sido llamados, **as.**

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PLUPERFECT. "*I had been called,*" había sido llamado, **a.** habíamos sido llamados, **as.**	PLUPERFECT (*first form*). "*I might have been called,*" hubiera sido llamado, **a.** hubiéramos sido llamados, **as.**
PAST ANTERIOR. (When) "*I had been called,*" hube sido llamado, **a.** hubimos sido llamados, **as.**	PLUPERFECT (*second form*). "*I might have been called,*" hubiese sido llamado, **a.** hubiésemos sido llamados, **as.**
FUTURE PERFECT. "*I shall have been called,*" habré sido llamado, **a.** habrémos sido llamados, **as.**	FUTURE PERFECT. "*I should have been called,*" hubiere sido llamado, **a.** hubiéremos sido llamados, **as.**
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*). "*I should have been called,*" habría sido llamado, **a.** habríamos sido llamados, **as.**	CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*). (If) "*I had been called,*" hubiera *or* hubiese sido llamado, **a.** hubiéramos *or* hubiésemos sido. [llamados, **as.**

Remarks on the Passive.

387. The passive participle is varied like any adjective in *o*, and agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb: —

el niño es amado de todos,	the boy is loved by all.
la niña es mimada del ama,	the babe is petted by the nurse.
estos hombres han sido siempre muy estimados,	these men have always been very much esteemed.
las señoras habrían sido más consideradas, si no hubiesen tenido tanto orgullo y vanidad,	the ladies would have been more highly respected, if they had not had such pride and vanity.

REMARK. — The past participle with *haber* is not variable; hence *sido* and *estado* — which are never conjugated with *ser* — are incapable of any change for gender and number. The same is the case with

hab do **as an auxiliary; but when it has the meaning of an independent verb and may be inflected in the passive with *ser*, or when it is used absolutely, it assumes the regular variations of gender and number: —**

no pudieron ser **habidos**, **habidas**,	they (men or women) could not be apprehended.
habido consejo,	counsel having been taken.
habida consulta,	a consultation having been held.
habidas las mujeres,	the women having been taken.

388. *By*, after passive verbs and participles, is rendered by **por** when agency is denoted, and by **de** when the verb expresses feeling or emotion: —

este árbol ha sido plantado **por** mi padre,	this tree was set out by my father.
fulano como escritor es estimado **de** muchos,	so and so, as a writer, is esteemed by many.
comencé á pasearme como un conde, honrado **de** mis amigos, temido **de** mis enemigos, y acariciado **de** todos,	I began to parade about like an earl, honored by my friends, dreaded by my foes, and fawned upon by all.

389. When the verb *to be*, with a past participle, expresses accidental state or situation, it must be translated by **estar** or one of its substitutes. The past participle is then considered to be employed as an adjective: —

divididos **estaban** caballeros y escuderos,	knights and esquires were grouped apart.
la obra **está** ya concluida,	the work is already finished.

a. Substitutes of *estar* are, **ir** and **andar**, *to go;* **quedar** and **quedarse**, *to remain;* **encontrarse** and **hallarse**, *to find one's self;* **verse**, *to see one's self;* etc., all of which, thus employed, have the signification of *to be*, taken in a transitory or accidental sense: —

las calles **andaban** revueltas,	the streets were in an uproar.
quedó satisfecho de mi conducta,	he was satisfied with my behavior.
me ví aislado de todos,	I was isolated from everybody.

390. In general, *ser* is the only verb that serves to form the true passive voice in Spanish, and *estar* the only one of the two that unites with the gerund to make up the progressive form of the active voice. Aside from these constructions, the use of *ser* and *estar* is to be carefully distinguished: —

esta obra **ha sido traducida** del Ingles,	this work has been translated from the English.
dicha obra **está** mal **traducida**,	the said work is poorly translated.
este libro **ha sido impreso** en el siglo pasado,	this book was printed in the last century.
me parece que **anda impresa** una traduccion de dicho libro,	it appears to me that a version of said book is in print.

REMARK. — *Estar* is, however, frequently found employed in the absolute sense of "to be," reflecting the force of its Latin origin **stare**, *to stand*: —

está visto, *it is (stands) evident.*	**está** claro, *it is clear.*

391. With other words than participles, the radical distinction in the use of *ser* and *estar* may be summed up as follows: —

a. *Ser* expresses what is essential and inherent, hence permanent and absolute: —

él **es** Ingles, Español,	he is an Englishman, a Spaniard.
la casa **es** de piedra,	the house is of stone.
somos amigos suyos,	we are friends of his.
yo **soy** cojo, tú **eres** ciego,	I am lame, thou art blind.
V. **es** rico, yo **soy** pobre,	you are rich, I am poor.
no **son** felices, si bien **están** contentos por ahora,	they are not happy, although pleased for the moment.

b. Estar, on the contrary, denotes an accidental, a transitory, situation or state: —

el Inglés **está** en España,	the Englishman is in Spain.
la puerta **estaba** cerrada,	the door was shut.
el rio **estaba** helado,	the river was frozen.
la copa **está** llena,	the goblet is full.
estarán aquí mañana,	they will be here to-morrow.
estuvo de buen humor,	he was in good spirits.
son buenos; **están** buenos,	they are good; they are well.
es malo; **está** malo,	he is bad; he is ill.
es alto; **está** alto,	he is tall; he is high.
es triste; **está** triste,	he is dull; he is sad.
es cansado; **está** cansado,	he is wearisome; he is tired.
es callado; **está** callado,	he is close-mouthed — silent.
el cuarto **es** cómodo — **está** limpio,	the room is convenient — is clean.
la mujer **es** loca — **está** loca,	the woman is crazy — is frantic.
el mar **es** inmenso; la mar **está** picada (94),	the sea is immense; the sea is rough.
el yelo **es** frio; el agua **está** caliente,	ice is cold; the water is hot.

REMARK. — **Estar** in its accidental sense may often be translated by its original meaning of *to stand*. "To stand" or "stand up," referring to posture, is expressed by *ponerse de* or *en pié* (action), and *estar de* or *en pié* (state): —

estuvo á la puerta,	he stood at the door.
al entrar la dama, se puso de pié,	as the lady came in, he stood up (arose).
estuvo en pié largo rato pensando,	he stood up a long time thinking.

The Reflexive Conjugation.

392. A reflexive verb is one that is conjugated with a pronoun-object relating to the same person or thing as the subject: —

yo me lisonjéo; él **se engaña**,	I flatter myself; he deceives himself.

393. Any transitive verb may assume the reflexive form: —

a. With the pronominal object in the *accusative*, provided the verb naturally takes an accusative of the person: —

le alabo; **se alaba,**	I praise him; he praises himself.
me engaña; **me engaño,**	he deceives me; I deceive myself.

b. With the pronominal object in the *dative*, provided the verb naturally takes the dative of the person and accusative of the thing: —

te atribuyes **el poder,**	thou assumest (to thyself) the [power.

REMARK. — Under this rule belongs also a kind of *ethical* dative, which adds energy to the phrase, and may be omitted: —

me tomo **la libertad** de . . . ,	I take (for myself) the liberty to....
se compra **una prenda,**	he buys (for himself) a garment.

394. Many transitive verbs are made intransitive by assuming the reflexive form: —

abrió la puerta; la puerta **se abrió,**	he opened the door; the door opened.
rompió el vaso; el vaso **se rompió,**	he broke the glass; the glass [broke.
vende los libros; los buenos libros **se venden** caro,	he sells the books; good books sell dear.
ahogó su dolor; **me ahogo,**	he drowned his grief; I suffocate.
hace alguna cosa; no sabe lo que **se hace,**	he makes something; he does not know what he does.

395. Intransitive verbs often become reflexive with modified significations, the pronominal object frequently assuming an adverbial force: —

dormir; dormir**se,**	to sleep; to go to sleep.
sale; el cubo **se** sale,	he goes out; the pail leaks.
muere; **se** muere,	he dies; he is dying.
voy, *or* marcho,	I go, I march.

me voy *or* **me** marcho,	I go off *or* away.
ven; vénte,	come; come along.
cae; **se** cae,	he falls; it falls down.

396. Many verbs have in Spanish the reflexive form only:—

alegrar**se**; arrepentir**se**.	to rejoice; to repent.
burlar**se**; dignar**se**,	to laugh at; to deign.
figurar**se**; quejar**se**,	to imagine; to complain.

397. Many verbs that are reflexive in Spanish are expressed in English by the formal passive, and some by both the reflexive and the passive:—

disgustarse; equivocarse,	to be displeased; to be mistaken.
llamarse,	to call one's self *or* to be called.
engañarse,	to deceive one's self, to be deceived.

398. Model verb—**alabarse**, *to praise one's self.*

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive.	**Gerund.**
alabar**se**, *to praise one's self.*	alabándo**se**, *praising one's self.*
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PRESENT. "*I praise myself,*" etc., **me** alabo. **te** alabas. **se** alaba. **V. se** alaba. **nos** alabamos. **os** alabais. **se** alaban. **VV. se** alaban.	PRESENT. "*I may praise myself,*" etc., **me** alabe. **te** alabes. **se** alabe. **V. se** alabe. **nos** alabemos. **os** alabeis. **se** alaben. **VV. se** alaben.

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
IMPERFECT. "*I was praising myself*," etc., **me** alababa. **te** alababas. **se** alababa. **V. se** alababa, *etc.*	IMPERFECT (*first form*). "*I might praise myself*," etc., **me** alabara. **te** alabaras. **se** alabara. **V. se** alabara, *etc.*
PAST DEFINITE. "*I praised myself*," etc., **me** alabé. **te** alabaste. **se** alabó. **V. se** alabó, *etc.*	IMPERFECT (*second form*). "*I might praise myself*," etc., **me** alabase. **te** alabases. **se** alabase. **V. se** alabase, *etc.*
FUTURE. "*I shall praise myself*," etc., **me** alabaré. **te** alabarás. **se** alabará. **V. se** alabará, *etc.*	FUTURE. "*I should praise myself*," etc., **me** alabare. **te** alabares. **se** alabare. **V. se** alabare, *etc.*
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*). "*I should praise myself*," etc., **me** alabaría. **te** alabarías. **se** alabaría. **V. se** alabaría, *etc.*	CONDITIONAL (*protasis*). (If) "*I praised myself*," etc., **me** alab-ara, -ase. **te** alab-aras, -ases. **se** alab-ara, -ase. **V. se** alab-ara, -ase, *etc.*

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
—— ——	alabémo**nos**, *let us praise ourselves.*
alábat**e**, *praise thyself.*	alabá**os**, *praise yourselves.*
alábe**se**, *let him praise himself.*	alábe**nse**, *let them praise themselves.*
alábe**se V.**, *praise yourself.*	alábe**nse VV.**, *praise yourselves.*
—— ——	no **nos** alabemos, *let us not p. o. s.*
no **te** alabes, *do not praise thyself.*	no **os** alabeis, *do not praise y. s.*
no **se** alabe, *let him not p. himself.*	no **se** alaben, *let them not p. th. s.*
no **se** alabe V., *do not p. yourself.*	no **se** alaben VV., *do not p. y. s.*

COMPOUND TENSES.	
Infinitive Past.	**Gerund Past.**
haberse alabado, *to have praised one's self.*	habiéndose alabado, *having praised one's self.*
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PAST INDEFINITE. "*I have praised myself,*" etc., **me** he alabado. **te** has alabado. **se** ha alabado. V. **se** ha alabado. **nos** hemos alabado. **os** habeis alabado. **se** han alabado. VV. **se** han alabado.	PAST INDEFINITE. "*I may have praised myself,*" etc., **me** haya alabado. **te** hayas alabado. **se** haya alabado. V. **se** haya alabado. **nos** hayámos alabado. **os** hayáis alabado. **se** hayan alabado. VV. **se** hayan alabado, *etc.*
PLUPERFECT. "*I had praised myself,*" etc., **me** había alabado. **te** habías alabado, *etc.*	PLUPERFECT (*first form*). "*I might have praised myself,*" etc., **me** hubiera alabado. **te** hubieras alabado, *etc.*
PAST ANTERIOR. (When) "*I had praised myself,*" etc., **me** hube alabado. **te** hubiste alabado, *etc.*	PLUPERFECT (*second form*). "*I might have praised myself,*" etc., **me** hubiese alabado. **te** hubieses alabado, *etc.*
FUTURE PERFECT. "*I shall have praised myself,*" etc., **me** habré alabado. **te** habrás alabado, *etc.*	FUTURE PERFECT. "*I should have praised myself,*" etc., **me** hubiere alabado. **te** hubieres alabado, *etc.*
CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*). "*I should have praised myself,*" etc., **me** habría alabado. **te** habrías alabado, *etc.*	CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*). (If) "*I had praised myself,*" etc., **me** hubiera *or* hubieses alabado. **te** hubieras *or* hubieses alabado, *etc.*

399. Model verb — **figurarse**, *to fancy (to one's self), to imagine.*

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive Mode.	**Gerund.**
figurarse, *to imagine.*	figurándose, *imagining.*
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PRESENT.	PRESENT.
me figuro, *I imagine.*	me figure, *I may imagine.*
te figuras, *thou imaginest.*	te figures, *thou mayst imagine.*
se figura, *he imagines.*	se figure, *he may imagine.*
V. se figura, *you imagine.*	V. se figure, *you may imagine.*
nos figuramos, *we imagine.*	nos figuremos, *we may imagine.*
os figurais, *ye imagine.*	os figureis, *ye may imagine.*
se figuran, *they imagine.*	se figuren, *they may imagine.*
VV. se figuran, *you imagine.*	VV. se figuren, *you may imagine.*
IMPERFECT.	IMPERFECT (*first form*).
me figuraba, *I was imagining.*	me figurara, *I might imagine.*
PAST DEFINITE.	IMPERFECT (*second form*).
me figuré, *I imagined.*	me figurase, *I might imagine.*
FUTURE.	FUTURE.
me figuraré, *I shall imagine.*	me figurare, *I should imagine.*
CONDITIONAL (*apodasis*).	CONDITIONAL (*protasis*).
me figuraría, *I should imagine.*	me figur-ara, -ase, (if) *I imagined.*
Imperative Mode.	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
—— ——	figurémonos, *let us imagine.*
figúrate, *imagine (thou).*	figuráos, *imagine (ye).*
figúrese, *let him imagine.*	figúrense, *let them imagine.*
figúrese V., *imagine.*	figúrense VV., *imagine.*

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
—— ——	no **nos** figuremos, *let us not imagine.*
no **te** figures, *imagine (thou) not.*	no **os** figureis, *imagine (ye) not.*
no **se** figure, *let him not imagine.*	no **se** figuren, *let them not imagine.*
no **se** figure V., *do not imagine.*	no **se** figuren VV., *do not imagine.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Past.	**Gerund Past.**
haberse figurado, *to have imagined.*	habiéndose figurado, *having imagined.*

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
PAST INDEFINITE.	PAST INDEFINITE.
me he figurado, *I*	**me** haya figurado, *I*
te has figurado, *thou*	**te** hayas figurado, *thou*
se ha figurado, *he*	**se** haya figurado, *he*
V. **se** ha figurado, *you*	V. **se** haya figurado, *you*
nos hemos figurado, *we*	**nos** hayámos figurado, *we*
os habeis figurado, *ye*	**os** hayáis figurado, *ye*
se han figurado, *they*	**se** hayan figurado, *they*
VV. **se** han figurado, *you*	VV. **se** hayan figurado, *you*
have imagined.	*may have imagined.*
PLUPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT (*first form*).
me había figurado, *I had imagined.*	**me** hubiera figurado, *I might have imagined.*
PAST ANTERIOR.	PLUPERFECT (*second form*).
me hube figurado, (when) *I had imagined.*	**me** hubiese figurado, *I might have imagined.*
FUTURE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
me habré figurado, *I shall have imagined.*	**me** hubiere figurado, *I should have imagined.*
CONDITIONAL PAST (*apodasis*).	CONDITIONAL PAST (*protasis*).
me habría figurado, *I should have imagined.*	**me** hub-iera, -iese figurado, (if) *I had imagined.*

Remarks on the Reflexive Verb.

400. The pronoun-subject of the reflexive verb should be expressed when emphasis or contrast require it; but in the interrogative conjugation it must never intervene between the *compound* forms of the verb. Its ordinary position may be best gathered from a few examples:—

WITHOUT A NEGATION.	
Affirmative.	**Interrogative.**
PRESENT.	
"*I imagine*," etc.,	"*Do I imagine?*" etc.,
yo me figuro.	¿me figuro **yo**?
tú te figuras.	¿te figuras **tú**?
vos os figurais (§ 181).	¿os figurais **vos**?
él se figura.	¿se figura **él**?
ella se figura.	¿se figura **ella**?
uno se figura, *or* se figura uno.	¿se figura **uno**?
V. se figura, *or* se figura **V.**	¿se figura **V.**? *or* ¿**V.** se figura?
nosotros / **nosotras** } nos figuramos.	¿nos figuramos { **nosotros**? / **nosotras**?
vosotros / **vosotras** } os figurais.	¿os figurais { **vosotros**? / **vosotras**?
ellos / **ellas** } se figuran.	¿se figuran { **ellos**? / **ellas**?
VV. se figuran, *or* se figuran **VV.**	¿se figuran **VV.**? *or* ¿**VV.** se [figuran?
PAST INDEFINITE.	
"*I have imagined*," etc.,	"*Have I imagined?*" etc.,
yo me he figurado.	¿**me** he figurado **yo**?
tú te has figurado.	¿te has figurado **tú**?
vos os habeis figurado.	¿os habeis figurado **vos**?
él se ha figurado.	¿se ha figurado **él**?
ella se ha figurado.	¿se ha figurado **ella**?
uno se ha figurado.	¿se ha figurado **uno**?
V. se ha figurado, *or* se ha figu- [rado **V.**	¿se ha figurado **V.**? *etc.*

Affirmative.	**Interrogative.**
PAST INDEFINITE (*continued*).	
"*We have imagined,*" etc.,	"*Have we imagined?*" etc.,
nosotros / **nosotras** } nos hemos figurado.	¿nos hemos figurado { **nosotros?** / **nosotras?**
vosotros / **vosotras** } os habeis figurado.	¿os habeis figurado { **vosotros?** / **vosotras?**
ellos / **ellas** } se han figurado.	¿se han figurado { **ellos?** / **ellas?**
VV. se han figurado, *or* se han figurado VV.	¿se han figurado **VV.?** *etc.*

Imperative Mode.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
figúrate **tú.**	figurémonos **nosotros, -as.**
figuráos **vos.**	figuráos **vosotros.**
figúrese **él, ella, uno.**	figuráos **vosotras.**
figúrese **V.**	figúrense **ellos, -as.**
	figúrense **VV.**

WITH A NEGATIVE.

Affirmative.	**Interrogative.**
PRESENT.	
"*I do not imagine,*" etc.,	"*Do I not imagine?*" etc.,
yo no me figuro.	¿**no** me figuro **yo?**
tú no te figuras.	¿**no** te figuras **tú?**
él no se figura.	¿**no** se figura **él?**
V. no se figura, *or* **no se** figura V.	¿**no** se figura **V.?**
nosotros no nos figuramos.	¿**no** nos figuramos **nosotros?**
vosotros no os figurais.	¿**no** os figurais **vosotros?**
ellos no se figuran.	¿**no** se figuran **ellos?**
VV. no se figuran, *or* **no se** figuran VV.	¿**no** se figuran **VV.?**

Affirmative.	**Interrogative.**
PAST INDEFINITE.	
"*I have not imagined,*" etc.,	"*Have I not imagined?*" etc.,
yo no me he figurado.	¿**no** me he figurado **yo**?
tú no te has figurado.	¿**no** te has figurado **tú**?
él no se ha figurado.	¿**no** se ha figurado **él**?
V. no se ha figurado.	¿**no** se ha figurado **V.**?
nosotros no nos hemos figurado.	¿**no** nos hemos figurado **nosotros**?
vosotros no os habeis figurado.	¿**no** os habeis figurado **vosotros**?
ellos no se han figurado.	¿**no** se han figurado **ellos**?
VV. no se han figurado.	¿**no** se han figurado **VV.**?
Imperative Mode.	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
——	**no** no figuremos **nosotros.**
no te figures **tú.**	**no** os figureis **vosotros.**
no se figure **él.**	**no** se figuren **ellos.**
no se figure **V.**	**no** se figuren **VV.**

401. The pronoun-object regularly stands before the finite verb in all conditions of a sentence. In the literary style, however, it may be attached to the verb in the simple tenses, and to the auxiliary in the compound tenses, when the verb begins a phrase; but in such position of the object, the subject must take its place after the verb or participle: —

equivoqué**me** (yo),	I made a mistake.
equivocó**se** (él),	he made a mistake.
hé**me** equivocado (yo),	I have made a mistake.
há**se** equivocado (él),	he has made a mistake.

REMARK. — In quaint, archaic language, the auxiliary and participle often change places, and the reflexive pronoun is attached to the participle: —

'**alegrádome he** con la buena nueva que me ha venido; á la casa del Señor irémos,"	I rejoice at the glad tidings that have reached me; we will go to the house of the Lord.

The last words of Fray Luis de Granada, 1588.

402. The reflexive object is regularly attached to the infinitive and gerund, whether the phrase is affirmative or negative; the pronoun-subject, however, is more often placed after these forms:—

verme **yo**, *for me to see myself.*	viéndome **yo**, *I seeing myself.*
verse **él**, *for him to see himself.*	viéndose **él**, *he seeing himself.*
haberme visto **yo**, *for me to have seen myself.*	habiéndome visto **yo**, *I having seen myself.*
haberse visto **él**, *for him to have seen himself.*	habiéndose visto **él**, *he having seen himself.*
no verse **él**, *for him not to see himself.*	**no** viéndose **él**, *he not seeing himself.*
no haberse visto **él**, *for him not to have seen himself.*	**no** habiéndose visto **él**, *he not having seen himself.*

403. The first person plural of the imperative suppresses the *s* of the verb-ending when the pronominal object is attached to it:—

1. figurémonos *for* figurémo*s*nos,	let us imagine.
2. entendámonos *for* entendámo*s*nos,	let us understand ourselves.
3. arrepintámonos *for* arrepintámo*s*nos,	let us repent.

but **no** nos figuremo*s*, entendamo*s*, arrepintamo*s*.

404. The second person plural of the imperative loses its *d* before the attached pronoun-object:—

1. figuráos *for* figura*d*os,	imagine ye.
2. entendéos *for* entende*d*os,	understand yourselves.
3. arrepentíos *for* arrepenti*d*os,	repent ye.

Except the imperative of *irse*, — í*d*os, *go away*.

405. The reflexive verb may be strengthened by the repetition of the pronoun-object in the prepositional case joined to the adjective **mismo, a,** or **propio, a,** *self:* —

yo me alabo **á mí mismo,**	I praise myself.
ella se jacta **de sí misma,**	she boasts of herself.
VV. se burlan **de sí mismos,**	you laugh at yourselves.
vosotros os burlais **de vosotros mismos,**	ye laugh at yourselves.
nosotros nos hemos perdido **á [nosotros mismos,**	we have ruined ourselves.
tú te engañas **á tí propio,**	thou deceivest thyself.

Special Uses of the Reflexive.

406. Verbs that in Spanish are permanently reflexive, with an active or neuter signification in English, may, besides the personal inflection, be conjugated impersonally with **se,** *itself,* the dative pronoun serving to distinguish the person: —

me figúro,	(I figure to myself, *etc.*)	*or* **se me** figúra,	(it figures itself to me, *etc.*)	*I imagine.*
te figuras,		*or* **se te** figura,		*thou imaginest.*
se figura,		*or* **se le** figura,		*he imagines.*
V. se figura,		*or* **se le** figura **á V.,**		*you imagine.*
nos figuramos,		*or* **se nos** figura,		*we imagine.*
os figurais,		*or* **se os** figura,		*ye imagine.*
se figuran,		*or* **se les** figura,		*they imagine.*
VV. se figuran,		*or* **se les** figura **á VV.,**		*you imagine.*
me he figurado,		*or* **se me** ha figurado,		*I have imagined.*
te has figurado,		*or* **se te** ha figurado,		*thou hast imagined.*
se ha figurado,		*or* **se le** ha figurado,		*he has imagined.*
V. se ha figurado,		*or* **se le** ha figurado **á V.,**		*you have imagined.*
nos hemos figurado,		*or* **se nos** ha figurado,		*we have imagined.*
os habeis figurado,		*or* **se os** ha figurado,		*ye have imagined.*
se han figurado,		*or* **se les** ha figurado,		*they have imagined.*
VV. se han figurado,		*or* **se les** ha figurado **á VV.,**		*you have imagined.*

me olvidé,	*or* **se me** olvidó,	*I forgot.*
te olvidaste,	*or* **se te** olvidó,	*thou didst forget.*
se olvidó, *etc.*,	*or* **se le** olvidó, *etc.*,	*he forgot*, etc.
me había olvidado,	*or* **se me** había olvidado,	*I had forgotten.*
te habías olvidado,	*or* **se te** había olvidado,	*thou hadst forgotten.*
se había olvidado, *etc.*,	*or* **se le** había olvidado, *etc.*,	*he had forgotten*, etc.

407. In Spanish, the formal passive is comparatively little used at the present day, other less cumbersome constructions being better adapted to the genius of that language. Hence: —

408. The passive voice may be replaced by the reflexive verb used personally: —

el libro **se publicó**,	the book was issued.
la voz **se repitió**,	the voice was repeated.
su gloria **se verá**,	his glory will be seen.
el dinero **se ganó**, **se perdió**,	the money was won, was lost.
ellos **se engañan** mucho,	they are greatly deceived.
las casas **se han vendido**,	the houses have been sold.
eso no **se** puede **decir**, *or*	that cannot be said, *or*
eso no puede **decirse**,	you cannot say that.

a. In public announcements, the verb *to be* of the passive is usually omitted in English, while, in Spanish, the reflexive, which always replaces it in such cases, is given in full: —

aquí **se habla** Español,	Spanish (is) spoken here.
se cambia toda clase de moneda,	all kinds of coin (are) exchanged.
se compran valores de la déuda pública,	government securities (are) bought.
se hacen cobros y pagos,	collections and payments made.
se confeccionan tarjetas y facturas en el acto,	cards and billheads made up without delay.

se garantiza el trabajo,	work warranted.
se cierra los Domingos,	closed on Sundays.
se prohibe fijar carteles,	"post no bills."
no **se admiten** imposiciones despues de las cuatro,	no deposits received after five o'clock.

409. The passive voice may also be replaced by the reflexive verb used impersonally: —

se dice; se ha dicho,	it is said; it has been said.
se me engaña,	I am deceived.
se me ha engañado,	I have been deceived.
se le permite; se le permitió,	he is allowed; he was allowed.
se nos habia engañado,	we had been deceived.
se les habrá permitido,	they will have been allowed.

Literally: it says itself, it has said itself, it deceives itself to me, it has deceived itself to me, *etc.*

410. The reflexive used impersonally is a substitute of the third person plural active, and is preferred when a vague or indirect reference to persons is desirable. This favorite construction has grown out of the national propensity to equivocation: —

no **se me entiende** (*or* no me *entienden*),	I am not understood (Fr. *on ne me comprend pas*).
se le mandó salir (*or* le *mandaron* salir),	he was ordered to go out (Fr. *on lui ordonna de sortir*).
se me dice (*or* me *dicen*),	I am told (Fr. *on me dit*).
se me ha dicho (*or* me *han dicho*),	I have been told (Fr. *on m'a dit*).

REMARK. — It is customary to regard this *se* as an indefinite subject — *they*, *you*, *one* — like the French *on* (*homme*) and Germanic *man*; but an accusative cannot be a nominative, and the only true explanation is to regard the verb, as it is, impersonal, representing such Latin constructions as *itur*, *ventum est*, *invidetur mihi*, etc.

411. So also in the redundant construction: —

á él se **le** mató á pedradas,	he was stoned to death,
(le *mataron* á pedradas),	(they stoned him to death).
á tales hombres se **les** engaña fácilmente,	such men are easily deceived,
(á tales hombres *engañan*	(they deceive such men [easily).
á los buenos príncipes no se **les** ha de perder la vergüenza,	we are not to lose our respect for good princes.
á nadie se **le** puede imputar esta fealdad,	such a vile action can be imputed to no man.

412. The following examples of passive constructions will serve to illustrate and fix the foregoing rules: —

1.	soy engañado, me engaño, se me engaña,	*I am deceived*, etc.	1.	he sido engañado, me he engañado, se me ha engañado,	*I have been deceived*, etc.
2.	eres engañado, te engañas, se te engaña,		2.	has sido engañado, te has engañado, se te ha engañado,	
3.	es engañado, se engaña, se le engaña,		3.	ha sido engañado, se ha engañado, se le ha engañado,	
3.	V. es engañado, V. se engaña, se le engaña á V.,		3.	V. ha sido engañado, V. se ha engañado, se le ha engañado á V.,	
1.	somos engañados, nos engañamos, se nos engaña,		1.	hemos sido engañados, nos hemos engañado, se nos ha engañado,	
2.	sois engañados, os engañais, se os engaña,		2.	habeis sido engañados, os habeis engañado, se os ha engañado,	
3.	son engañados, se engañan, se les engaña,		3.	han sido engañados, se han engañado, se les ha engañado,	
3.	VV. son engañados, VV. se engañan, se les engaña á VV.,		3.	VV. han sido engañados, VV. se han engañado, se les ha engañado á VV.,	

Reciprocal Verbs.

413. When reflexive verbs in the plural refer to two or more persons distributively, they are called reciprocal verbs, and the object-pronoun is rendered *each other* when two are indicated, and *one another* if reference is made to several: —

nos alabamos,	we praise each other, *or* one another.
os alabais,	ye praise each other, *or* one another.
se aman,	they love each other, *or* one another.
alabémonos,	let us praise one another.
amáos el uno al otro,	love each other.
amáos los unos á los otros,	love one another.
ámense, *or* que se amen,	let them love each other, *etc.*
estos dos hermanos se abrazan cariñosamente,	these two brothers (*or* this brother and sister [§ 106]) embrace each other affectionately.
todos los indivíduos de esta familia se quieren entrañablemente.	all the members of this family are passionately fond of one another.

414. The reciprocal use of the reflexive verb may be strengthened by the term **el uno — el otro,** *fem.* **la una — la otra; los unos — los otros,** *fem.* **las unas — las otras;** or **uno — otro,** etc.: —

consoláos **los unos á los otros** en estas palabras,	comfort ye one another with these words.
no os burleis **los unos** de **los otros,**	do not laugh at (make fun of) one another.
hijas, no os impacienteis **la una** [**con la otra,**	children, don't tease each other.
veo que las dos hemos nacido **la una para la otra,**	I perceive that we two were born for each other.
sentémonos **uno junto á otro,**	let us sit near each other.
nos felicitarémos **unos á otros** con ese motivo,	we shall congratulate one another on account of it.

The Impersonal Verb.

415. Impersonal verbs are properly such as are employed in the third person singular only. Their subject, which in English is *it*, cannot be expressed in Spanish when an operation of nature is described; but otherwise, the neuter **ello**, *it*, *that*, is occasionally admissible if intensity or emphasis require:—

nieva; truena; graniza,	it snows; it thunders; it hails.
llueve; amanece; anochece,	it rains; it dawns; it grows dark.
consta; **ello** consta,	it is proven, *or* it is known.
importa; **ello** importa,	it is important, *or* it matters.
ello es que . . . ,	the fact is that . . . (it is that . . .).

416. Impersonal verbs are inflected according to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive, to wit:—

417. **Nevar**, nevando, nevado, *to snow.*

Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
nieva, *it snows.*	**nieve,** *it may snow.*
nevaba, *it was snowing.*	**nevara,** *it might snow.*
nevó, *it snowed.*	**nevase,** *it might snow.*
nevará, *it will snow.*	**nevare,** *it should snow.*
nevaría, *it would snow.*	**nevara,** etc., (if) *it snowed.*

Imperative Mode:—nieve, *or* **que nieve,** *let it snow.*

Indicative Mode.		**Subjunctive Mode.**	
ha nevado, *it has*	*snowed.*	**haya nevado,** *it may*	*have snowed.*
había nevado, *it had*		**hubiera nevado,** *it might*	
hubo nevado, (when) *it had*		**hubiese nevado,** *it might*	
habrá nevado, *it will have*		**hubiere nevado,** *it should*	
habría nevado, *it would have*		**hubiera nevado,** (if) *it had s.*	

418. Llover, lloviendo, llovido, *to rain.*

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
llueve, *it rains.*	**llueva,** *it may rain.*
llovía, *it was raining.*	**lloviera,** *it might rain.*
llovió, *it rained.*	**lloviese,** *it might rain.*
lloverá, *it will rain.*	**lloviere,** *it should rain.*
llovería, *it would rain.*	**lloviera,** (if) *it rained.*
Imperative Mode:—llueva, *or* **que llueva,** *let it rain.*	
Indicative Mode.	**Subjunctive Mode.**
ha llovido, *it has*	**haya llovido,** *it may*
había llovido, *it had*	**hubiera llovido,** *it might*
hubo llovido, (when) *it had*	**hubiese llovido,** *it might*
habrá llovido, *it will have*	**hubiere llovido,** *it should*
habría llovido, *it would have*	**hubiera llovido,** (if) *it had r.*
rained.	*have rained.*

419. Amanecer, amaneciendo, amanecido, *to dawn.*

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
amanece, *it dawns.*	**amanezca** (374), *it may*
amanecía, *it was dawning.*	**amaneciera,** *it might*
amaneció, *it dawned.*	**amaneciese,** *it might*
amanecerá, *it will dawn.*	**amaneciere,** *it should*
amanecería, *it would dawn.*	**amaneciera,** (if) *it dawned.*
	dawn.
Imperative Mode:—que amanezca, *let it dawn.*	

420. Verbs that are naturally impersonal may assume a personal signification and inflection:—

amanecí en Cádiz,	*it was morning* when *I* reached Cadiz.
anochecimos en Madrid,	*night had set in* when *we* reached Madrid, *or* we reached Madrid at night.

llovían palos sobre nosotros,	blows came down upon us *in quick succession.*
ántes eran amigos; pero hace un año que **tronaron,**	they were formerly good friends; but they fell out *boisterously* a year ago.

421. Many personal verbs are temporarily employed in impersonal senses: —

bastar, *to be sufficient.*	**basta,** *it suffices.*
parecer, *to appear.*	**parece,** *it seems.*
convenir, *to agree, to suit.*	**conviene,** *it suits, behooves.*
baste decir,	let it suffice to say.
no **convenía,**	it was not expedient.

a. Such verbs may also be used in the third person plural as personal verbs: —

no **bastan** explicaciones,	explanations are not sufficient.
las condiciones me **parecen** duras,	the conditions appear to me (to be) severe.
no me **convendrán** tales medidas,	such measures will not suit me.

422. A number of verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural. Such properly belong to defective verbs: —

acaece — acaecen, / **acontece — acontecen,**	happens — happen.

423. The English impersonal expression "*it is*" is variously rendered in Spanish: —

424. By *es*: —

a. With adjectives, nouns, and adverbs.

es cierto; **es** tarde,	it is sure; it is late.
es preciso; **es** menester,	it is necessary.
es verdad; **es** mentira,	it is true; it is false.
es de dia; así **es,**	it is daylight; so it is.

b. To denote the hour, only when that is *one* or any of its divisions. With all other hours, "it is" must be expressed by *son:* —

es la una — la una y media,	it is one — half past one.
son las dos — las diez,	it is two — ten (o'clock).

425. By *está*, to denote accidental state: —

está oscuro; **está** lloviendo,	it is dark; it is raining.

426. By *hace:* —

a. When reference is made to the weather or temperature: —

¿qué tal tiempo **hace**?	what sort of weather is it?
hace buen tiempo,	it is fine weather.
hace sol; **hace** aire,	it is sunny; it is windy.
hace frio; **hace** calor,	it is cold; it is warm.

b. Idiomatically, with reference to time: —

hace ocho dias que no le veo,	it is a week since I have seen him; *i.e.*, I have not seen him in a week.
¿cuánto tiempo **hace** que trabaja V. aquí?	how long is it that you have been working here? *i.e.*, how long have you been working here?

427. By *hay*, with reference to distance: —

¿cuánto **hay** de aquí al palacio?	how far is it from here to the palace?

428. The English expressions "*it is I*," "*it is thou*," "*it is he*," etc., are given in Spanish by the regular inflection of the verb "to be" with the subject-pronoun: —

yo soy; **tú** eres; **él** es,	it is I; it is thou; it is he.
¿es **ella**? somos **nosotros**,	is it she? it is we.
¿son **ellos**? **ellos** son,	is it they? it is they.

a. The same construction obtains when a relative follows: —

yo soy **quien,** *or* **el que,**	it is I who, *or* I am the one who.
no somos nosotros **los que,**	it is not we who, *or* we are not the ones who.

429. "It is better" is translated by **más vale,** *it is worth more:* —

más vale esquivarlo,	it is better to evade it.
más vale tarde que nunca,	(it is) better late than never.
más vale pájaro en mano que buitre volando,	a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.

(*literally*, a bird in hand is better than a vulture on the wing.)

IRREGULAR VERBS.

430. An irregular verb is properly one that deviates in any respect from the inflection of the regular models, *hablar*, *comer*, and *vivir*.

REMARK. — There are a large number of irregular verbs in Spanish, — about 850, including compounds, — the most of which, however, are mere variations involving uniform laws of orthography and accent, to subserve the purposes of harmony, and to satisfy the national instinct for vowel-expansion. They may be easily reduced to a few classes with appropriate representatives, to which the general alphabetic Index of irregular verbs refers. Hence the following definitions of technical terms, embracing principles of wide application, will greatly assist the learner to master quickly the whole subject.

431. Irregular verbs are to be inflected, according to class and conjugation, on the three stems — present, preterit, and future — as bases. See § 360.

432. The original stem of a verb is found by suppressing the characteristic infinitive-ending. That of the future and conditional of the indicative (**future stem**), is the full infinitive itself (§§ 359; 359, *a*): —

busc-ar, *to look for.*	**buscar-é**, *I shall look for.*
busc-ó, *he looked for.*	**buscar-ía**, *I should look for.*

433. In the regular verb the original stem is the same throughout; but in the irregular verb each group of tenses may have a distinct form of the original stem, or three distinct stems:—

poder, *to be able.*	**ir**, *to go.*
original stem, *pod;*	original stem, *i* and *va;*
present stem, *pod, pued;*	present stem, *i* and *v;*
preterit stem, *pud;*	preterit stem, *fu* (verb *to be*);
future stem, *podr.*	future stem, *ir.*

434. **Tonic stems** are such as have the primary stress or tonic accent upon them in any given form:—

tēng-ŏ, *I have.*	**vēng-ŏ**, *I come.*
tīēn-ĕs, *thou hast.*	**vīēn-ĕs**, *thou comest.*
tīēn-ĕ, *he has.*	**vīēn-ĕ**, *he comes.*
tīēn-ĕn, *they have.*	**vīēn-ĕn**, *they come.*
tŭv-ĕ, *I had.*	**vĭn-ĕ**, *I came.*

435. **Atonic stems** are such as have but a secondary accent, the primary stress being laid on the personal ending:—

tĕn-ēmos, *we have.*	**vĕn-īmos**, *we come.*
tĕn-ēis, *ye have.*	**vĕn-ís**, *ye come.*
tŭv-īste, *thou hadst.*	**vĭn-īmos**, *we came.*

436. A **stem-vowel** is the characteristic vowel in any radical, and always stands nearest to the infinitive ending:—

acert-ar, **adquir-ir.** | **sonre-ir.** | **recost-ar**, **redargŭ-ir.**

437. **Strong stems** are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the strong vowels *a* or *o*:—

teng-o,	*I have.*	**veng-o,**	*I come.*
teng-a,	*I (may) have.*	**veng-as,**	*thou mayst come.*
teng-āmos,	*let us have.*	**veng-an,**	*they may come.*
tuv-o,	*he had.*	**vin-o,**	*he came.*

438. **Weak stems** are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the weak vowels *e* or *i*:—

dec-ir,	*to say, to tell.*	¿**rí-este**?	*dost thou laugh?*
dec-imos,	*we say — tell.*	se **ri-en,**	*they laugh.*
dic-es,	*thou sayest — tellest.*	nos **re-imos,**	*we laugh.*
dic-iendo,	*saying, telling.*	**sab-iendo,**	*knowing.*

439. The following orthographic changes are to be noted:—

Strong stems	ending	in	**z**	become	weak	stems	ending	in **c.**
"	"	"	**c**	"	"	"	"	**qu.**
"	"	"	**g**	"	"	"	"	**gu.**
"	"	"	**gu**	"	"	"	"	**gü.**
Weak stems	ending	in	**c**	become	strong	stems	ending	in **z.**
"	"	"	**qu**	"	"	"	"	**c.**
"	"	"	**g**	"	"	"	"	**j.**
"	"	"	**gu**	"	"	"	"	**g.**

440. The expansion of a vowel into a diphthong may be called *diphthongization.* In verbs, the diphthong of the vowel *a* is *ai*; that of *e*, *ie*; and of *o*, *ue.*

441. The diphthongs *ie* and *ió* are said to be *consonantized* when the first vowel composing them is changed into *y* consonant, pronounced as in *year.*

442. The diphthong *ie* is consonantized:—

a. When it is initial in a tonic stem:—

err-ar — *ierro*, written **yerro,** but **err-āmos** because atonic.
ergu-ir — *iergo*, written **yergo,** but **ergu-īmos** because atonic.
ir — (*iendo*), **yendo,** *going.*

b. When it is initial in a verbal ending after a stem-vowel; likewise *ió* when final in the same case: —

cre-er — (*cre-iendo*), **creyendo.**
—— (*cre-ió*), **creyó.**
tra-er — (*tra-iendo*), **trayendo.**
inclu-ir — (*inclu-iendo*), **incluyendo.**

ca-er — (*ca-iendo*), **cayendo.**
—— (*ca-ió*), **cayó.**
le-er — (*le-iendo*), **leyendo.**
argü-ir — (*argü-iendo*), **arguyendo.**

443. The *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* is absorbed by foregoing double consonants — *ll*, *ñ*, (*ch* usually), and *j* when it represents the archaic *x*, formerly pronounced *sh*: —

ceñ-ir — **ciñendo, ciñó.**
dijera, anciently *dixera.*

tañer — **tañendo, tañó.**
trajese, anciently *traxese.*

444. The diphthong *ue* is said to be *aspirated* when it assumes an *h*, which regularly occurs if the diphthong is initial and has the tonic accent: —

ol-er — *uelo*, written **huelo**; but **ol-ēmos**, because atonic.

Remarks on the Present Stem.

445. Tonic stems, whether weak or strong, are often strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative: —

a. By the expansion of the radical vowel *e* into *ie*, and of *o* into *ue*: —

pens-ar — **pienso,** *I think.*
ten-er — **tiene,** *he has.*

volv-er — **vuelvo,** *I return.*
mov-er — **mueve,** *he moves.*

b. By the mutation of the original stem-vowel *e* to *i*: —

serv-ir — **sirvo,** *I serve.*
—— **sirve,** *he serves.*
but *serv*īmos, *we serve.*

seg-uir — **sigo,** *I follow.*
—— **sigue,** *he follows.*
but *segu*īmos, *we follow.*

446. Strong stems, whether tonic or atonic, are likewise frequently strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative: —

a. By changing the original stem-vowel *e* to *i*: —

serv — **sirva**, *I* or *he may serve.*
—— **sirvāmos**, *we may serve.*

seg — **siga**, *I* or *he may follow.*
—— **sigāmos**, *let us follow.*

b. By adding a *g* to the original stem ending in a consonant, in the following verbs: —

as-ir — **asg**-o, **asg**-a, *I seize.*
pon-er — **pong**-o, **pong**-a, *I place.*
sal-ir — **salg**-o, **salg**-a, *I go out.*

ten-er — **teng**-o, **teng**-a, *I have.*
val-er — **valg**-o, **valg**-a, *I am worth.*
ven-ir — **veng**-o, **veng**-a, *I come.*

REMARK. — This *g* is the expression of the Latin *e* and *i* enounced with a consonant power. Thus: —

valeo — *valyo*, Span. *valgo.*
valeam — *valya*[*m*], Span. *valga.*

venio — *venyo*, Span. *vengo.*
veniam — *venya*[*m*], Span. *venga.*

So *asgo*, Lat. **adscio**; *pongo*, Lat. **ponio** for **pono**; *salgo*, Lat. **salio**; *tengo*, Lat. **teneo.** The Portuguese still preserves the Latin *y* sound, graphically represented by *lh* and *nh*: *valho*, *valha*; *venho*, *venha*; etc.

c. By adding a *g* to the diphthongized stem ending in a vowel, in the following verbs: —

ca-er — **cāig**-o, **cāig**-a, *I fall.*
tra-er — **trāig**-o, **trāig**-a, *I bring.*
o-ir — **ōig**-o, **ōig**-a, *I hear.*

d. By diphthongizing the medial stem-vowel *a* into *ai*, and reducing it graphically to its corresponding simple vowel (*ai* = *e*), in the following verbs: —

cab-er — (*caip*) **quep**-o (§ 13), **quep**-a (*Lat.* capio, capiam), *I hold.*
sab-er — (*saip*) **se**[p-o], **sep**-a (*Lat.* sapio, sapiam), *I know.*
hab-er — (*haib*) **he**[b-o], but **hay**-a (*Lat.* habeo, habeam), *I have.*

The Portuguese preserves the diphthong in *caib*-o, *caib*-a; *saib*-a

e. By changing the final stem-consonant *c* into *g*, in

hac-er — **hag**-o, **hag**-a (Latin, *facio*, *faciam*).	dec-ir — **dig**-o, **dig**-a (Latin, *dico*, *dicam*).

For the letter *z*, as a mode of *euphonizing* certain strong stems, see § 374.

447. The verbs **ver**, *to see*, and **ser**, *to be*, find their strong stem in the archaic infinitives *veer* and *seer:* —

ve-er — **ve**-o, **ve**-a, *I see.*	se-er — **se**-a, *I may be.*

448. Atonic stems usually contain the original radical before *weak* vowels, and the strengthened radical or modified vowel before *strong* vowels: —

sab-ēis, *ye know.*	**sep**-āis, *ye may know.*
ten-ēmos, *we have.*	**teng**-āmos, *let us have.*
mor-īmos, *we live.*	**mur**-āmos, *we may die.*

449. Four verbs are expanded in the first person singular of the present indicative by assuming a final *y*: —

ser,	*to be*,	ancient *so;*	modern	**soy**,	*I am.*
estar,	*to be*,	*estó;*		**estoy**,	*I am.*
dar,	*to give*,	*do;*		**doy**,	*I give.*
ir,	*to go.*	*vo;*		**voy**,	*I go.*

450. Eight verbs make their imperative second person singular in abbreviated forms: —

valer, *to be worth;*	**val** and **vale**,	*be worth;*	no **valgas.**
salir, *to go out;*	**sal** (*for* sale),	*go out;*	no **salgas.**
venir, *to come;*	**ven** (*for* viene),	*come;*	no **vengas.**
tener, *to have;*	**ten** (*for* tiene),	*have;*	no **tengas.**
poner, *to put, place;*	**pon** (*for* pone),	*place;*	no **pongas.**
hacer, *to make, to do;*	**haz** (*for* hace),	*make, do;*	no **hagas.**
decir, *to say, to tell;*	**dí** (*for* dice),	*say, tell;*	no **digas.**
ir, *to go;*	**ve** (*for* va),	*go;*	no **vayas.**

451. The imperfect indicative is always regularly formed from the original stem, except in the following verbs: —

ir — **iba,** *I was going* (first conj.). | ver — **veía** (*anc.* via), *I was seeing.*
ser — **era,** *I was* (*being*).

Tonic Preterit Stems.

452. Fifteen verbs have preterit stems, which are tonic in the past definite first and third persons singular, with the respective endings *e* and *o* instead of *é* — *ó*, or *í* — *ió*. In the other persons and tenses of this stem, the tonic accent is, as usual, on the endings, which are regular. Thus: —

vīne,	*I came.*	**pūse,**	*I placed.*
vinīste,	*thou camest.*	**pusīste,**	*thou placedst.*
vīno,	*he came.*	**pūso,**	*he placed.*
vinīmos,	*we came.*	**pusīmos,**	*we placed.*
vinīsteis,	*ye came.*	**pusísteis,**	*ye placed.*
viniēron,	*they came.*	**pusiēron,**	*they placed.*
viniēra,	*I might come.*	**pusiēra,**	*I might place.*
viniēse,	*I might come.*	**pusiēse,**	*I might place.*
viniēre,	*I should come.*	**pusiēre,**	*I should place.*

REMARK. — These tonic preterit stems have retained more or less distinctly the form of the Latin irregular perfects as they must have been popularly employed in the Iberian peninsula. Therefore the vowels of the stem and termination were attracted or exchanged, and the diphthongs arising therefrom were reduced to simple vowels, according to the custom of the language. For example: s*ap*ui was attracted to *sáupi* and the diphthong changed to *o*, — **sope,** — precisely as *aurum* makes **oro,** *gold.* The modern speech, since the close of the fourteenth century, has preferred the stem-vowel *u* to *o* — **supe, tuve, puse,** etc. The Portuguese retains the ancient *o*, lengthened according to its phonological system into *ou* (*ó-ŭ*), in *houve*, *soube*, *coube*, and *trouxe* (trów-shĕ), which correspond to the Castilian *hube*, *supe*, *cupe*, *truje*.

453. List of tonic preterit stems, as found in the first and third persons singular of the past definite indicative, together with their origin and formation: —

	Infinitive.	**Preterit.** *First and third sing.*	**Old Spanish.**	**Modern Spanish.**
LAT.	habēre	*habui*, *habuit*		
SP.	**habēr**	*hábubi*, *hábubu*	hobe, hobo	**hūbe, hūbo.**
		AND FOUR BY ANALOGY WITH *haber:* —		
LAT.	tenēre	(*tabui*, *tabuit*)		
SP.	**tenēr**	*tábubi*, *tábubu*	tove, tovo	**tūve, tūvo.**
LAT.	stare	(*stabui*, *stabuit*)		
SP.	**estar**	*stábubi*, *stábubu*	estove, -ovo	**estūve, estūvo.**
LAT.	ambŭlare	(*andabui*, -*buit*)		
SP.	**andar**	*andábubi*, -*bu*	andove, -ovo	**andūve, andūvo.**
LAT.	capĕre	(*capui*, *capuit*)		
SP.	**cabēr**	*cáupi*, *cáupu*	cope; copo	**cūpe, cūpo.**
LAT.	sapĕre	*sapui*, *sapuit*		
SP.	**sabēr**	*sáupi*, *sáupu*	sope, sopo	**sūpe, sūpo.**
LAT.	ponĕre	*posui*, *posuit*		
SP.	**ponēr**	*póusi*, *póusu*	pose, poso	**pūse, pūso.**
LAT.	(potĕre)	*potui*, *potuit*		
SP.	**podēr**	*póuti*, *póutu*	pode, podo	**pūde, pūdo.**
LAT.	facĕre	*feci*, *fecit*		
SP.	**hacēr**	*fice*, *fisu*	fice, fiço	**hīce, hīzo.**
LAT.	venire	*veni*, *venit*		
SP.	**venir**	*vine*, *vinu*	vine, vino	**vīne, vīno.**
LAT.	quaerĕre	(*quaesi*), *quaesivit*		
SP.	**querēr**	*quise*, *quisu*	quise, quiso	**quīse, quīso.**
LAT.	vidēre	*vidi*, *vidit*		
SP.	**ver** (*veer*)	*vidi*, *vidu*	vide, vido	**ví, vió** (*regular*).
LAT.	dicĕre	*dixi*, *dixit*		
SP.	**decir**	*dixi*, *dixu*	dixe, dixo	**dīje, dījo.**
LAT.	ducĕre	*duxi*, *duxit*		
SP.	*con*-**ducīr**	*duxi*, *duxu*	-duxe, -duxo	**-dūje, -dūjo.**
LAT.	trahĕre	*traxi*, *traxit*		
SP.	**traēr**	*traxi*, *traxu*	traxe, traxo	trāje, trājo.
(anal. with *ducĕre*)		*truxi*, *truxu*	truxe, truxo	trūje, trūjo.

Future Stems.

454. Ten verbs form their future stem by rejecting the vowel of the infinitive-ending, five of which replace it by a phonetic *d* (§ 39):—

caber — **cabr**-é, **cabr**-ía.		salir — **saldr**-é, **saldr**-ía.	
haber — **habr**-é, **habr**-ía.		valer — **valdr**-é, **valdr**-ía.	
poder — **podr**-é, **podr**-ía.		poner — **pondr**-é, **pondr**-ía.	
querer — **querr**-é, **querr**-ía.		tener — **tendr**-é, **tendr**-ía.	
saber — **sabr**-é, **sabr**-ía.		venir — **vendr**-é, **vendr**-ía.	

REMARK. — The three last stems were anciently euphonized by metathesis of the *nr*, instead of by intercalating the orthographic *d*:—

poner — po*nr* — po*rn*-é, po*rn*-ía. | tener — te*nr* — te*rn*-é, te*rn*-ía.
venir — ve*nr* — ve*rn*-é, ve*rn*-ía.

455. Two verbs form their future stem from primitive infinitives that no longer exist:—

decir — *dir* — **dir**-é, **dir**-ía. | hacer — *far* — **har**-é, **har**-ía.

The latter verb is from Lat. *facĕre*, Ital. *fare*, and Fr. *faire*.

In the following inflections, only deviations from the three model conjugations, *hablar*, *comer*, *vivir*, are printed in **heavy type**.

To show where the stress falls in forms of the verb that do not admit the graphic accent, a long mark is placed over the vowel of the tonic syllable.

First Class.

456. The characteristic of this class is the expansion of the stem-vowels *e* and *o* into their corresponding diphthongs *ie*, *ue*, when the accent falls on the *radical*, or, in other words, when it is *tonic* (§§ 19; 19, *a*). This

can only occur throughout the singular, and in the third person plural, of the present indicative, subjunctive, and imperative; for, in all other persons and tenses, the accent lies on the *verbal ending.*

E STEMS. — FIRST CONJUGATION.

457. Pensar, pensando, pensado, *to think.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **piens** (tonic), ***pens*** (atonic).

PRES. IND.	**piens**-o	**piens**-as	**piens**-a	pens-āmos	pens-āis	**piens**-an.
PRES. SUBJ.	**piens**-e	**piens**-es	**piens**-e	pens-ēmos	pens-ēis	**piens**-en.
IMPERAT.	——	**piens**-a	**piens**-e	pens-ēmos	pens-ād	**piens**-en.
IMPERF.	pens-āba	-abas	-aba	-ábamos	-ábais	-aban.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	pens-é	-aste	-ó	-āmos	-ásteis	-āron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pens-āra	-āras	-āra	-áramos	-árais	-āran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pens-āse	-āses	-āse	-ásemos	-áseis	-āsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pens-āre	-āres	-āre	-áremos	-áreis	-āren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	pensar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	pensar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

458. Acertar, acertando, acertado, *to hit the mark.*

PRES. IND.	**acierto**	**aciertas**	**acierta**	acertāmos	acertāis	**aciertan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**acierte**	**aciertes**	**acierte**	acertēmos	acertēis	**acierten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**acierta**	**acierte**	acertēmos	acertād	**acierten.**

acertāba; acerté, acertāra, acertāse, acertāre; acertar-é, -ía.

459. Alentar, alentando, alentado, *to encourage.*

PRES. IND.	**aliento**	**alientas**	**alienta**	alentamos	alentais	**alientan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**aliente**	**alientes**	**aliente**	alentemos	alenteis	**alienten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**alienta**	**aliente**	alentemos	alentad	**alienten.**

alentaba; alenté, alentara, alentase, alentare; alentar-é, -ía.

460. Cerrar, cerrando, cerrado, *to shut.*

PRES. IND.	**cierro**	**cierras**	**cierra**	cerramos	cerrais	**cierran.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**cierre**	**cierres**	**cierre**	cerremos	cerreis	**cierren.**
IMPERAT.	——	**cierra**	**cierre**	cerremos	cerrad	**cierren.**

cerraba; cerré, cerrara, cerrase, cerrare; cerrar-é, -ía.

461. Apretar, apretando, apretado, *to grasp tightly.*

PRES. IND.	**aprieto**	**aprietas**	**aprieta**	apretamos	apretais	**aprietan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**apriete**	**aprietes**	**apriete**	apretemos	apreteis	**aprieten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**aprieta**	**apriete**	apretemos	apretad	**aprieten.**

apretaba; apreté, apretara, apretase, apretare; apretar-é, -ía.

462. Atestar, atestando, atestado, *to cram.*

PRES. IND.	**atiesto**	**atiestas**	**atiesta**	atestamos	atestais	**atiestan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**atieste**	**atiestes**	**atieste**	atestemos	atesteis	**atiesten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**atiesta**	**atieste**	atestemos	atestad	**atiesten.**

atestaba; atesté, atestara, atestase, atestare; atestar-é, -ía.

463. Sembrar, sembrando, sembrado, *to sow.*

PRES. IND.	**siembro**	**siembras**	**siembra**	sembramos	sembrais	**siembran.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**siembre**	**siembres**	**siembre**	sembremos	sembreis	**siembren.**
IMPERAT.	——	**siembra**	**siembre**	sembremos	sembrad	**siembren.**

sembraba; sembré, sembrara, sembrase, sembrare; sembrar-é, -ía.

464. Helar, helando, helado, *to freeze.*

PRES. IND.	**hielo**	**hielas**	**hiela**	helamos	helais	**hielan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**hiele**	**hieles**	**hieles**	helemos	heleis	**hielen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**hiela**	**hiele**	helemos	helad	**hielen.**

helaba; helé, helara, helase, helare; helaré, helaría.

Euphonic Changes.

465. In the verb *errar*, the stem-vowel being initial, the vowel *i* of the diphthong is consonantized, that is, written and pronounced *y* consonant (§ 442, *a*): —

466. Errar, errando, errado, *to miss.*

PRES. IND.	**yerro**	**yerras**	**yerra**	errāmos	errāis	**yerran.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**yerre**	**yerres**	**yerre**	errēmos	errēis	**yerren.**
IMPERAT.	——	**yerra**	**yerre**	errēmos	errād	**yerren.**

errāba; erré, errāra, errāse, errāre; erraré, erraría.

467. Verbs of this class in *-gar* and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *e*, observe the regular orthographic changes explained in § 371:—

468. Negar, negando, negado, *to deny.*

PRES. IND.	**niego**	**niegas**	**niega**	negāmos	negāis	**niegan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**niegue**	**niegues**	**niegue**	**neguēmos**	**neguēis**	**nieguen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**niega**	**niegue**	**neguēmos**	negād	**nieguen.**

negāba; **negué,** negāste, *etc.;* negāra, negāse, negāre; *etc.*

469. Empezar, empezando, empezado, *to begin.*

PR. IN.	**empiezo**	**empiezas**	**empieza**	empezāmos	empezāis	**empiezan.**
PR. SJ.	**empiece**	**empieces**	**empiece**	**empecēmos**	**empecēis**	**empiecen.**
IMPER.	——	**empieza**	**empiece**	**empecēmos**	empezād	**empiecen.**

empezāba; **empecé,** empezāste, *etc.;* empezāra, empezāse; *etc.*

E STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.

470. Perder, perdiendo, perdido, *to lose.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **pierd** (tonic), *perd* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	**pierd**-o	**pierd**-es	**pierd**-e	perd-ēmos	perd-ēis	**pierd**-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	**pierd**-a	**pierd**-as	**pierd**-a	perd-āmos	perd-āis	**pierd**-an.
IMPERAT.	——	**pierd**-e	**pierd**-a	perd-āmos	perd-ēd	**pierd**-an.
IMPERF.	perd-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	perd-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	perd-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	perd-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	perd-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	perder-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	perder-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

471. Entender, entendiendo, entendido, *to understand.*

PR. IN. **entiendo entiendes entiende** entendēmos entendēis **entienden.**
PR. SJ. **entienda entiendas entienda** entendāmos entendāis **entiendan.**
IMPER. —— **entiende entienda** entendāmos entendēd **entiendan.**
entendía; entendí, entendiēra, entendiēse, entendiēre; entender-é, -ía.

O STEMS. — FIRST CONJUGATION.

472. Sonar, sonando, sonado, *to sound.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **suen** (tonic), *son* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	**suen**-o	**suen**-as	**suen**-a	son-āmos	son-āis	**suen**-an.
PRES. SUBJ.	**suen**-e	**suen**-es	**suen**-e	son-ēmos	son-ēis	**suen**-en.
IMPERAT.	——	**suen**-a	**suen**-e	son-ēmos	son-ād	**suen**-en.
IMPERF.	son-āba	-abas	-aba	-ábamos	-ábais	-aban.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	son-é	-aste	-ó	-āmos	-ásteis	-āron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	son-āra	-āras	-āra	-áramos	-árais	-āran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	son-āse	-āses	-āse	-ásemos	-áseis	-āsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	son-āre	-āres	-āre	-áremos	-áreis	-āren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	sonar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	sonar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

473. Costar, costando, costado, *to cost.*

PRES. IND.	**cuesto**	**cuestas**	**cuesta**	costāmos	costāis	**cuestan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**cueste**	**cuestes**	**cueste**	costēmos	costēis	**cuesten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**cuesta**	**cueste**	costēmos	costād	**cuesten.**

costāba; costé, costāra, costāse, costāre; costar-é, -ía.

474. Acordar, acordando, acordado, *to agree.*

PRES. IND. **acuerdo acuerdas acuerda** acordamos acordais **acuerdan.**
PRES. SUBJ. **acuerde acuerdes acuerde** acordemos acordeis **acuerden.**
IMPERAT. —— **acuerda acuerde** acordemos acordad **acuerden.**
acordaba; acordé, acordara, acordase, acordare; acordar-é, -ía.

475. Hollar, hollando, hollado, *to trample.*

PRES. IND.	**huello**	**huellas**	**huella**	hollamos	hollais	**huellan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**huelle**	**huelles**	**huelle**	hollemos	holleis	**huellen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**huella**	**huelle**	hollemos	hollad	**huellen.**

hollaba; hollé, hollara, hollase, hollare; hollaré, hollaría.

476. Volar, volando, volado, *to fly.*

PRES. IND.	**vuelo**	**vuelas**	**vuela**	volamos	volais	**vuelan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**vuele**	**vueles**	**vuele**	volemos	voleis	**vuelen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**vuela**	**vuele**	volemos	volad	**vuelen.**

volaba; volé, volara, volase, volare; volaré, volaría.

477. Contar, contando, contado, *to count.*

PRES. IND.	**cuento**	**cuentas**	**cuenta**	contamos	contais	**cuentan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**cuente**	**cuentes**	**cuente**	contemos	conteis	**cuenten.**
IMPERAT.	——	**cuenta**	**cuente**	contemos	contad	**cuenten.**

contaba; conté, contara, contase, contare; contaré, contaría.

478. Probar, probando, probado, *to prove.*

PRES. IND.	**pruebo**	**pruebas**	**prueba**	probamos	probais	**prueban.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**pruebe**	**pruebes**	**pruebe**	probemos	probeis	**prueben.**
IMPERAT.	——	**prueba**	**pruebe**	probemos	probad	**prueben.**

probaba; probé, probara, probase, probare; probaré, probaría.

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

479. The verbs **desosar**, *to separate the bones from the meat*, and **desovar**, *to spawn* (from **hueso**, *bone*, and **huevo**, *egg*), introduce an *h* before the diphthong of the present stem:—

480. Desosar, desosando, desosado.

PR. IN.	**deshueso**	**deshuesas**	**deshuesa**	desosāmos	desosāis	**deshuesan.**
PR. SJ.	**deshuese**	**deshueses**	**deshuese**	desosēmos	desosēis	**deshuesen.**
IMPER.	——		**deshuesa**	**deshuese**	desosēmos	desosād	**deshuesen.**

desosāba; desosé, desosāra, desosāse, desosāre; desosar-é, -ía.

481. Verbs of this class in *-car*, *-gar*, and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographic changes laid down in § 371.

482. **Trocar**, trocando, trocado, *to barter.*

PR. IN.	**trueco**	**truecas**	**trueca**	trocāmos	trocāis	**truecan.**
PR. SJ.	**trueque**	**trueques**	**trueque**	**troquēmos**	**troquēis**	**truequen.**
IMPER.	——	**trueca**	**trueque**	**troquēmos**	trocād	**truequen.**

trocāba; **troqué,** trocāste, *etc.;* trocāra, trocāse, trocāre; *etc.*

483. **Rogar**, rogando, rogado, *to request.*

PRES. IND.	**ruego**	**ruegas**	**ruega**	rogāmos	rogāis	**ruegan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**ruegue**	**ruegues**	**ruegue**	**roguēmos**	**roguēis**	**rueguen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ruega**	**ruegue**	**roguēmos**	rogād	**rueguen.**

rogāba; **rogué,** rogāste, *etc.;* rogāra, rogāse, rogāre; rogaré, *etc.*

484. Here belongs the verb **jugar** (Lat. *jocari*), which follows the analogy of this class, with the stem-vowel *u*, anciently *o*:—

485. **Jugar**, jugando, jugado, *to play*, *to gamble.*

PRES. IND.	**juego**	**juegas**	**juega**	jugāmos	jugāis	**juegan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**juegue**	**juegues**	**juegue**	**juguēmos**	**juguēis**	**jueguen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**juega**	**juegue**	**juguēmos**	jugād	**jueguen.**

jugāba; **jugué,** jugāste, *etc.;* jugāra, jugāse, jugāre; jugaré, *etc.*

486. **Forzar**, forzando, forzado, *to force.*

PRES. IND.	**fuerzo**	**fuerzas**	**fuerza**	forzāmos	forzāis	**fuerzan.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**fuerce**	**fuerces**	**fuerce**	**forcēmos**	**forcēis**	**fuercen.**
IMPERAT.	——	**fuerza**	**fuerce**	**forcēmos**	forzād	**fuercen.**

forzāba; **forcé,** forzāste, *etc.;* forzāra, forzāse, forzāre; *etc.*

487. In verbs of this class whose stem-vowel *o* stands after a *g*, the diphthong assumes the diæresis (*üe*), according to §§ 17 and 32, *a*:—

488. Agorar, agorando, agorado, *to divine* (*augurare*).

PRES. IND.	**agüero**	**agüeras**	**agüera**	agorāmos	agorāis	**agüeran.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**agüere**	**agüeres**	**agüere**	agorēmos	agorēis	**agüeren.**
IMPERAT.	——	**agüera**	**agüere**	agorēmos	agorād	**agüeren.**

agorāba; agoré, agorāra, agorāse, agorāre; agorar-é, -ía.

O STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.

489. Mover, moviendo, movido, *to move.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **muev** (tonic), *mov* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	**muev**-o	**muev**-es	**muev**-e	mov-ēmos	mov-ēis	**muev**-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	**muev**-a	**muev**-as	**muev**-a	mov-āmos	mov-āis	**muev**-an.
IMPERAT.	——	**muev**-e	**muev**-a	mov-āmos	mov-ēd	**muev**-an.
IMPERF.	mov-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	mov-í	-iste	-ió	-ímos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	mov-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	mov-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	mov-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	mover-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	mover-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

490. Morder, mordiendo, mordido, *to bite.*

PRES. IND.	**muerdo**	**muerdes**	**muerde**	mordēmos	mordēis	**muerden.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**muerda**	**muerdas**	**muerda**	mordāmos	mordāis	**muerdan.**
IMPERAT.	——		**muerde**	**muerda**	mordāmos	mordēd **muerdan.**

mordía; mordí, mordiēra, mordiēse, mordiēre; morder-é, -ía.

491. Volver, volviendo, vuelto, *to return.*

PRES. IND.	**vuelvo**	**vuelves**	**vuelve**	volvemos	volveis	**vuelven.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**vuelva**	**vuelvas**	**vuelva**	volvamos	volvais	**vuelvan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**vuelve**	**vuelva**	volvamos	volved	**vuelvan.**

volvía; volví, volviera, volviese, volviere; volveré, volvería.

492. Moler, moliendo, molido, *to grind.*

PRES. IND.	**muelo**	**mueles**	**muele**	molemos	moleis	**muelen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**muela**	**muelas**	**muela**	molamos	molais	**muelan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**muele**	**muela**	molamos	moled	**muelan.**

molía; molí, moliera, moliese, moliere; moleré, molería.

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

493. The verb **oler** assumes an *h* before the diphthong of the tonic stem: —

494. Oler, oliendo, olido, *to scent, to smell.*

PRES. IND.	**huelo**	**hueles**	**huele**	olēmos	olēis	**huelen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**huela**	**huelas**	**huela**	olāmos	olāis	**huelan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**huele**	**huela**	olāmos	olēd	**huelan.**

olía; olí, oliēra, oliēse, oliēre; oleré, olería.

495. Verbs of this class in *-cer* preceded by a consonant, and a few in *-ocer*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographical changes indicated in § 373. See § 374, exception: —

496. Torcer, torciendo, torcido, *to twist.*

PRES. IND.	**tuerzo**	**tuerces**	**tuerce**	torcemos	torceis	**tuercen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**tuerza**	**tuerzas**	**tuerza**	**torzamos**	**torzais**	**tuerzan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**tuerce**	**tuerza**	**torzamos**	torced	**tuerzan.**

torcía; torcí, torciera, torciese, torciere; torceré, torcería.

497. Cocer, cociendo, cocido, *to boil, to bake.*[1]

PRES. IND.	**cuezo**	**cueces**	**cuece**	cocēmos	cocēis	**cuecen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**cueza**	**cuezas**	**cueza**	**cozāmos**	**cozāis**	**cuezan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**cuece**	**cueza**	**cozāmos**	cocēd	**cuezan.**

cocía; cocí, cociēra, cociēse, cociēre; coceré, cocería.

---

[1] **Cocer** means *to boil, to cook*, meats, vegetables, tea, etc., and *to bake* bread, pottery, brick. Of *water*, it is preferable to use **hervir** (*fervēre*). The mistress, for example, would say, *el agua hierve;* and the servant, *el agua está cociendo.* "Boiled meat" is *carne cocida;* "boiling water," or "very hot water," *agua hirviente.* "To boil an egg" is *pasar un huevo por agua;* "boiled eggs," *huevos pasados por agua;* "baked clay," *barro cocido;* etc.

Second Class.

498. This class embraces verbs of the third conjugation only, with the radical vowels *e* and *o*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, besides the usual diphthongization of the vowels *e* and *o* when tonic, these vowels subside into *i* and *u* respectively before a *strong* termination, whenever the stem is *atonic;* that is, in the first and second persons plural of the subjunctive, and in the first person plural of the imperative.

Again, in the preterit stem, including the gerund, the radical vowels *e* and *o* become respectively *i* and *u*, as often as the ending that follows contains the diphthong *ie* or *ió*.

E STEMS.

499. Sentir, (sintiendo), sentido, *to feel, to perceive.*

PRESENT STEM. — **sient** (tonic), *sent* (atonic, weak), **sint** (atonic, strong).

PRES. IND.	**sient**-o	**sient**-es	**sient**-e	sent-īmos	sent-ís	**sient**-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	**sient**-a	**sient**-as	**sient**-a	**sint**-āmos	**sint**-āis	**sient**-an.
IMPERAT.	——	**sient**-e	**sient**-a	**sint**-āmos	sent-īd	**sient**-an.
IMPERF.	sent-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íamos	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **sint** (before a diphthong).

GERUND.	**sint**iēndo.					
PAST DEF.	sent-í	-íste	**sintió**	sent-īmos	-ísteis	**sint**iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**sint**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**sint**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**sint**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	sentir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	sentir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

500. Herir, (hiriendo), herido, *to strike* (with a weapon).

PRES. IND.	**hiero**	**hieres**	**hiere**	herīmos	herís	**hieren.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**hiera**	**hieras**	**hiera**	**hirāmos**	**hirāis**	**hieran.**
IMPERAT.	——	**hiere**	**hiera**	**hirāmos**	herīd	**hieran.**
IMPERF.	her-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.
GERUND.	**hiriendo.**					
PAST DEF.	her-í	-iste	**hirió**	her-imos	-ísteis	**hirieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**hir**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**hir**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**hir**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	herir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	herir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.

a. So the compounds of *herir* (from Lat. *haerēre*), or of *ferir* (from Lat. *ferire*), and of *-gerir*, *-jerir* (Lat. *-gerĕre*, *-serĕre*).

501. Herir means *to strike with a weapon*, with intent to wound or to put to death. Otherwise, *to strike* is expressed by **dar un golpe — dar golpes — á álguien**, *to inflict a blow — blows — on any one:* —

Ruben. Conserve yo mi vida, y Raquel muera (**hiérela**).
Raquel. ¡Ay de mí!

Reuben. Let me preserve my life, and let Rachel die (*he strikes*).
Rachel. Alas for me!

— Tragedy of *Rachel*, by D. Vicente García de la Huerta, 1778.

502. Advertir, (advirtiendo), advertido, *to observe.*

	ad-			*ad-*		
PRES. IND.	**vierto**	**viertes**	**vierte**	vertīmos	vertís	**vierten.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**vierta**	**viertas**	**vierta**	**virtamos**	**virtais**	**viertan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**vierte**	**vierta**	**virtamos**	vertid	**viertan.**
IMPERF.	vert-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.
GERUND.	**advirtiendo.**					
PAST DEF.	vert-í	-iste	**virtió**	vert-imos	-ísteis	**virtieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**virt**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**virt**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**virt**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	vertir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	vertir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.

503. Hervir (hirviendo), hervido, *to boil.*

PRES. IND.	**hiervo**	**hierves**	**hierve**	hervimos	hervís	**hierven.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**hierva**	**hiervas**	**hierva**	**hirvamos**	**hirvais**	**hiervan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**hierve**	**hierva**	**hirvamos**	hervid	**hiervan.**
IMPERF.	herv-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**hirviendo.**					
PAST DEF.	herv-í	-iste	**hirvió**	herv-ímos	-ísteis	**hirvieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**hirv**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**hirv**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**hirv**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	hervir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	hervir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

504. In the verb **erguir**, *to throw back* (the head) *haughtily*, the stem being initial, the vowel *i* may be either consonantized, or it may replace the diphthong altogether, in the present tenses. The other changes are the same as in the model verb *sentir:* —

505. Erguir (irguiendo), erguido.

PR. IND.	**yergo** **irgo**	**yergues** **irgues**	**yergue** **irgue**	erguimos	erguís	**yerguen.** **irguen.**
PR. SJ.	**yerga** **irga**	**yergas** **irgas**	**yerga** **irga**	**irgamos**	**irgais**	**yergan.** **irgan.**
IMPERAT.	—— ——	**yergue** **irgue**	**yerga** **irga**	**irgamos**	erguid	**yergan.** **irgan.**
IMPERF.	erguía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**irguiendo.**					
PAST D.	erguí	erguiste	**irguió**	erguimos	erguísteis	**irguieron.**
1 IMP. SJ.	**irguiera**	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SJ.	**irguiese**	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SJ.	**irguiere**	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	erguir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	erguir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

506. Verbs in *-quirir* which are derived from a primitive radical *quer* (Lat. *quaerĕre*), have the usual diphthong *ie* in the present stem when tonic; but otherwise they preserve the characteristic *i* throughout.

507. Adquirir (adquiriendo), adquirido, *to get, to obtain.*

PR. IN. **adquiero adquieres adquiere** adquirimos adquirís **adquieren.**
PR. SJ. **adquiera adquieras adquiera** adquiramos adquirais **adquieran.**
IMPER. —— **adquiere adquiera** adquiramos adquirid **adquieran.**
adquiría; adquiriendo, adquirí, adquiriera, adquiriese; *etc.*

O STEMS.

508. Dormir (durmiendo), dormido, *to sleep.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **duerm** (tonic), *dorm* (atonic weak), **durm** (atonic strong).

PR. IN.	**duerm**-o	**duerm**-es	**duerm**-e	dorm-īmos	dorm-ís	**duerm**-en.
PR. SJ.	**duerm**-a	**duerm**-as	**duerm**-a	**durm**-āmos	**durm**-āis	**duerm**-an.
IMPER.	——	**duerm**-e	**duerm**-a	**durm**-āmos	dorm-īd	**duerm**-an.
IMPF.	dorm-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **durm** (before a diphthong).

GER.	**durm**iēndo.					
PA. D.	dorm-í	-iste	**durm**ió	dorm-īmos	-ísteis	**durm**ieron.
1 I. SJ.	**durm**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 I. SJ.	**durm**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FU. SJ.	**durm**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUT.	dormir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	dormir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

509. Morir (muriendo), muerto, *to die.*

PRES. IND.	**muero**	**mueres**	**muere**	morimos	morís	**mueren.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**muera**	**mueras**	**muera**	**muramos**	**murais**	**mueran.**
IMPERAT.	——	**muere**	**muera**	**muramos**	morid	**mueran.**
IMPERF.	mor-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**muriendo.**					
PAST DEF.	mor-í	-iste	**murió**	mor-imos	-ísteis	**murieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**mur**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**mur**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**mur**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	morir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	morir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

510. **Podrir** and **pudrir** (pudriendo), podrido, *to decay.*

This verb, which usually made the stem-vowels interchangeable in certain tenses and persons, has now become nearly regular with *u*, by the authority of the Spanish Academy. The latest recommendation of that body[1] fixes the inflection as follows (we insert the old variations between parentheses):—

PR. IN.	pudro	pudres	pudre	pudrimos (*podrimos*)	pudrís (*podrís*)	pudren.
PR. SJ.	pudra	pudras	pudra	pudramos	pudrais	pudran.
IMPER.	——	pudre	pudra	pudramos	pudrid (*podrid*)	pudran.
IMPF.	pudr-ía (*podr-ía*)	-ías (-ías)	-ía (-ía)	-íamos (*-íamos*)	-íais (*-íais*)	-ían. (*-ían*).
GER.	pudriendo.					
PA. D.	pudrí (*podrí*)	pudriste (*podriste*)	pudrió	pudrimos (*podrimos*)	pudrísteis (*podrísteis*)	pudrieron.
1 I. SJ.	pudri-era	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 I. SJ.	pudri-ese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FU. SJ.	pudri-ere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUT.	pudrir-é (*podrir-é*)	-ás (*-ás*)	-á (*-á*)	-émos (*-émos*)	-éis (*-éis*)	-án. (*-án*).
COND.	pudrir-ía (*podrir-ía*)	-ías (*-ías*)	-ía (*-ía*)	-íamos (*-íamos*)	-ías (*-ías*)	-ían. (*-ían*).

Third Class.

511. This class embraces only verbs of the third conjugation, with the radical vowel *e*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, the vowel *e* becomes *i* when the radical syllable is tonic, or atonic strong; that is, throughout the present indicative, subjunctive, and the imperative, save only the first and second persons plural

[1] *Gramdtica de la Lengua Castellana, por la Real Academia Española.* Madrid, 1880 (published January, 1881), p. 132.

of the indicative, and the second person plural imperative.

In the preterit system, the vowel *e*, as in *e* stems of the preceding class, uniformly becomes *i*, when the personal ending contains a diphthong; that is, in the gerund, in the third persons singular and plural of the past definite, and throughout the derivative tenses.

512. Pedir, (pidiendo), pedido, *to ask.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **pīd** (tonic, atonic strong), ***pid*** (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	**pīd**-o	**pīd**-es	**pīd**-e	ped-īmos	ped-ís	**pīd**-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	**pīd**-a	**pīd**-as	**pīd**-a	**pīd**-āmos	**pīd**-āis	**pīd**-an.
IMPERAT.	——	**pīd**-e	**pīd**-a	**pīd**-āmos	ped-īd	**pīd**-an.
IMPERF.	ped-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **pid** (before a diphthong).

GERUND.	**pidiēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	ped-í	-iste	**pidió**	ped-īmos	-ísteis	**pidiēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**pid**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**pid**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**pid**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	pedir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	pedir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

513. Servir, (sirviendo), servido, *to serve.*

PRES. IND.	**sīrvo**	**sīrves**	**sīrve**	servīmos	servís	**sīrven.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**sīrva**	**sīrvas**	**sīrva**	**sīrvāmos**	**sīrvāis**	**sīrvan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**sīrve**	**sīrva**	**sīrvāmos**	servīd	**sīrvan.**
IMPERF.	serv-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**sirviēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	serv-í	-iste	**sirvió**	servímos	-ísteis	**sirviēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**sirv**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**sirv**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**sirv**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.
FUTURE.	servir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	servir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

514. Verbs of this class in *-gir*, besides modifying the radical vowel *e*, observe the euphonic changes indicated in § 375:—

515. **Regir**, (rigiendo), regido, *to rule.*

PRES. IND.	**rijo**	**riges**	**rige**	regimos	regís	**rigen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**rija**	**rijas**	**rija**	**rijāmos**	**rijāis**	**rijan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**rige**	**rija**	**rijāmos**	regid	**rijan.**
IMPERF.	reg-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**rigiēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	reg-í	-iste	**rigió**	re-gimos	-ísteis	**rigiēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**rig**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**rig**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**rig**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.
FUTURE.	regir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	regir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

516. Verbs of this class in **-guir** (*gheer*) modify the stem-vowel, and conform to the euphonic changes laid down in § 376:—

Seguir, (siguiendo), seguido, *to follow.*

PRES. IND.	**sigo**	**sigues**	**sigue**	seguimos	seguís	**siguen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**siga**	**siga**	**siga**	**sigamos**	**sigais**	**sigan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**sigue**	**siga**	**sigamos**	seguid	**sigan.**
IMPERF.	seguía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**siguiendo.**					
PAST DEF.	seguí	-iste	**siguió**	seguimos	-ísteis	**siguieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**siguiera**	-iēras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**siguiese**	-iēses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**siguiere**	-iēres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	seguiré	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	seguiría	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

517. Verbs of this class in the double consonant *-ñir*, and optionally those in *-chir*, modify the stem-vowel *e*,

and absorb the *i* of the diphthongs *ie*, *ió*, contained in the gerund, the past definite third persons singular and plural, and the derivative tenses, according to § 378:—

518. Ceñir, (ciñendo), ceñido, *to gird.*

PRES. IND.	**ciño**	**ciñes**	**ciñe**	ceñimos	ceñís	**ciñen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**ciña**	**ciñas**	**ciña**	**ciñamos**	**ciñais**	**ciñan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ciñe**	**ciña**	**ciñamos**	ceñid	**ciñan.**
IMPERF.	ceñ-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**ciñendo.**					
PAST DEF.	ceñ-í	-iste	**ciñó**	ceñ-imos	-ísteis	**ciñeron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**ciñ-era**	**-eras**	**-era**	**-éramos**	**-éraıs**	**-eran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**ciñ-ese**	**-eses**	**-ese**	**-ésemos**	**-éseis**	**-esen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	**ciñ-ere**	**-eres**	**-ere**	**-éremos**	**-éreis**	**-eren.**
FUTURE.	ceñir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	ceñir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

519. Verbs in *-eir* modify the stem-vowel *e* into *i*, according to this class, but they lose the *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* throughout the preterit stem:—

520. Re-ir, (ri-ēndo), re-īdo, *to laugh.*

PRES. IND.	**rīo**	**rīes**	**rīe**	reīmos	reís	**rīen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**rīa**	**rīas**	**rīa**	**rīāmos**	**rīāis**	**rīan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**rīe**	**rīa**	**rīāmos**	reīd	**rīan.**
IMPERF.	re-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**rī-ēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	re-í	-iste	**rió**	re-īmos	-ísteis	**rīēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**rī-ēra**	**-eras**	**-ēra**	**-éramos**	**-éraıs**	**-ēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**rī-ēse**	**-eses**	**-ēse**	**-ésemos**	**-éseis**	**-ēsen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	**rī-ēre**	**-eres**	**-ēre**	**-éremos**	**-éreis**	**-ēren.**
FUTURE.	reir-é, *etc.*			CONDIT.	reir-ía, *etc.*	

Fourth Class.

521. This class embraces all verbs in *-uir*, including those in *-güir* (not those in *-guir*, § 376 and remark). The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system, as in the second and third classes.

In the present stem a *y* consonant is inserted before the ending when the radical is tonic (weak or strong), and also when atonic strong; that is, in the same positions of the present indicative, subjunctive, and of the imperative, in which the third class modifies the stem-vowel.

In the preterit system, including the gerund, the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* are consonantized throughout (§§ 441; 442, *b*).

522. Huir, (huyendo), huīdo, *to flee.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **hu-y** (tonic; atonic strong), ***hu*** (atonic weak)

PR. IN.	**hūyo**	**hūyes**	**hūye**	huīmos	huís	**hūyen.**
PR. SJ.	**hūya**	**hūyas**	**hūya**	**huyāmos**	**huyāis**	**hūyan.**
IMPER.	——	**hūye**	**hūya**	**huyāmos**	huīd	**hūyan.**
IMPERF.	hu-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **hu** (with diphthongs consonantized).

GERUND.	**huyēndo.**					
P. DEF.	hu-í	-iste	**-yó**	-īmos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SJ.	hu-**yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SJ.	hu-**yēse**	**-yēses**	**-yēse**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FUT. SJ.	hu-**yēre**	**-yēres**	**-yēre**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	huir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	huir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

523. Atribuir, (atribuyendo), atribuīdo, *to ascribe.*

PR. IN.	atribū-**yo**	**-yes**	**-ye**	atribu-īmos	-ís	atribū-**yen.**
PR. SJ.	atribū-**ya**	**-yas**	**-ya**	atribu-**yāmos**	**-yāis**	atribū-**yan.**
IMPER.	——	**-ye**	**-ya**	atribu-**yāmos**	-īd	atribū-**yan.**
IMPERF.	atribu-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**atribuyēndo.**					
P. DEF.	atribu-í	-īste	**-yó**	-īmos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SJ.	atribu-**yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SJ.	atribu-**yēse**	**-yēses**	**-yēse**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FUT. SJ.	atribu-**yēre**	**-yēres**	**-yēre**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**
FUTURE.	atribuir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	atribuir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

524. Instituir, (instituyendo), instituīdo, *to establish.*

PRES. IND.	institū-**yo**	**-yes**	**-ye**	institu-īmos	-ís	institū-**yen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	institū-**ya**	**-yas**	**-ya**	institu-**yāmos**	**-yāis**	institū-**yan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**-ye**	**-ya**	institu-**yāmos**	-īd	institū-**yan.**
IMPERF.	institu-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	**instituyēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	institu-í	-iste	**-yó**	-imos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	institu-**yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	institu-**yēse**	**-yēses**	**-yēse**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	institu-**yēre**	**-yēres**	**-yēre**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**
FUTURE.	instituir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	instituir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

525. Verbs in *-güir* lose the diaeresis as often as they admit the *y* consonant:—

526. Argüir, (arguyendo), argüīdo, *to discuss.*

PR. IN.	**argū-yo**	-yes	-ye	argü-īmos	-ís	**argū-yen.**
PR. SJ.	**argū-ya**	-yas	-ya	**argu-yāmos**	**-yāis**	**argū-yan.**
IMPER.	——	-ye	-ya	**argu-yāmos**	argü-īd	**argū-yan.**
IMPRF.	argü-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GER.	**arguyēndo.**					
P. DEF.	argü-í	-iste	**argu-yó**	argü-īmos	-ísteis	**argu-yēron.**
1 I. SJ.	**argu-yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 I. SJ.	**argu-yēse**	**-yēses**	**-yēse**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FU. SJ.	**argu-yēre**	**-yēres**	**-yēre**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**
FUT.	argüir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	argüir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

Fifth Class.

527. This class embraces those verbs that have irregular preterit systems derived from the Latin by attraction, with the tonic accent on the radical in the first and third persons singular of the past definite. The present and future stems are generally irregular.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

528. **Andar**, andando, andado, *to go* (indefinitely).

PRESENT STEM. — REGULAR.

PRES. IND.	ando	andas	anda	andāmos	andāis	āndan.
PRES. SUBJ.	ande	andes	ande	andēmos	andēis	ānden.
IMPERAT.	——	anda	ande	andēmos	andād	ānden.
IMPERF.	and-aba	-abas	-aba	-ábamos	-ábais	-āban.

PRETERIT STEM. — **anduv** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**andūve**	**anduvīste**	**andūvo**	**anduv**-īmos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**anduv**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**anduv**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**anduv**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE. andar-é, *etc.* CONDIT. andar-ía, *etc.*

a. Andar is a general undefined going, expressing manner or state; *ir*, a going in a specific direction, or for a definite purpose. Of inanimate objects and animals, *andar* is used; of persons, *ir*. **Ir á**, followed by an infinitive, means *to be going to, to be about to:* —

andar de Ceca en Meca,[1] *to go from Dan to Beersheba.*
andar vagando por todas partes, *to go roaming all over.*
andar de prisa — despacio, *to go fast — slow.*
andar á gatas, *to go on all fours.*
el relój no anda; está parado, *the watch don't go; it has stopped.*
el caballo **anda** bien, *the horse travels well.*
la tierra **anda**, *the earth moves.*

ir de Madrid á Sevilla, *to go from Madrid to Seville.*
ir al teatro — á la compra, *to go to the play — to market.*
ir de un recado, *to go of an errand.*
él **va** de ministro á tal parte, *he goes as a minister to such a place.*
voy á dar un paseīto, *I am going to take a short walk.*
¿qué me **va** V. **á** dar? *what are you going to give me?*

---

[1] The **Ceca** of Córdova, originally a *Mint* (Arab. *dâr* **as-sikka**), was the central oratory for pilgrims in the western caliphat, corresponding to the **ca'aba** of Mecca in that of Bagdad.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

529. Caber, cabiendo, cabido, *to be contained in*, (**en**), *to hold.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **quep** (strong, § 446, *d*), *cab* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**quepo**	cabes	cabe	cabēmos	cabēis	caben.
PRES. SUBJ.	**quepa**	**quepas**	**quepa**	**quepāmos**	**quepāis**	**quepan.**
IMPERAT.	——	cabe	**quepa**	**quepāmos**	cabēd	**quepan.**
IMPERF.	cab-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **cup** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**cūpe**	**cupíste**	**cūpo**	**cup**-īmos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**cup**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**cup**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**cup**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — **cabr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**cabr-é**	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**cabr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-ías	-ían.

a. The use of **caber** (from the Latin **capĕre**, *to take*) is anomalous, in that it reverses the English order of subject and object, and is construed with the preposition *en*. Thus: **En esta sala caben quinientas personas**, *this hall holds five hundred persons*, — literally, "five hundred persons hold in this hall"; **no cabe más en esta vasija**, *this vessel will not hold any more*, — literally, "no more holds in this vessel." In this sense of material capacity, *coger*, with the English construction, may be substituted; as, *esta sala coge quinientas personas; esta vasija no coge más.*

b. **Caber** signifies also moral capacity in the sense of *to be capable of*; as, no **cabe en** él tal infámia, *he is not capable of such baseness*; todo **cabe en** fulano, *so and so is capable of anything*; no **cabe** más, *there is no room for more*, or "that caps the climax," — the latter meaning also expressed in Spanish by **no faltaba más.**

c. **Cabe** is used impersonally in the sense of "it is possible"; negative, "there is no — possible": si **cabe**, *if it is possible, if it may be*: no **cabe** duda, *there is no possible doubt.*

530. Hacer, haciendo, hecho, *to make, to do* (Lat. *facĕre*).

PRESENT STEMS. — **hag** (strong, § 446, *e*), *hac* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**hago**	haces	hace	hacēmos	hacēis	hacen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**haga**	**hagas**	**haga**	**hagāmos**	**hagāis**	**hagan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**haz**(§ 450)	**haga**	**hagāmos**	hacēd	**hagan.**
IMPERF.	hacía	hacías	hacía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **hic** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**hīce**	**hicīste**	**hīzo** (§ 14)	**hicīmos**	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**hiciera**	**hicieras**	**hiciera**	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**hiciese**	**hicieses**	**hiciese**	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**hiciere**	**hicieres**	**hiciere**	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **har** (§ 455).

FUTURE.	**har**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**har**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

531. Satisfacer, satisfaciendo, satisfecho, *to satisfy.*

	satis-			*satis-*		
PRES. IND.	**fago**	faces	face	facēmos	facēis	facen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**faga**	**fagas**	**faga**	**fagāmos**	**fagāis**	**fagan.**
IMPERAT.	——	face *or* **faz**	**faga**	**fagāmos**	facēd	**fagan.**
IMPERF.	facía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	**fice**	**ficiste**	**fizo**	**ficīmos**	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**ficiera**	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**ficiese**	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**ficiere**	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	**faré**, *etc.*		CONDIT.	**faría**, *etc.*		

532. Poder, (pudiendo), podido, *to be able.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **pued** (tonic, § 445, *a*), *pod* (atonic, § 435).

PRES. IND.	**puedo**	**puedes**	**puede**	podemos	podeis	**pueden.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**pueda**	**puedas**	**pueda**	podamos	podais	**puedan.**
IMPERAT.	——	——	——	——	——	——
IMPERF.	pod-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **pud** (§ 452).

GERUND.	**pudiēndo.**					
PAST DEF.	**pūde**	**pudīste**	**pūdo**	**pud**-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**pud**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**pud**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**pud**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **podr** (§ 454).

FUTURE. **podr**-é -ás, *etc.* CONDIT. **podr**-ía -ías, *etc.*

a. **Poder** is one of the so-called modal verbs, and signifies *may* (*might*), *can* (*could*), denoting physical or moral possibility, permission, and a possible contingency: —

no **puedo** hacerlo,	I cannot do it.
no **hemos podido** efectuarlo,	we could not bring it about.
¿se **puede** pasar?	may one (I) come in?
no se **puede** seguir adelante,	you can't go on.
podrá ser; **pudo** ser,	it may be; it might have been.

533. **Poner**, poniendo, **puesto**, *to put, to place.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **pong** (strong, § 446, *b*), *pon* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**pongo**	pones	pone	ponēmos	ponēis	ponen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**ponga**	**pongas**	**ponga**	**pongāmos**	**pongāis**	**pongan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**pon** (§ 450)	**ponga**	**pongāmos**	ponēd	**pongan.**
IMPERF.	pon-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **pus** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**pūse**	**pusīste**	**pūso**	**pus**-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**pus**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**pus**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**pus**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **pondr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**pondr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**pondr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Poner** may be accompanied by the prepositions *en*, *sobre*, or *encima de*, to signify "to put" or "set on" a surface or the *outside* of anything. "To place" or "put in" the *inside* of anything is expressed by **meter en.** The synonym of both verbs is **colocar**: —

poner (*or* **colocar**) el sombrero **en** la mesa,	to put the hat on the table.
meter la costura **en** el cajon,	to put the sewing in the drawer.
colocarla en su sitio,	to put it in its place.

b. **Ponerse**, *to set one's self about, to begin*, followed by *á* and an infinitive; *to put on* a garment, gloves, etc. **Meterse en**, *to get one's self into, to meddle with*: —

se puso á cantar y á bailar,	he began to sing and to dance.
me pongo la levita,	I put on the frock-coat.
se ha metido en honduras,	he has got into straits — "gone beyond his depth."
no **se meta** V. **en** los negocios ajenos,	do not meddle with other people's business.

534. Querer, queriendo, querido, *to will, to wish.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **quier** (tonic), *quer* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	**quiero**	**quieres**	**quiere**	querēmos	querēis	**quieren.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**quiera**	**quieras**	**quiera**	querāmos	querāis	**quieran.**
IMPERAT.	——	**quiere**	**quiera**	querāmos	querēd	**quieran.**
IMPERF.	quer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **quis** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**quīse**	**quisiste**	**quīso**	**quis**-īmos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**quis**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**quis**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**quis**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **querr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**querr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**querr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Querer**, as a verb of mode, denotes will, inclination, in the meanings *to will, to be willing, to wish* : —

¿**quiere** V. leer esta carta?	will you read this letter?
no **quīso** hacer lo que yo le propūse,	he would not do what I suggested.
el muchacho **quería** jugar, mas su compañero no **quiso**,	the boy wanted to play, but his mate was not willing to.

b. When *will, would,* signify future time, or a condition, the appropriate tense must be used: —

¿cuándo **vendrá** V. á verme?	when will you come to see me?
vendría pronto, si tuviese tiempo,	I would come soon, if I had time.

c. **Querer** signifies also *to like, to love, to be fond of* : —

el padre **quiere** á sus hijos,	the father is fond of his children.

535. Saber, sabiendo, sabido, *to know* (things).

PRESENT STEMS. — **sep** (strong), *sab* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**sé** (§ 446, *d*)	sabes	sabe	sabēmos	sabēis	saben.
PRES. SUBJ.	**sepa**	**sepas**	**sepa**	**sepāmos**	**sepāis**	**sepan.**
IMPERAT.	——	sabe	**sepa**	**sepāmos**	sabēd	**sepan.**
IMPERF.	sab-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **sup** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**sūpe**	**supīste**	**sūpo**	**sup**-īmos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**sup**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**sup**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**sup**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **sabr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**sabr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**sabr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Saber** is *to know* things, objects of thought; **conocer** (§ 374, *c*), *to know* persons, and *to be acquainted with* things, objects of thought: —

lo **sé**; no quiero **saber**lo, *I know it; I do not want to know it.*

¿**sabe** V. su leccion? la **sé** de memoria, *do you know your lesson? I know it by heart.*

yo ya **sabía** lo que quiso averiguar, *I knew what he wanted to find out.*

le **conozco**; no quiero **conocer**le, *I know him; I do not wish to know him.*

¿**conoce** V. este libro? lo **conozco**, *are you acquainted with this book? I am.*

conozco mi deber, y sabré desempeñarlo, *I know my duty, and shall find means to discharge it.*

b. *Can* (*could*) is always rendered by **saber** instead of **poder**, when it means *to know how*: —

sabe hablar Castellano, he can speak Spanish.

yo **sé** } hacer eso, — I can (*intellectual possibility*) } do that.

yo puedo } hacer eso, — I can (*physical possibility*) } do that.

536. **Tener**, teniendo, tenido, *to have, to possess.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **teng** (strong), **tien** (tonic weak), *ten* (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	**tengo**	**tienes**	**tiene**	tenēmos	tenēis	**tienen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**tenga**	**tengas**	**tenga**	**tengāmos**	**tengāis**	**tengan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ten** (§ 450)	**tenga**	**tengāmos**	tenēd	**tengan.**
IMPERF.	ten-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **tuv** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**tūve**	**tuviste**	**tūvo**	**tuv**-imos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**tuv**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**tuv**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**tuv**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **tendr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**tendr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**tendr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Tener was formerly much used as an auxiliary verb, but at present it is limited to certain verbs in certain locutions not easy to define. The student will do well to confine himself to *haber*, till experience and observation serve to guide him surely: —

tengo entendido que . . . ,	I have learned that . . . .
lo **tiene averiguado** ya,	he has ferretted it out already.
tienen ideado un proyecto,	they have a plan in mind.

537. **Traer**, trayendo (§ 442, *b*), traído, *to bring.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **traig** (strong), *tra* (weak).

PR. IN.	**trāigo**	traes	trae	traēmos	traēis	trāen.
PR. SJ.	**trāiga**	**traigas**	**traiga**	**traigāmos**	**traigāis**	**traigan.**
IMPER.	——	trae	**traiga**	**traigāmos**	traēd	**traigan.**
IMPF.	tra-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **traj** (§ 452).

P. DEF.	**trāje**	**trajiste**	**trājo**	**traj**-imos	-ísteis	**-eron** (§ 443).
1 I. SJ.	**traj-era**	**-eras**	**-era**	**-éramos**	**-éraīs**	**-eran.**
2 I. SJ.	**traj-ese**	**-eses**	**-ese**	**-ésemos**	**-éseis**	**-esen.**
FU. SJ.	**traj-ere**	**-eres**	**-ere**	**-éremos**	**-éreis**	**-eren.**

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUT.	traer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	traer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The preterit stem *truj* is now obsolete as a literary form, although it is still heard, like most Castilian archaisms, among rustic people. Its inflection is precisely like the prevailing form: —

PAST DEF.	**trūje**	**trujiste**	**trūjo**	**truj**-īmos	-ísteis	-ēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**truj-ēra**	-ēras	-ēra	-éramos	-éraīs	-ēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**truj-ēse**	-ēses	-ēse	-ésemos	-éseis	-ēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**truj-ēre**	-ēres	-ēre	-éremos	-éreis	-ēren.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

538. Conducir, conduciendo, conducido, *to conduct.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **conduzc** (strong, § 374, *d*), *conduc* (weak).

	con-			*con-*		
PRES. IND.	**dūzco**	dūces	dūce	ducīmos	ducís	dūcen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**dūzca**	**dūzcas**	**dūzca**	**duzcāmos**	**duzcāis**	**dūzcan.**
IMPERAT.	——	dūce	**dūzca**	**duzcāmos**	ducīd	**dūzcan.**
IMPERF.	ducía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **conduj** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**dūje**	**dujīste**	**dūjo**	**duj**-īmos	-ísteis	-ēron (§ 443).
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**duj-ēra**	-ēras	-ēra	-éramos	-éraīs	-ēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**duj-ēse**	-ēses	-ēse	-ésemos	-éseis	-ēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**duj-ēre**	-ēres	-ēre	-éremos	-éreis	-ēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	ducir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	ducir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Ducir** (Lat. *ducĕre*), *to lead*, is not in use, as a simple verb, since the close of the fifteenth century.

539. Decir, diciendo, dicho, *to say, to tell.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **dig** (strong), **dic** (tonic weak), *dec* (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	**digo**	**dices**	**dice**	decīmos	decís	**dicen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**diga**	**digas**	**diga**	**digāmos**	**digāis**	**digan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**dí** (§ 450)	**diga**	**digāmos**	decīd	**digan.**
IMPERF.	decía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **dij** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	**dīje**	**dijīste**	**dijo**	**dij**-īmos	-ísteis	-ēron (§ 443).
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**dij-ēra**	-ēras	-ēra	-éramos	-éraīs	-ēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**dij-ēse**	-ēses	-ēse	-ésemos	-éseis	-ēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**dij-ēre**	-ēres	-ēre	-éremos	-éreis	-ēren.

FUTURE STEM. — **dir** (§ 455).

FUTURE.	**dir**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**dir**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The special form **diz**, *they say*, seems to be a contraction of the Latin *dicitur* (*dicĭt*-ur, *dist*, like *moz*-o from *must*-us). It is a quaint sort of a synonym for *se dice* or *dicen* : —

diz que ese labrador es rico, | they say that farmer is rich.

b. Like *decir*, are inflected all the compounds, such as *antedecir*, *contradecir*, *desdecir*, *entredecir*, *interdecir*, *predecir*, save only in the imperative second singular, which, in these, is generally *dice*, instead of *dí*. In *bendecir* and *maldecir*, the variations are more numerous, as will appear by the inflection of the first. The latest edition of the Academy's grammar makes all compounds of *decir* follow the inflection of *bendecir* in the imperative and in the future stem; but this use is not constant either in literature or in conversation.

540. Bendecir, bendiciendo, *bendecido*, **(bendito),** *to bless.*

This verb and its contrary, **maldecir**, *to curse*, differ from the simple *decir*, in the past participle, the imperative second singular, and in the future stem only. Thus: —

	ben-			*ben-*		
PRES. IND.	digo	dices	dice	decimos	decís	dicen.
PRES. SUBJ.	diga	digas	diga	digamos	digais	digan.
IMPERAT.	——	*dice*	diga	digamos	decid	digan.
IMPERF.	decía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	dije	dijiste	dijo	dij-imos	-ísteis	-eron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-era	-eras	-era	-éramos	-érais	-eran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-ese	-eses	-ese	-ésemos	-éseis	-esen.
FUT. SUBJ.	dij-ere	-eres	-ere	-éremos	-éreis	-eren.
FUTURE.	*decir*-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	*decir*-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The irregular past participles *bendito* and *maldito* are used little as such, save in a few expressions, as: **bendito** seas, *blessings on thee;* **maldito** sea, *confound him* — literally, *mayest thou be blessed, may he be accursed.*

541. Venir, (viniendo), venido, *to come.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **veng** (strong), **vien** (tonic weak), *ven* (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	**vengo**	**vienes**	**viene**	venimos	venís	**vienen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**venga**	**vengas**	**venga**	**vengāmos**	**vengāis**	**vengan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ven**(§ 450)	**venga**	**vengāmos**	venīd	**vengan.**
IMPERF.	ven-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **vin** (§ 453).

GERUND.	**viniendo.**					
PAST DEF.	**vīne**	**vīniste**	**vīno**	**vin**-imos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**vin**-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**vin**-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	**vin**-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — **vendr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**vendr-é**	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**vendr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

Sixth Class.

542. This class embraces a few verbs not easily reducible to any of the foregoing.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

543. Dar, dando, dado, *to give.*

PRESENT STEM. — *d* REGULAR.

PRES. IND.	**doy**(§ 449)	das	da	damos	dais	dan.
PRES. SUBJ.	dé	des	dé	demos	deis	den.
IMPERAT.	——	da	dé	demos	dad	den.
IMPERF.	daba	dabas	daba	dábamos	dábais	daban.

PRETERIT STEM. — *d* (second conjugation).

PAST DEF.	**dí**	**diste**	**dió**	**dimos**	**dísteis**	**dieron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**diera**	**dieras**	**diera**	**diéramos**	**diérais**	**dieran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**diese**	**dieses**	**diese**	**diésemos**	**diéseis**	**diesen.**
FUT. SUB.	**diere**	**dieres**	**diere**	**diéremos**	**diéreis**	**dieren.**

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	dar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	dar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

544. Caer, cayendo (§ 442, *b*), caído, *to fall.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **caig** (strong, § 446, *c*), *ca* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**cāigo**	cāes	cāe	caēmos	caēis	caen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**cāiga**	**cāigas**	**cāiga**	**caigāmos**	**caigāis**	**caigan.**
IMPERAT.	——	cāe	**cāiga**	**caigāmos**	caēd	**caigan.**
IMPERF.	ca-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR (but see § 442, *b*).

PAST DEF.	caí	caíste	**cayó**	ca-ímos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	ca-**yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	ca-yēse	-yēses	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	ca-yēre	-yēres	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	caer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	caer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

545. Placer, placiendo, placido, *to please.*

PRES. IND.	place.	1 IMP. SUBJ.	**pluguiera** (placiera).
PRES. SUBJ.	**plazca (plegue).**	2 IMP. SUBJ.	**pluguiese** (placiese).
IMPERAT.	**plegue (plega).**	FUT. SUBJ.	**pluguiere** (placiere).
IMPERF.	placía.	FUTURE.	placerá.
PAST DEF.	**plugo** (plació).	CONDIT.	placería.

a. The impersonal verb *placer* is now mostly archaic, except in ejaculations. Otherwise, it is replaced by **querer**, *to wish, to please*; **gustarle á uno**, and **parecerle á uno**, *to please, to suit, any one:* —

¡**plegue** á Dios que se salve!	God grant he may be saved!
¡**pluguiera** á Dios que jamás le hubieses visto!	would God you had never seen him!
vendrás cuando te **pluguiere**,	you will come when you please.
si á V. le **place**, si le **gusta** á V., si á V. le **parece**, si V. **quiere**,	if you please, *or* if you like.

546. The compounds of *placer* are conjugated like *nacer* (§ 374, *b*); that is, they are regular throughout, except in the present stem, when they are euphonized by the intercalation of a *z* with strong vowel-endings: —

Complacer, complaciendo, complacido, *to oblige*.

	com-			*com-*		
PRES. IND.	**plazco**	places	place	placemos	placeis	placen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**plazca**	**plazcas**	**plazca**	**plazcamos**	**plazcais**	**plazcan.**
IMPERAT.	——	place	**plazca**	**plazcamos**	placed	**plazcan.**
IMPERF.	placía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	plací	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	placiera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	placiese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	placiere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	placer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	placer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

547. Valer, valiendo, valido, *to be worth*.

PRESENT STEMS. — **valg** (strong, § 446, *b*), *val* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**valgo**	vales	vale	valēmos	valēis	vālen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**valga**	**valgas**	**valga**	**valgāmos**	**valgāis**	**valgan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**val** *and* vale	**valga**	**valgāmos**	valēd	**valgan.**
IMPERF.	val-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	val-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	val-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	val-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	val-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — **valdr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**valdr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**valdr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. So also the reflexive verb **valerse**, *to avail one's self of* (**de**), *to take advantage*: —

me **valgo**, te vales, se vale, nos valemos, os valeis, *etc.*

se vale de este recurso para engañar y estafar á la gente sencilla,	he takes advantage of this expedient to deceive and defraud simple people.

548. Ver, viendo, **visto,** *to see.*

			PRESENT STEMS. — **ve** (strong), *v* (weak).			
PRES. IND.	**veo**	ves	ve	vemos	vēis	ven.
PRES. SUBJ.	**vea**	**veas**	**vea**	**veāmos**	**veāis**	**vean.**
IMPERAT.	——	ve	**vea**	**veāmos**	ved	**vean.**
IMPERF. (§ 451)	**ve**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
			PRETERIT STEM. — *v* REGULAR.			
PAST DEF.	ví	viste	vió	vimos	vísteis	vieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	viera	vieras	viera	viéramos	viérais	vieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	viese	vieses	viese	viésemos	viéseis	viesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	viere	vieres	viere	viéremos	viéreis	vieren.
			FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.			
FUTURE.	ver-é, *etc.*		CONDIT. ver-ía, *etc.*			

a. **Ver** was formerly written and pronounced *veer* (from the Latin *vidēre*), and was regular in the present indicative and subjunctive, but still irregular in the imperfect. Thus: —

veo	vees	vee	(veēmos)	(veēis)	veen.
vea	veas	vea	veamos	veais	vean.
——	vee	——	——	veed.	
vía	vías	vía	víamos	víais	vían.

In the past definite first and third persons singular, the forms *vide*, *vido*, from the Latin *vidi*, *vidit*, were used.

549. Like **ver** are inflected all its own compounds; those in **veer,** as well as all simple verbs in *-eer*, like **creer, leer, poseer,** etc., are regular throughout, save that the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* must always be *consonantized*, according to § 442, *b*: —

a. **Proveer, proveyendo,** proveīdo, *or* **provisto,** *to provide.*

PRES. IND.	provēo	provēes	provēe	proveēmos	proveēis	provēen.
PRES. SUBJ.	provēa	provēas	provēa	proveāmos	proveāis	provēan.
IMPERAT.	——	provēe	provēa	proveāmos	proveēd	provēan.
IMPERF.	prove-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	prove-í	-īste	**-yó**	-īmos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	prove-**yēra**	**-yēras**	**-yēra**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	prove-**yēse**	**-yēses**	**-yēse**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	prove-**yēre**	**-yēres**	**-yēre**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**
FUTURE.	proveer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	proveer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

b. **Creer, creyendo** (§ 442, *b*), creído, *to believe.*

PRES. IND.	creo	crees	cree	creemos	creeis	creen.
PRES. SUBJ.	crea	creas	crea	creamos	creais	crean.
IMPERAT.	——	cree	crea	creamos	creed	crean.
IMPERF.	cre-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	cre-í	-íste	**-yó**	-imos	-ísteis	**-yeron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	cre-**yera**	**-yeras**	**-yera**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yeran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	cre-**yese**	**-yeses**	**-yese**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yesen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	cre-**yere**	**-yeres**	**-yere**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yeren.**
FUTURE.	creer-é, *etc.*		CONDIT. creer-ía, *etc.*			

c. **Poseer, poseyendo**, poseído, *to possess.*

PRES. IND.	posēo	posēes	posēe	poseēmos	poseēis	posēen.
PRES. SUBJ.	posēa	posēas	posēa	poseāmos	poseāis	posēan.
IMPERAT.	——	posēe	posēa	poseāmos	poseēd	posēan.
IMPERF.	pose-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	pose-í	-íste	**-yó**	-imos	-ísteis	**-yēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pose-**yēra**	**-yeras**	**-yera**	**-yéramos**	**-yérais**	**-yēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pose-**yēse**	**-yeses**	**-yese**	**-yésemos**	**-yéseis**	**-yēsen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	pose-**yēre**	**-yeres**	**-yere**	**-yéremos**	**-yéreis**	**-yēren.**
FUTURE.	poseer-é, *etc.*		CONDIT. poseer-ía, *etc.*			

550. Yacer, yaciendo, yacido, *to lie* (Lat. *jacēre*).

PRES. IND.	**yazco** / **yazgo** / **yago**	yaces	yace	yacemos	yaceis	yacen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**yazca**	**yazcas**	**yazca**	**yazcamos**	**yazcais**	**yazcan.**
	yazga	**yazgas**	**yazga**	**yazgamos**	**yazgais**	**yazgan.**
	yaga	**yagas**	**yaga**	**yagamos**	**yagais**	**yagan.**
IMPERAT.	——	yace, *or* **yaz**			yaced	

yacía; yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere; yacer-é, -ía.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

551. Asir, asiendo, asido, *to lay hold of.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **asg** (strong), *as* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**asgo**	ases	ase	asīmos	asís	āsen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**asga**	**asgas**	**asga**	**asgāmos**	**asgāis**	**asgan.**
IMPERAT.	——	ase	**asga**	**asgāmos**	asīd	**asgan.**

asía; así, asiera, asiese, asiere; asiré, asiría.

552. Ir, yendo (§ 442, *a*), ido, *to go* (definitely).

PRES. IND.	**voy**(§ 449)	**vas**	**va**	**vamos**	**vais**	**van.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**vaya**	**vayas**	**vaya**	**vayāmos**	**vayāis**	**vayan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ve**(§ 450)	**vaya**	**vamos**	**id**	**vayan.**
IMPERF.	**iba**(§ 451)	**ibas**	**iba**	**íbamos**	**íbais**	**iban.**
PAST DEF.	**fuí**	**fuiste**	**fué**	**fuimos**	**fuísteis**	**fueron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**fuera**	**fueras**	**fuera**	**fuéramos**	**fuérais**	**fueran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**fuese**	**fueses**	**fuese**	**fuésemos**	**fuéseis**	**fuesen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	**fuere**	**fueres**	**fuere**	**fuéremos**	**fuéreis**	**fueren.**
FUTURE.	ir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	ir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Irse**, yéndose, ídose, *to go away*, *to go.*

PRES. IND.	me voy	te vas	se va	nos vamos	os vais	se van.
PRES. SUBJ.	me vaya	te vayas	se vaya	nos vayāmos	os vayāis	se vayan.
IMPERAT.	——	véte	váyase	vámonos	ídos(§ 404)	váyanse.
IMPERF.	me iba	te ibas	se iba	nos íbamos	os íbais	se iban.
PAST DEF.	me fuí	te fuiste	se fué	nos fuimos	os fuísteis	se fueron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	me fuera	te fueras	se fuera	nos fuéramos	os fuérais	se fueran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	me fuese	te fueses	se fuese	nos fuésemos	os fuéseis	se fuesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	me fuere	te fueres	se fuere	nos fuéremos	os fuéreis	se fueren.
FUTURE.	me iré	te irás	se irá	nos irémos	os iréis	se irán.
CONDIT.	me iría	te irías	se iría	nos iríamos	os iríais	se irían.

553. Oir, oyendo (§ 442, *b*), oido, *to hear.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **oig** (strong), **oy** (tonic weak), *o* (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	**ōigo**	**ōyes**	**ōye**	oīmos	oís	**ōyen.**
PRES. SUBJ.	**ōiga**	**ōigas**	**ōiga**	**oigāmos**	**oigāis**	**ōigan.**
IMPERAT.	——	**ōye**	**ōiga**	**oigāmos**	oíd	**ōigan.**
IMPERF.	o-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íamos	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — *o* (diphthongs *ie*, *ió*, consonantized).

PAST DEF.	oí	oíste	**oyó**	oímos	oísteis	**oyēron.**
1 IMP. SUBJ.	**oyēra**	**oyēras**	**oyēra**	**oyéramos**	**oyérais**	**oyēran.**
2 IMP. SUBJ.	**oyēse**	**oyēses**	**oyēse**	**oyésemos**	**oyéseis**	**oyēsen.**
FUT. SUBJ.	**oyēre**	**oyēres**	**oyēre**	**oyéremos**	**oyéreis**	**oyēren.**

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	oir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	oir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

554. Salir, saliendo, salido, *to go out.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **salg** (strong), *sal* (weak).

PRES. IND.	**salgo**	sales	sale	salimos	salís	salen.
PRES. SUBJ.	**salga**	**salgas**	**salga**	**salgamos**	**salgais**	**salgan.**
IMPERAT.	——	sal	**salga**	**salgamos**	salid	**salgan.**
IMPERF.	sal-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	sal-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sal-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	sal-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sal-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **saldr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	**saldr**-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	**saldr**-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

555. The following verbs are used only in those forms of which the personal ending begins with an *i*; including, however, the future: —

abolir,	*regular.*	despavorir,	*regular.*
aguerrir,	*like* herir.	embair,	*regular.*
arrecirse,	*like* herir.	empedernir,	*like* servir.
aterirse,	*like* herir.	garantir,	*regular.*
desmarrirse,	*regular.*	manir,	*regular.*

Examples.

a. **Abolir**, aboliendo, abolido, *to abolish.*

PRES. IND.	——	——	——	abol-imos	-ís	——
IMPERAT.	——	——	——	——	abol-id	——
IMPERF.	abol-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	abol-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	abol-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	abol-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	abol-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	abolir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	abolir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

b. **Aguerrir**, **aguirriendo**, aguerrido, *to exercise in war.*

PR. IN.	——	——	——	aguerr-imos	-ís	——
IMPER.	——	——	——	——	aguerr-id	——
IMPF.	aguerr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PA. D.	aguerr-í	-iste	**aguirrió**	aguerr-imos	-ísteis	**aguirrieron.**
1 I. SJ.	**aguirr**-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 I. SJ.	**aguirr**-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FU. SJ.	**aguirr**-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUT.	aguerrir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	aguerrir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

556. The verb **raer**, *to erase*, is now replaced by *rayar*, which is regular. The original form is, however, met with occasionally, conjugated like *caer*. Thus: —

raigo *and* **rayo,** raes, rae, raemos, raeis, raen.
raiga *and* **raya,** *etc.*
ra-ía; raí, raiste, **rayó,** *etc.;* **rayera, rayese, rayere,** *etc.*

557. **Roer**, *to gnaw*, has the following forms: —

róo, roigo, *and* **royo;** roes, roe, *etc.*
roa, roiga, *and* **roya; roas, roigas,** *and* **royas;** *etc.*

a. **Corroer**, *to corrode*, makes *corroe* — *corroen* in the indicative present, and *corroa* — *corroan* in the subjunctive.

558. Many verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural of certain tenses (see also § 422): —

a. **Aplacer**, *to please* (obsolete): —

aplace — aplacen. | aplacía — aplacían.

b. **Atañer**, *to appertain*: —

atañe — atañen. | atañía — atañían.

aquien lo de yuſo en eſta nr̃a carta contenido **atañe / o atañer** puede,

to whom appertaineth or may appertain what followeth in this our letter.

— *Law for the expulsion of the Jews from Spain*, A.D. 1492.

c. **Concernir**, concerniendo, concernido, *to concern.*

concierne — conciernen.	concerniera — concernieran.
concierna — conciernan.	concerniese — concerniesen.
concernía — concernían.	concerniere — concernieren.
concernió — concernieron.	concernirá, *etc.;* all little used.

559. The verb **soler**, *to be accustomed to* (past participle **solido**) has in common use only the following forms: —

PRES.	**suelo**	**sueles**	**suele**	solemos	soleis	**suelen.**
IMPERF.	solía	solías	solía	solíamos	solíais	solían.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.

560. Past participles are said to be irregular when they do not end in *-ado* or *-ido*, like the primitive models *habl*-**ado**, *com*-**ido**, *viv*-**ido**. The irregularity proceeds from the original Latin form, more or less contracted and modified (classic and post-classic), and is found even with verbs that are otherwise regular in Spanish.

561. Regular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds: —

abrir, *to open;*		**abierto** (L. *apertus*), *opened.*	
entreabrir,	*to half-open;*	entreabierto,	*half-opened.*
cubrir, *to cover;*		**cubierto** (L. *co-opertus*), *covered.*	
descubrir,	*to discover;*	descubierto,	*discovered.*
encubrir,	*to conceal;*	encubierto,	*concealed.*
escribir, *to write;*		**escrito** (L. *scriptus*), *written.*	
circunscribir,	*to circumscribe;*	circunscrito,	*circumscribed.*
inscribir,	*to register;*	inscrito,	*registered.*
prescribir,	*to prescribe;*	prescrito,	*prescribed.*
proscribir,	*to proscribe;*	proscrito,	*proscribed.*
imprimir, *to print;*		**impreso** (L. *impressus*), *printed.*	

562. Irregular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds: —

decir, *to say, to tell;*
- contradecir, *to gainsay;*
- desdecir, *to unsay;*
- interdecir, *to prohibit;*
- predecir, *to foretell;*

hacer (obs. **facer**), *to make, to do;*
- contrahacer, *to falsify;*
- deshacer, *to undo;*
- rehacer, *to do over;*
- satisfacer, *to satisfy;*

morir, *to die;*

poner, *to put, to place;*
- componer, *to mend;*
- deponer, *to lay down;*
- disponer, *to dispose;*
- exponer, *to set forth;*
- imponer, *to deposit;*
- oponer, *to oppose;*
- proponer, *to propose;*
- suponer, *to suppose;*

solver (obs.), *to solve;*
- absolver, *to absolve;*
- disolver, *to dissolve;*
- resolver, *to resolve;*

ver, *to see;*
- entrever, *to get a glimpse of;*
- prever, *to foresee;*
- rever, *to review;*

volver, *to turn to return;*
- devolver, *to give back;*
- envolver, *to wrap up;*
- revolver, *to turn over;*

dicho (L. *dictus*), *said, told.*
- contradicho, *gainsaid.*
- desdicho, *unsaid.*
- interdicho, *prohibited.*
- predicho, *foretold.*

hecho (L. *factus*), *made, done.*
- contrahecho, *falsified.*
- deshecho, *undone.*
- rehecho, *done over.*
- satisfecho, *satisfied.*

muerto (L. *mort*[*u*]*us*), *died.*

puesto (L. *pos*[*ĭ*]*tus*), *put.*
- compuesto, *mended.*
- depuesto, *laid down.*
- dispuesto, *disposed.*
- expuesto, *set forth.*
- impuesto, *deposited.*
- opuesto, *opposed.*
- propuesto, *proposed.*
- supuesto, *supposed.*

suelto (L. *sol*[*vĭ*]*tus*), *solved.*
- absuelto, *absolved.*
- disuelto, *dissolved.*
- resuelto, *resolved.*

visto (L. *vistus* for *visus*), *seen.*
- entrevisto, *got a glimpse of.*
- previsto, *foreseen.*
- revisto, *reviewed.*

vuelto (L. *vol*[*vĭ*]*tus*), *returned.*
- devuelto, *given back.*
- envuelto, *wrapped up.*
- revuelto, *turned over.*

563. The verbs **bendecir**, *to bless*, and **maldecir**, *to curse*, have the regular past participles **bendecido**, **maldecido**, although compounds of *decir*. The ancient past participles **bendito**, **maldito**, are now used as

adjectives, save only when a wish or desire in the form of an exclamation is to be expressed: —

Dios le ha **bendecido** á él y á toda su casa,	God hath blessed him and all his house.
nadie diga que es **maldecido** de Dios,	let no one say he is accursed of God.
¡**bendita** seas tú entre las mujeres!	blessed be thou among women!
¡sean **malditos** todos ellos!	may they all be accursed!
agua **bendita**; una **bendita** limosna,	holy water; a blessed alms.

a. "Blessed," throughout the Scriptures, is rendered by **bienaventurado** when it represents the Hebrew *ăshārîm*, and the Greek *μακάριος*: —

¡**bienaventurado** el varon que no anda en consejo de malos!	blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly!

564. Bienquerer, *to esteem*, and **malquerer**, *to abhor*, have the regular past participles **bienquerido**, **malquerido**, but are more commonly employed with *ser* in the ancient forms **bienquisto**, **malquisto**: —

es **bienquisto** de sus vecinos,	he is much esteemed by his neighbors.
no es **malquisto** de ellos,	he is not hated by them.

a. These two verbs are oftener used as separable, and thus we say: les **queremos bien**, *we are very fond of them*; no la **quiso mal**, *he did not hate her*.

565. Freir, *to fry*, and its compounds, have two past participles, **freído** and **frito**, either of which may be used with *haber;* but with *ser* and *estar* it is more common to employ the latter form: —

¿no han {**freído** / **frito**} todavía los huevos?	have they not fried the eggs yet?
los huevos ya están **fritos**,	the eggs are fried now.

566. **Injerir**, *to graft*, has the regular past participle **injerido** with *haber* and *ser*, and the form **injerto** in other relations without an auxiliary: —

fueron quebradas (las ramas) para que yo fuese **injerido**,	(the branches) were broken off that I might be grafted in.
mi padre me decía que era Español transplantado en Italiano, y Gallego **enjerto** en Romano, — *Estébanillo*, 1646.	my father told me I was a Spaniard transplanted into an Italian, and a Gallician grafted on to a Roman.

a. The orthography of *injerir*, instead of *ingerir*, is sustained both by the etymology of the word and the old form of writing it. **Enxerir** (pronounced *ensherir*) came from *inserĕre*, and not *ingerĕre*, the *s* medial regularly passing over into *sh*; old Spanish, *x*, and modern, *j*. The Academy, however, recognizes only *ingerir*, an untenable form.

567. **Matar**, in its proper sense of *to kill*, referring to persons, has the irregular past participle **muerto**, like *morir;* but, in the figurative senses, involving the idea of harassing, worrying, putting one out of patience, and, as a reflexive verb, as well as in its proper sense, referring to animals, it is regular — **matado**: —

álguien **ha muerto** (*morir*),	some one has died (is dead).
álguien **le ha muerto** (*matar*),	some one has killed him.
me ha **matado** con sus chismes,	he worried me to death with his gossip.
dice que yo he **matado** la vaca,	he says that I killed the cow.
él **se ha muerto** (*morirse*),	he has died (he died).
él **se ha matado** (*matarse*),	he has committed suicide.

568. **Oprimir**, *to oppress*, and **suprimir**, *to suppress*, have the regular past participles **oprimido**, **suprimido**, and occasionally the irregular forms **opreso** and **supreso**, although the latter do not often occur: —

se ha suprimido El Imparcial,	"The Imparcial" has been suppressed.
la obra fué **suprimida**,	the work was suppressed.

569. The verb **prender** in the sense of *to arrest* a person, has two participles, **prendido** and **preso** (Lat. *prensus*). With *haber*, either form may be used; but with *ser* and *estar*, it is customary to prefer **preso**:—

han prendido / **han preso** } al reo,	they have arrested the culprit.
llegó el alguacil y dijo, sed **preso** en nombre del rey,	the constable came up and said, "You are my prisoner in the king's name."
todos están **presos** ya,	all are now made prisoners.

a. In all other significations, *prender* is regular throughout:—

el fuego había **prendido** en la casa,	the house had taken fire.

b. All compounds of *prender* have only the regular past participle. Such are: **aprender**, *to learn*; **comprender**, *to understand*; **emprender**, *to undertake*; etc.:—

ha **aprendido** algo nuevo hoy,	he has learned something new to-day.
han **comprendido** la trama,	they understood the plot.
el encargo no fué **emprendido**,	the charge was not undertaken.

570. **Proveer**, *to provide*, makes **proveído** and **provisto**, the latter usually with *estar*:—

el gobierno ha **proveído** lo necesario para la seguridad del pais,	the government has provided what is necessary for the security of the country.
la plaza estaba **provista** de todo,	the fortress was provided with everything.

571. **Romper**, *to break*, makes **rompido** and **roto** in the past participle, but the latter form generally prevails in all positions, when the verb is used transitively:—

han **roto** los cristales de la tienda,	they have broken the window-panes of the shop.
se ha **roto** el vaso,	the glass has been broken.
la fuente está **rota**; ya no sirve,	the dish is broken; it is of no [use.

a. As an intransitive verb, *romper* is regular in its past participle: —

ha **rompido** con su amigo, *but*	he has broken with his friend.
ha **roto** todos los **lazos**,	he has severed every tie.

b. The compound forms of *romper* are regular. Thus: **corromper**, *to corrupt*; **interrumpir**, *to interrupt*; etc.: —

sin ser **corrompido**,	without being corrupted.
le han **interrumpido**,	they interrupted him.
despues de haber **prorumpido** en lágrimas,	after having burst into tears.

572. Past participles are variable in gender and number, like adjectives in *o*, when they are conjugated with any auxiliary whatever, except *haber;* likewise, when used as pure adjectives or participial adjectives without a verb: —

ella **tiene escrita** una carta,	she has written a letter.
las cartas **están escritas**,	the letters are written.
las condiciones del empréstito **han sido publicadas**,	the terms of the (government) loan have been published.
la cuestion **queda zanjada**,	the affair is adjusted.
una leccion **aprendida**,	a lesson learned.
los libros **impresos**,	printed books.
una hoja **suelta**,	a printed sheet, a notice.
las simpatías **granjeadas**,	sympathies acquired.
ella **ha escrito** la carta,	she has written the letter.
han emprendido las obras,	they have begun building.

573. Past participles, like common adjectives, are often converted into substantives: —

preso, *arrested*;	un **preso**, *a prisoner*.

§ 574.

GENERAL ALPHABETICAL INDEX

TO THE

INFLECTION OF ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

A.

abastecer . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
abnegar . . " *negar*, § 468.
aborrecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
absolver . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *absuelto*.
absonar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
abstenerse . " *tener*, § 536.
abstraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
abuñolar . . " *volar*, § 476.
acaecer . . . §§ 374, *a*; 422.
acertar . . . § 458.
aclocar . . . " *trocar*, § 482.
acollar . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
acontecer . . §§ 374, *a*; 422.
acordar[1] . . § 474.
acornar . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
acostar . . . " *costar*, § 473.
acrecentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
acrecer . . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
adecentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
adestrar . . " *atestar*, § 462.
adherir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
adolecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
adormecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
adormir . . . " *dormir*, § 508.
adquirir . . . § 507.
aducir . . . " *conducir*, § 538.
advertir . . § 502.
afollar . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
aforar[2] . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
agorar . . . § 488.
agradecer . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
aguerrir . . . § 555, *b*.
alebrarse . . " *sembrar*, § 463.
alentar . . . § 459.
aliquebrar . . " *sembrar*, § 463.
almorzar . . " *forzar*, § 486.
alongar . . . " *rogar*, § 483.
amanecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
amoblar . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
amolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
amollecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
amorecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
amortecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
amover . . . " *mover*, § 489.
andar . . . . § 528.
anochecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
antedecir . . " *decir*, § 539, *b*.
pp. *antedicho*.
anteponer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *antepuesto*.
antever . . . " *ver*, § 548.
pp. *antevisto*.
apacentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
aparecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
apercollar . . " *hollar*, § 475.
apernar . . . " *acertar*, § 458.
apetecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
apostar[1]. . . " *costar*, § 473.
apretar . . . § 461.
aprobar . . . " *probar*, § 478.

[1] Regular in the sense of "to tune."
[2] Regular when it means "to gauge."

[1] Regular in the sense of "to post" men, guards, etc.

argüir . . . § 526.
arrecirse . . § 555.
arrendar . . like *alentar*, § 459.
arrepentirse . " *sentir*, § 499.
ascender . . " *entender*, § 471.
asentar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.
asentir . . . " *sentir*, § 499.
aserrar . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
asir. . . . . § 551.
asolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
asoldar . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
asonar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
asosegar . . " *negar*, § 468.
atañer . . . §§ 378, *b*; 558, *b*.
atender . . . " *entender*, § 471.
atenerse . . " *tener*, § 536.
atentar[1] . . " *alentar*, § 459.
aterirse . . . § 555.
aterrar[2] . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
atestar[3] . . § 462.
atraer . . . " *traer*, § 537.
atravesar . . " *apretar*, § 461.
atribuir . . . § 523.
atronar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
avalentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
avanecerse . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
avenir . . . " *venir*, § 541.
aventar. . . " *alentar*, § 459.
avergonzar,
like *agorar*, § 488, and *forzar*, § 486.
azolar . . . like *volar*, § 476.

B.

bendecir . . § 540.
pp. *bendecido*.
bienquerer . like *querer*, § 534.
blanquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
bregar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
bruñir . . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c*.
bullir . . . . § 378, *a*.

[1] Regular in the more usual modern sense of "to attempt a crime."
[2] Regular when it means "to terrify."
[3] Meaning "to testify," it is regular.

C.

caber . . . . § 529.
caer . . . . § 544.
calentar. . . like *alentar*, § 459.
canecer . . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
carecer . . . § 374, *a*.
cegar . . . . " *negar* § 468.
ceñir . . . . § 518.
cerner . . . " *perder*, § 470.
cerrar . . . § 460.
cimentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
circuir . . . " *atribuir*, § 523.
clarecer. . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
clocar . . . " *trocar*, § 482.
cocer . . . . § 497.
colar . . . . " *volar*, § 476.
colegir . . . " *regir*, § 515.
colgar . . . " *rogar*, § 483.
comedir. . . " *pedir*, § 512.
comenzar . . " *empezar*, § 469.
compadecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
comparecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
competir . . " *pedir*, § 512.
complacer . § 546.
complañir . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c*.
componer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *compuesto*.
comprobar . " *probar*, § 478.
concebir . . " *pedir*, § 512.
concernir . . § 558, *c*.
concertar . . " *acertar*, § 458.
concluir . . " *huir*, § 522.
concordar. . " *acordar*, § 474.
condescender " *entender*, § 471.
condolerse . " *moler*, § 492.
conducir . . § 538.
conferir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
confesar . . " *apretar*, § 461.
confluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
conmover . . " *mover*, § 489.
conocer . . . § 374, *c*.
conseguir . . " *seguir*, § 516.
consentir . . " *sentir*, § 499.
consolar . . " *volar*. § 476.
consonar . . " *sonar*, § 472.

constituir . . like *instituir*, § 524.
constreñir . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
construir . . " *huir*, § 522.
contar . . . § 477.
contender . . " *entender*, § 471.
contener . . " *tener*, § 536.
contorcerse . " *torcer*, § 496.
contracordar " *acordar*, § 474.
contradecir . " *decir*, § 539, *b*.
pp. *contradicho*.
contraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
contrahacer . " *hacer*, § 530.
pp. *contrahecho*.
contraponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *contrapuesto*.
contravenir . " *venir*, § 541.
contribuir . . " *atribuir*, § 523.
controvertir . " *advertir*, § 502.
convalecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
convenir . . " *venir*, § 541.
convertir . . " *advertir*, § 502.
corregir . . " *regir*, § 515.
corroer . . . § 557, *a*.
costar . . . § 473.
crecer . . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
creer . . . . § 549, *b*.

D.

dar . . . . . § 543.
decaer . . . like *caer*, § 544.
decentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
decir . . . . § 539.
pp. *dicho*.
decrecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
deducir . . . " *conducir*, § 538.
defender . . " *entender*, § 471.
defenecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
deferir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
degollar . . " *agorar*, § 488.
demoler . . " *moler*, § 492.
demostrar . " *costar*, § 473.
denegar . . " *negar*, § 468.
denegrecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
denostar . . " *costar*, § 473.
dentar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.
deponer . . . like *poner*, § 533.
pp. *depuesto*.
derrenegar . " *negar*, § 468.
derrengar . " *negar*, § 468.
derretir . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
derrocar . . " *trocar*, § 482.
derruir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
desabastecer " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desacertar . " *acertar*, § 458.
desacollar . " *hollar*, § 475.
desacordar . " *acordar*, § 474.
desadormecer " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desadvertir . " *advertir*, § 502.
desaferrar . " *cerrar*, § 460.
desaforar[1]. . " *sonar*, § 472.
desagradecer " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desalentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desamoblar . " *acordar*, § 474.
desandar . . " *andar*, § 528.
desaparecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desapretar . " *apretar*, § 461.
desaprobar . " *probar*, § 478.
desarrendar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desasentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desasir . . . " *asir*, § 551.
desasosegar . " *negar*, § 468.
desatender . " *entender*, § 471.
desatentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desaterrar . " *cerrar*, § 460.
desatraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
desatravesar " *apretar*, § 461.
desavenir . . " *venir*, § 541.
desaventar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desbastecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desbravecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
descabullirse " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
descaecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
descender . . " *entender*, § 471.
desceñir . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
descolgar . . " *rogar*, § 483.
descollar . . " *hollar*, § 475.
descomedirse " *pedir*, § 512.

[1] Regular when it means "to redeem a heritage."

descomponer, like *poner,* § 533.
pp. *descompuesto.*
desconcertar, " *acertar,* § 458.
desconocer . " *conocer,* § 374, *c.*
desconsentir . " *sentir,* § 499.
desconsolar . " *volar,* § 476.
descontar . . " *contar,* § 477.
desconvenir . " *venir,* § 541.
descordar . . " *acordar,* § 474.
descornar . . " *acordar,* § 474.
descrecer . . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desdar . . . " *dar,* § 543.
desdecir . . . " *decir,* § 539.
pp. *desdicho.*
desdentar . . " *alentar,* § 459.
desembebecerse, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desembellecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desembravecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desempedrar . " *acertar,* § 458.
desempobrecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desencarecer, " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desencerrar . " *cerrar,* § 460.
desencordar . " *acordar,* § 474.
desencrudecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desencruelecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desenfurecerse, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desengrosar . " *costar,* § 473.
desenmohecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desenmudecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desensoberbecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desentenderse," *entender,* § 471.
desenterrar . " *cerrar,* § 460.
desentorpecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desentristecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desentumecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desenvolver . " *volver,* § 491.
pp. *desenvuelto.*
deservir . . . " *servir,* § 513.
desfallecer . . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desfavorecer " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desferrar . . " *cerrar,* § 460.
desflaquecerse, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desflocar . . " *trocar,* § 482.
desflorecer . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desfortalecer, " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*

desgobernar like *acertar,* § 458.
desguarnecer," *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
deshacer . . " *hacer,* § 530.
pp. *deshecho.*
deshelar . . " *helar,* § 464.
desherbar . " *acertar,* § 458.
desherrar . . " *cerrar,* § 460.
deshombrecerse, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
deshumedecer, *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desimponer . " *poner,* § 533.
pp. *desimpuesto.*
desinvernar . " *acertar,* § 458.
desleir . . . " *reir,* § 520.
deslendrar . " *sembrar,* § 463.
deslucir . . " *lucir,* § 374, *d.*
desmajolar . " *volar,* § 476.
desmedirse . " *pedir,* § 512.
desmelar . . " *helar,* § 464.
desmembrar, " *sembrar,* § 463.
desmentir . . " *sentir,* § 499.
desmerecer . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desmullir . . " *bullir,* § 378, *a.*
desnegar . . " *negar,* § 468.
desnevar . . " *nevar,* § 417.
desobedecer, " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
desoir . . . " *oir,* § 553.
desolar . . . " *volar,* § 476.
desoldar . . " *acordar,* § 474.
desollar . . " *hollar,* § 475.
desobstruir . " *huir,* § 522.
desosar[1] . . § 480.
desovar . . " *desosar,* § 480.
desparecer . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
despedir . . " *pedir,* § 512.
despedrar . " *acertar,* § 458.
desperecer . " *carecer,* § 374, *a.*
despernar . . " *acertar,* § 458.
despertar . . " *acertar,* § 458.
despezar[2] . . " *empezar,* § 469.
desplacer . . " *complacer,* § 546.
desplegar . . " *negar,* § 468.

---

[1] Signifying "not to dare," it is regular.

[2] Regular when it means to reduce the end of a pipe or tube, so as to fit it to another.

despoblar . like *probar*, § 478.
desproveer . " *proveer*, § 549, *a*.
pps. *desproveido* and *desprovisto*.
destentar . like *alentar*, § 459.
desteñir . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
desterrar . " *cerrar*, § 460.
destituir . . " *instituir*, § 524.
destorcer . " *torcer*, § 496.
destrocar . " *trocar*, § 482.
destruir . . " *huir*, § 522.
desvanecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desventar . " *alentar*, § 459.
desverdecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
desvergonzarse,
like *forzar*, § 486; and *agorar*, § 488.
desvolver . like *volver*, § 491.
pp. *desvuelto*.
detener . . " *tener*, § 536.
detraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
devolver . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *devuelto*.
dezmar . . " *atestar*, § 462.
diferir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
difluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
digerir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
diluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
discerner . " *perder*, § 470.
discernir . . " *hervir*, § 503.
disconvenir, " *venir*, § 541.
discordar . " *acordar*, § 474.
disentir . . " *sentir*, § 499.
disminuir . " *huir*, § 522.
disolver . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *disuelto*.
disonar . . " *sonar*, § 472.
dispertar . . " *acertar*, § 458.
displacer . . " *complacer*, § 546.
disponer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *dispuesto*.
distender . " *entender*, § 471.
distraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
distribuir . " *atribuir*, § 523.
divertir . . " *advertir*, § 502.
doler . . . " *moler*, § 492.
dormir . . . § 508.

E.

educir . . . like *conducir*, § 538.
elegir . . . . " *regir*, § 515.
embarbecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embastecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embebecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embellecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embermejecer," *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embestir . . " *servir*, § 513.
emblandecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
emblanquecer," *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embobecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embosquecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embravecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
embrutecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
emparentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
empedernir . § 555.
empedrar . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
empellar . . " *helar*, § 464.
empequeñecer, *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
empezar . . § 469.
emplastecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
emplumecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
empobrecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
empodrecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
empoltronecerse, *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
emporcar . . " *trocar*, § 482.
enaltecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enardecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encabellecerse, *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encalvecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encallecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encandecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encanecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encarecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encarnecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encender . . " *entender*, § 471.
encentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
encerrar . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
enclocar . . " *trocar*, § 482.
encloquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encomendar . " *alentar*, § 459.
encontrar . . " *contar*, § 477.
encorar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
encordar . . " *acordar*, § 474.

encorecer . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encornar . . " *acordar*, § 474.
encovar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
encrudecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encruelecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
encubertar . " *acertar*, § 458.
endentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
endentecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
endurecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enflerecerse . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enflaquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enfranquecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enfurecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
engorar . . . " *agorar*, § 488.
engrandecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
engreirse . . " *reir*, § 520.
engrosar . . " *sonar*, § 472.
engrumecerse, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
engullir . . . " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
enhambrecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enhambrentar, " *alentar*, § 459.
enhestar . . " *atestar*, § 462.
enlenzar . . " *empezar*, § 469.
enloquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enlucir . . . " *lucir*, § 374, *d*.
enllentecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmagrecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmalecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmarillecerse, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmelar . . . " *helar*, § 464.
enmendar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
enmohecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmollecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enmudecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ennegrecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ennoblecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ennudecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enorgullecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enrarecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enriquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enrobustecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enrodar . . . " *probar*, § 478.
enrojecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enronquecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enroñecer . . " *carecer*, § 374. *a*.

enruinecerse, like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ensalmorar . " *volar*, § 476.
ensandecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ensangrentar, " *alentar*, § 459.
ensoberbecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ensoñar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
ensordecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entallecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entender . . § 471.
entenebrecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enternecer, . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enterrar . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
entigrecerse . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entontecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entorpecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entortar . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
entredecir . . " *decir*, § 539.
pp. *entredicho*.
entregerir . . " *herir*, § 500.
entrelucir . . " *lucir*, § 374, *d*.
entremorir . . " *morir*, § 509.
pp. *muerto*.
entreoir . . . " *oir*, § 553.
entreparecerse, " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entrepernar . " *acertar*, § 458.
entreponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *entrepuesto*.
entretener . . " *tener*, § 536.
entrever . . " *ver*, § 548.
pp. *entrevisto*.
entristecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entullecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
entumecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
envanecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
envejecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
enverdecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
envestir . . . " *servir*, § 513.
envilecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
envolver . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *envuelto*.
enzurdecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
equivaler . . " *valer*, § 547.
erguir . . . . § 505.
errar . . . . § 466.
escabullirse . " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.

escandecer . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
escarmentar, " *alentar*, § 459.
escarnecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
esclarecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
escocer . . . " *cocer* § 497.
escolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
esforzar . . . " *forzar*, § 486.
establecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
estar . . . . § 382.
estatuir . . . " *instituir*, § 524.
estregar . . " *negar*, § 468.
estremecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
estreñir . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
excluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
expedir . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
exponer . . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *expuesto*.
extender . . " *entender*, § 471.
extraer . . . " *traer*, § 537.
extreñir . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.

F.

fallecer . . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
favorecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
fenecer . . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
ferrar . . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
florecer . . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
fluir . . . . " *huir*, § 522.
follar . . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
fortalecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
forzar . . . . § 486.
fregar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
freir . . . . " *reir*, § 520.
pps. *freido* and *frito*.

G.

gañir . . . . like *plañir*, § 378, *c*.
gemecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
gemir . . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
gobernar . . " *acertar*, § 458.
gruir . . . . " *huir*, § 522.
gruñir . . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c*.
guañir . . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c*.
guarecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
guarnecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.

H.

haber . . . . § 351.
hacendar . . like *alentar*, § 459.
hacer . . . . § 530.
pp. *hecho*.
heder . . . . " *perder*, § 470.
helar . . . . § 464.
henchir . . . §§ 378, *d*; 513.
hender . . . " *entender*, § 471.
heñir . . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
herbar . . . " *acertar*, § 458.
herbecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
herir . . . . § 500.
herrar . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
hervir . . . § 503.
holgar . . . " *rogar*, § 483.
hollar . . . . § 475.
huir . . . . § 522.
humedecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.

I.

imbuir . . . like *atribuir*, § 523.
impedir . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
imponer . . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *impuesto*.
improbar . . " *probar*, § 478.
incensar . . " *pensar*, § 457.
incluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
indisponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *indispuesto*.
inducir . . . " *conducir*, § 538.
inferir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
infernar . . . " *acertar*, § 458.
influir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
ingerir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
pp. *ingerto*.
inhestar . . " *atestar*, § 462.
injerir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
pp. *injerto*.
inquirir . . . " *adquirir*, § 507.
inseguir . . . " *seguir*, § 516.
instituir . . § 524.
instruir . . . " *atribuir*, § 523.
interdecir . . " *decir*, § 539.
pp. *interdicho*.

interponer	like	*poner,*	§ 533.
pp. *interpuesto.*			
intervenir	"	*venir,*	§ 541.
introducir	"	*conducir,*	§ 538.
invernar	"	*acertar,*	§ 458.
invertir	"	*advertir,*	§ 502.
investir	"	*servir,*	§ 513.
ir			§ 552.

J.

jimenzar	like	*empezar,*	§ 469.
jugar			§ 485.

L.

languidecer,	like	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
leer	"	*creer,*	§ 549, *b.*
liquefacer	"	*satisfacer,*	§ 531.
lobreguecer,	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
lucir			§ 374, *d.*
luir	"	*huir,*	§ 522.

Ll.

llover			§ 418.

M.

maldecir	like	*bendecir,*	§ 540.
malherir	"	*herir,*	§ 500.
malquerer	"	*querer,*	§ 534.
malsonar	"	*sonar,*	§ 472.
maltraer	"	*traer,*	§ 537.
mancornar	"	*acordar,*	§ 474.
manifestar	"	*atestar,*	§ 462.
mantener	"	*tener,*	§ 536.
mecer			§ 373.
medir	"	*pedir,*	§ 512.
melar	"	*helar,*	§ 464.
mentar	"	*alentar,*	§ 459.
mentir	"	*sentir,*	§ 499.
merecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
merendar	"	*alentar,*	§ 459.
moblar	"	*contar,*	§ 477.
mohecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
moler			§ 492.
morder			§ 490.
morir			§ 509.
pp. *muerto.*			
mostrar	"	*costar,*	§ 473.
mover			§ 489.
muir	like	*huir,*	§ 522.
mullir	"	*bullir,*	§ 378, *a.*
muñir	"	*plañir,*	§ 378, *c.*

N.

nacer			§ 374, *b.*
negar			§ 468.
negrecer	like	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
nevar			§ 417.

O.

obedecer	like	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
obscurecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
obstruir	"	*huir,*	§ 522.
obtener	"	*tener,*	§ 536.
ofrecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
oir			§ 553.
oler			§ 494.
oponer	"	*poner,*	§ 533.
pp. *opuesto.*			
oscurecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*

P.

pacer	like	*nacer,*	§ 374, *b.*
padecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
palidecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
parecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
pedir			§ 512.
pensar			§ 457.
perder			§ 470.
perecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
permanecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
perniquebrar,	"	*sembrar,*	§ 463.
perseguir	"	*seguir,*	§ 516.
pertenecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
pervertir	"	*advertir,*	§ 502.
pimpollecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
placer			§ 545.
plañir			§ 378, *c.*
plastecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*
plegar	"	*negar,*	§ 468.
poblar	"	*sonar,*	§ 472.
poder			§ 532.
podrecer	"	*carecer,*	§ 374, *a.*

podrir . . . § 510.
poner . . . § 533.
pp. *puesto.*
poseer . . . § 549, *c.*
posponer . . like *poner*, § 533.
pp. *pospuesto.*
preconocer . " *conocer*, § 374, *c.*
predecir . . " *decir*, § 539.
pp. *predicho.*
predisponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *predispuesto.*
preferir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
prelucir . . " *lucir*, § 374, *d.*
premorir . . " *morir*, § 509.
pp. *premuerto.*
preponer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *prepuesto.*
presentir . . " *sentir*, § 499.
presuponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *presupuesto.*
prevalecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
prevaler . . " *valer*, § 547.
prevenir . . " *venir*, § 541.
prever . . . " *ver*, § 548.
pp. *previsto.*
probar . . . § 478.
producir . . " *conducir*, § 538.
proferir . . " *herir*, § 500.
promover . . " *mover*, § 489.
proponer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *propuesto.*
proseguir . . " *seguir*, § 516.
prostituir . . " *instituir*, § 524.
proveer . . § 549, *a.*
pps. *proveido* and *provisto.*
provenir . . like *venir*, § 541.
pudrir . . . § 510.

Q.

quebrar . . like *sembrar*, § 463.
querer . . . § 534.

R.

raer . . . . § 556.
rarefacer . . like *satisfacer*, § 531.
pp. *rarefecho.*
reagradecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
reaparecer . like *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
reapretar . . " *apretar*, § 461.
reaventar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
rebendecir . " *bendecir*, § 540.
reblandecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
rebullirse . . " *bullir*, § 378, *a.*
recaer . . . " *caer*, § 544.
recalentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
recentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
receñir . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
recluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
recocer . . . " *cocer*, § 497.
recolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
recolegir . . " *regir*, § 515.
recomendar . " *alentar*, § 459.
recomponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *recompuesto.*
reconducir . " *conducir*, § 538.
reconocer . . " *conocer*, § 374, *c.*
reconstruir . " *huir*, § 522.
recontar . . " *contar*, § 477.
reconvalecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
reconvenir . " *venir*, § 541.
recordar . . " *acordar*, § 474.
recostar . . " *costar*, § 473.
recrecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
recrudecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
redargüir . . " *argüir*, § 526.
redoler . . . " *moler*, § 492.
reducir . . . " *conducir*, § 538.
reelegir . . . " *regir*, § 515.
reencomendar, " *alentar*, § 459.
referir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
reflorecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
refluir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
reforzar . . . " *forzar*, § 486.
refregar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
refreir . . . " *reir*, § 520.
pp. *refreido* and *refrito.*
regañir . . . like *plañir*, § 378, *c.*
regar . . . . " *negar*, § 468.
regimentar . " *alentar*, § 459.
regir . . . . § 515.
regoldar . . " *agorar*, § 488.
regruñir . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c.*

rehacer . . . like *hacer*, § 530.
pp. *rehecho.*
rehenchir . . " *henchir*, § 378, *d.*
reherir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
reherrar . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
rehervir . . " *hervir*, § 503.
rehollar . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
rehuir . . . " *huir*, § 522.
rehumedecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
reir . . . . . § 520.
rejuvenecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
relentecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
relucir . . . " *lucir*, § 374, *d.*
remendar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
rementir . . " *sentir*, § 499.
remolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
remoler . . . " *moler*, § 492.
remorder . . " *morder*, § 490.
remover . . " *mover*, § 489.
remullir . . . " *bullir*, § 378, *a.*
renacer . . . " *nacer*, § 374, *b.*
rendir . . . " *servir*, § 513.
renegar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
renovar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
reñir . . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
repacer . . . " *nacer*, § 374, *b.*
repadecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
repedir . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
repensar . . " *pensar*, § 457.
repetir . . . " *pedir*, § 512.
replegar . . " *negar* § 468.
repoblar . . " *sonar*, § 472.
repodrir . . " *podrir*, § 510.
reponer . . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *repuesto.*
reprobar . . " *probar*, § 478.
reproducir . " *conducir*, § 538.
repudrir . . " *podrir*, § 510.
requebrar . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
requerer . . " *querer*, § 534.
requerir . . " *herir*, § 500.
resaber . . . " *saber*, § 535.
resalir . . . " *salir*, § 554.
resegar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
resembrar . . " *sembrar*, § 463.
resentirse . . like *sentir*, § 499.
resolver . . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *resuelto.*
resollar . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
resonar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
resplandecer, " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
resquebrar . " *sembrar*, § 463.
restablecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
restituir . . . " *instituir*, § 524.
restregar . . " *negar*, § 468.
restriñir . . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c.*
retallecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
retemblar . . " *sembrar*, § 463.
retener . . . " *tener*, § 536.
retentar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.
reteñir . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
retiñir . . . " *plañir*, § 378, *c.*
retoñecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
retorcer . . . " *torcer*, § 496.
retostar . . . " *costar*, § 473.
retraer . . . " *traer*, § 537.
retribuir . . " *atribuir*, § 523.
retronar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
retrotraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
revejecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
revenirse . . " *venir*, § 541.
reventar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
rever . . . . " *ver*, § 548.
pp. *revisto.*
reverdecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
reverter . . . " *perder*, § 470.
revestir . . . " *servir*, § 513.
revolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.
revolcarse . . " *trocar*, § 482.
revolver . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *revuelto.*
robustecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a.*
rodar . . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
roer . . . . § 557.
rogar . . . . § 483.

S.

saber . . . . § 535.
salir . . . . § 554.
salpimentar . like *alentar*, § 459.

salpullir . . like *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
sarmentar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
sarpullir . . " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
satisfacer . . § 531.
pp. *satisfecho*.
segar . . . . " *negar*, § 468.
seguir . . . § 516.
sembrar . . § 463.
sementar . . " *alentar*, § 459.
sentar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.
sentir . . . . § 499.
ser . . . . . § 385.
serrar . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.
servir . . . . § 513.
simenzar . . " *empezar*, § 469.
sobrecrecer . " *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
sobreentender, " *entender*, § 471.
sobrentender, " *entender*, § 471.
sobreponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *sobrepuesto*.
sobresalir . . " *salir*, § 554.
sobresembrar, " *sembrar*, § 463.
sobresolar . . " *volar*, § 476.
sobrevenir . " *venir*, § 541.
sobreventar . " *alentar*, § 459.
sobreverterse, " *perder*, § 470.
sobrevestir . " *sentir*, § 499.
sofreir . . . " *reir*, § 520.
pps. *sofreido* and *sofrito*.
solar . . . . like *volar*, § 476.
soldar . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
soler . . . . § 559.
soltar . . . . " *acordar*, § 474.
[solver] . . . " *volver*, § 491.
pp. *suelto*.
sollar . . . . " *hollar*, § 475.
somover . . " *mover*, § 489.
sonar . . . . § 472.
sonreir . . . " *reir*, § 520.
sonrodarse . " *volar*, § 476.
soñar . . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
sorregar . . " *negar*, § 468.
sosegar . . . " *negar*, § 468.
sostener . . " *tener*, § 536.
soterrar . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.

subarrendar . like *alentar*, § 459.
subentender . " *entender*, § 471.
subseguir . . " *seguir*, § 516.
substituir . . " *instituir*, § 524.
substraer . . " *traer*, § 537.
subtender . . " *entender*, § 471.
subvenir . . " *venir*, § 541.
subvertir . . " *advertir*, § 502.
sugerir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
superponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *superpuesto*.
supervenir . " *venir*, § 541.
suponer . . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *supuesto*.
sustituir . . " *instituir*, § 524.
sustraer . . " *traer*, § 537.

T.

tallecer . . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
tañer . . . . § 378, *b*.
temblar . . . " *sembrar*, § 463.
tender . . . " *entender*, § 471.
tener . . . . § 536.
tentar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.
teñir . . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.
torcer . . . § 496.
tostar . . . " *costar*, § 473.
traducir . . " *conducir*, § 538.
traer . . . . § 537.
transcender . " *entender*, § 471.
transfregar . " *negar*, § 468.
translucirse . " *lucir*, § 374, *d*.
transponer . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *transpuesto*.
trascender . " *entender*, § 471.
trascolar . . " *volar*, § 476.
trascordarse, " *acordar*, § 474.
trasegar . . " *negar*, § 468.
trasferir . . " *herir*, § 500.
trasfregar . . " *negar*, § 468.
traslucir . . " *lucir*, § 374, *d*.
trasoir . . . " *oir*, § 553.
trasoñar . . " *sonar*, § 472.
trasponer . . " *poner*, § 533.
pp. *traspuesto*.

trastrocar . like *trocar*, § 482.
trasverter . " *perder*, § 470.
trasvolar . . " *volar*, § 476.
travesar . . " *acertar*, § 458.
trocar . . . § 482.
tronar . . . " *sonar*, § 472.
tropezar . . " *empezar*, § 469.
tullir . . . . " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
tumefacerse, " *satisfacer*, § 531.
pp. *tumefecho*.

V.

valer. . . . § 547.
venir. . . . § 541.
ventar . . . like *alentar*, § 459.
ver . . . . § 548.
pp. *visto*.

verdecer . . . like *carecer*, § 374, *a*.
verter . . . . " *perder*, § 470.
vestir . . . . " *servir*, § 513.
volar . . . . § 476.
volcar . . . . " *trocar*, § 482.
volver . . . . § 491.
pp. *vuelto*.

Y.

yacer . . . . § 550.
yuxtaponer . like *poner*, § 533.
pp. *yuxtapuesto*.

Z.

zabullir . . . like *bullir*, § 378, *a*.
zaherir . . . " *herir*, § 500.
zambullirse . " *bullir*, § 378, *a*.

The Adverb.

575. Adverbs may be classed according to their **form** and **signification.**

576. With reference to their *form*, adverbs are **simple** or **compound.**

577. *Simple* adverbs are further divisible into **primitive** and **derivative.**

578. A *primitive* adverb is one that is expressed by an originally single word, without affixes or etymological adhesions, as: —

sí; no; bien; mal; luego,	yes; no; well; badly; presently.

a. Some adverbs, though simple in form, are etymologically compound: —

acaso (from **á caso**), *perchance.*	**despacio** (**de espacio**), *slowly.*
amenudo (**á menudo**), *often.*	**apénas** (**á penas**), *scarcely.*

b. Many simple adverbs are properly neuter adjectives temporarily used as adverbs: —

alto, *aloud.*	**mucho,** *much.*	**sólo,** *only.*
bajo, *low.*	**poco,** *little.*	**súbito,** *suddenly.*
falso, *out of tune.*	**pronto,** *soon.*	**temprano,** *early.*

579. *Derivative* adverbs are formed principally from common adjectives by applying to them the affix **-mente** (corresponding to the English ending *-ly*), agreeably to the following laws: —

a. Common adjectives in *o* (fem. *a*) attach the affix to the feminine form: —

franco;	**francamente,**	frank;	frankly.
orgulloso;	**orgullosamente,**	proud;	proudly.
gracioso;	**graciosamente,**	graceful;	gracefully.
acertado;	**acertadamente,**	appropriate;	appropriately.
cierto;	**ciertamente,**	sure;	surely.

REMARK. — Common adjectives of two terminations that do not end in *-o*, form their adverbs by a circumlocution with **manera,** *manner*, never in **-mente**: —

burlon, a, *roguish* — **de una manera burlona,** *roguishly*.

b. If the adjective be of one termination for both genders, the affix is applied to the common form: —

prudente;	**prudentemente,**	prudent;	prudently.
cortés;	**cortēsmente,**	polite;	politely.
fácil;	**fácilmente,**	easy;	easily.
feliz;	**felizmente,**	happy;	happily.
fiel;	**fielmente,**	faithful;	faithfully.

REMARK. — The affix *-mente* is originally the ablative singular of the Latin feminine noun **mens,** the *mind*, which finally passed over into the popular signification of *manner*, replacing the classic endings *-ter*, *-e*, etc. Thus: —

certâ mente, ciertamente,	**felici mente,** felizmente.
facili mente, fácilmente.	**fideli mente,** fielmente.

At different periods of the Spanish language, the affix was variously written *mientre*, *miente*, and *mente*, and was generally separated from the adjective till about the beginning of the fifteenth century.

580. The affix *-mente* is **atonic,** and does not, therefore, modify, in any way, the accent or structure of the adjective: —

ásperamente;	fácilmente,	harshly;	easily.
útilmente;	cortēsmente,	usefully;	politely.
ciērtamente;	certísimamente,	surely;	very surely.
fuērtemente;	fortísimamente,	strongly;	most strongly.

581. When two or more adverbs in *-mente* follow one another connected by a conjunction, the affix is applied to the last adjective only: —

clara y distinta**mente**,	clearly and distinctly.
justa ó injusta**mente**,	justly or unjustly.
prudente pero terminante**mente**,	prudently, but decidedly.

582. Adverbs in *-mente* usually express **manner**, and in this sense may be equally turned into adverbial phrases by employing the adjective with the noun **manera** or **modo**, *way*, *manner*: —

seguramente, **de una manera segura,** *or* **de un modo seguro.**
terminantemente, **de una manera** (*or* **de un modo**) **terminante.**
justa y verdaderamente, *or* **de un modo justo y verdadero.**

583. Adjectives derived from the names of countries, provinces, and cities, are made adverbs of manner by assuming the dative singular feminine with the definite article, agreeing with some noun understood like **usanza**, *usage*, *style*, *fashion*: —

á la española,	in the Spanish fashion.
á la francesa,	in the French style.
á la valenciana,	after the mode of Valencia.
á la andaluza,	in the Andalusian style.

These forms correspond to the Latin *more hispanico*, *gallico*, *valentino*, *bætico*.

REMARK. — The same idea may be rendered by the phrase **al estilo** followed by the adjective, or **al estilo de** followed by the proper noun: —

al estilo **andaluz,**	in the Andalusian style.
al estilo **de Castilla,**	after the manner of Castile.

584. Many common adjectives assume the feminine formula with *á la*, when they express *manner*, and adopt the adverbial affix when they indicate *time*: —

á la antigua, **á la** moderna,	in ancient — modern — style.
antiguamente; modernamente,	anciently; in recent times.

585. A few adjectives derived from proper nouns also admit the adverbial formula *á la*: —

andar **á la jineta**,[1]	to ride with short stirrups.
vestido **á la maja**,[2]	dressed picturesquely.

586. A very few derivative adverbs have the inorganic affix *s*, which belongs to a comparatively late period in the development of the language: —

Old.	Modern.	
ante;	ántes,	formerly; rather.
dempues (*de-in-post*);	despues,	afterwards; since.
dende (*de-inde*);	desde,	since.
estonçe (*ex tunc*);	entónces,	then.
mientre ([du]*m interim*);[3]	mientras,	while.
quiçab (*quis sapit*);	quizás *and* quizá,	perhaps.

Remark. — In the adverb **léjos**, *far*, *far off*, the *s* is organic, the word being from *laxius*, — by attraction, *laixus* and *lexos*, — the form in which it was written prior to the appearance of the Academy's *Dictionary* in 1726–39.

---

[1] The *jinete* or *ginete* is a name derived from that of a Barbary clan, — the *Beni*-**Zenēta**, — once the famous Moorish cavalry of Spain, characterized, aside from their armor, by their peculiar mode of riding, so that **andar á la jineta** now means *to ride with short stirrups*, after the manner of the "Zeneta" family.

[2] The "Maja" and "Manola" are Spanish types of women now only to be met with, as such, in the plays of Ramon de la Cruz, or on the boards of the Madrid theatres. In their fatigue uniforms of plain *percalina*, their descendants are soberly employed in the government tobacco factories.

[3] Compare *Mingo*, old Spanish for **Domingo**, *Dominic*.

587. *Compound* adverbs consist of two or more words variously associated, as substantives, adjectives, and adverbs with prepositions, adverbs with adverbs, etc.

a. With the article:—

á la clara, } *manifestly.*
á las claras, }
á la larga, *in the long run.*
á la ligera, *superficially.*
á la moda, *in fashion.*
á la verdad, *truly.*
al contado, *in cash, cash.*
al momento, *instantly.*
al paso, *at a walk, slowly.*
al punto, *immediately.*
al revés, *on the other side.*
al vivo, *to the life.*
á lo divino, *in the sacred style.*
en el acto, *instantly.*
en lo sucesivo, *henceforward.*
por lo más, *at most.*
por lo ménos, *at least.*
por lo pronto, *for the present.*

b. Without the article, singular:—

á caballo, *on horseback.*
á conciencia, *conscientiously.*
á escape, *in haste, quick.*
á menudo, *often.*
á pié, *on foot.*
á porfía, *persistently.*
á una, *together,*
con ligereza, *superficially.*
con todo, *notwithstanding.*
de antemano, *beforehand.*
de buena gana, *willingly.*
de contínuo, *continually.*
de dia, *by day.*
de etiqueta, *in full dress.*
de frente, *face to face.*
de golpe, *suddenly.*
de hecho, *de facto, truly.*
de improviso, *off one's guard.*
de lance, *at a bargain.*
de molde, *perfectly.*
de noche, *by night.*
de nuevo, *anew.*
de paso, *on one's way.*
de prisa, *in haste.*
de pronto, *quickly.*
de propósito, *purposely.*
de raiz, *radically.*
de seguro, *surely.*
de suyo, *of one's own accord.*
de todo punto, *wholly.*
de tropel, *pell-mell.*
de vista, *by sight.*
en fin, *finally.*
en resúmen, *in short.*
en seguida, *at once.*
por alto, *over.*
por cierto, *certainly, of course.*
por consiguiente, *consequently.*
por mayor, *at wholesale.*
por menor, *at retail.*
por supuesto, *of course.*
por último, *lastly.*
por ventura, *peradventure.*
sin novedad, *as usual.*

c. Without the article, plural: —

á ciegas, *blindly.*
á coces, *with kicks, kicking.*
á cuestas, *on one's shoulders.*
á escondidas, *secretly.*
á escondillas, *stealthily.*
á gatas, *on all fours.*
á hurtadillas, *stealthily.*
á oscuras, *in the dark.*
á pié juntillas, *firmly.*
á ojos cerrados, *blindly.*
á trechos, *at intervals.*
á sabiendas, *wittingly, knowingly.*
á secas, *plainly, plain.*[1]
á solas, *alone, in private.*
á tientas, *feeling one's way.*
á voces, *aloud.*
de oidas, *by hearsay, report.*
de rodillas, *on one's knees.*
de veras, *truly.*
en ayunas, *agog, uninformed.*
en cueros, *naked.*
por momentos, *every moment.*

588. To these may be added a few Latin technical terms, some of them more or less corrupted: —

alias,[2] *otherwise called.*
ex profeso, *purposely.*
grátis, *gratis.*
inclusive, *inclusive.*
incontinenti, *at once.*
infraganti (flagranti delicto), *in the act.*
interin, *meanwhile.*
item *and* iten, *furthermore.*
máxime, *especially.*

589. With reference to their *signification,* adverbs may be variously classed as: —

a. Adverbs of *time:* —

ahora; entónces,	now; then.
amenudo; raras veces,	often; seldom.
anoche; anteanoche,	last night; night before last.
ántes; despues,	before; afterward.
ayer; anteayer,	yesterday; day before yesterday.
hoy; mañana,	to-day; to-morrow.
siempre; nunca,	always; never.
tarde; temprano,	late; early.

---

[1] As: se llamó Amadís **á secas,** *he called himself plain Amadis.*

[2] Always written in abbreviation and between parentheses; as, **José Blanco (a) Pepito el Chico,** *Joseph White,* alias "*Little Joe.*"

b. Adverbs of *place:* —

adelante; atrás,	forward; backward.
á derecha; á izquierda,	on the right; on the left.
aquí, allí; acá, allá,	here, there; hither, thither.
arriba; abajo; encima; debajo,	up; down; above; below.
cerca; léjos; dentro; fuera,	near; far; within; without.

c. Adverbs of *manner:* —

así; como,	so; as.
alto, *or* en alta voz,	aloud, *or* audibly.
bajo, *or* en voz baja,	low, *or* in a low tone.
bien; mal,	well; badly *or* ill.
con el aliento,	in a whisper.
mejor; peor,	better; worse.

and most adverbs in *-mente.*

d. Adverbs of *quantity:* —

mucho; muy; poco,	much; very; little.
ménos; por lo menos,	less; at least.
más; por lo más,	more; at most.
demasiado, *or* sobrado,	too; too much.
bastante; harto (asaz, *obs.*),	enough; sufficiently.
algo; como; apénas,	somewhat; about; scarcely.

e. Adverbs of *affirmation* and *negation:* —

sí; eso sí; justo; claro,	yes; that indeed; true; of course
por supuesto; por cierto,	of course; certainly.
ciertamente; verdaderamente,	surely; truly.
sin duda,	undoubtedly.
no; eso no; nada,	no; not that; not at all.
tampoco; ni yo tampoco,	no; nor I either.
nunca; jamás,	never.

f. Adverbs of *doubt:* —

acaso; tal vez, *or* quizás,	perchance; perhaps.
apénas; probablemente,	hardly; probably.
difícilmente,	unlikely, improbably.

590. There are also in Spanish a great number of adverbial phrases like the following: —

á más correr, *at one's utmost speed.*
á más no poder, *with all one's [might.*
á más tardar, *at the latest.*
cuando ménos, *at least.*
cuanto ántes, *as soon as possible.*
de acá para allá, *hither and thither.*
de aquí para allí, *here and there.*
de cuando en cuando, } *now and*
de vez en cuando, } *then.*
de hito en hito, (to look) *through and through.*
de parte á parte, (to thrust) *[through.*
en alguna parte, *somewhere.*
en cualquier parte, *anywhere.*
en ninguna parte, } *nowhere.*
en parte alguna, } *nowhere.*
en otra parte, *elsewhere.*
hoy dia, } *at the present day,*
hoy en dia, } *now-a-days.*
luego á luego, *little by little* (time).
paso á paso, *step by step, slowly.*
poco á poco, *little by little* (degree).
uno á uno, *one by one, one after another.*

591. Adverbs in *-mente* are frequently replaced by a phrase composed of the preposition **con**, *with*, and the appropriate noun: —

francamente,	*or*	**con franquēza,**	frankly.
maliciosamente,	*or*	**con malicia,**	maliciously.
rápidamente,	*or*	**con rapidēz,**	rapidly.
recelosamente,	*or*	**con recēlo,**	apprehensively.
enojosamente,	*or*	**con enojo,**	angrily.
cautelosamente,	*or*	**con cautēla,**	circumspectly.

Use of Certain Adverbs.

592. Some adverbs stand after nouns in the sense of "up" and "down," "out" and "in," "before" and "after," etc: —

escalera **arriba,** *up stairs.*
escalera **abajo,** *down stairs.*
cuesta **arriba,** *up hill.*
ciudad **abajo,** *down town.*
tierra **adentro,** *inland.*
mar **afuera,** *seaward.*
camino **adelante,** *onward.*
meses **ántes,** *months before.*
dias **despues,** *days afterwards.*
años **atrás,** *years back, ago.*

593. The words **acaso** in the modern language, and **por ventura** in the quainter style, both meaning *forsooth, pray*, are often mere interrogative signs, and as such need not be translated: —

¿**acaso** soy yo el que tengo la culpa?	am I the one to blame (forsooth)?
¿**acaso** no me entiende V.?	don't you understand me?
¿es hora esta **por ventura** de hallar la puerta abierta?	is this an hour to find the door open?
¿y habéisla visto algun dia **por ventura**?	and have ye seen her at any time, pray?

594. **Aquí**, **ahí**, and **allí**, with verbs of rest, bear the same relation to each other that the demonstratives *este*, *ese*, and *aquel*, do. With verbs of motion, they properly assume the forms **acá**, **ahí**, **allá**: —

Rest.	Motion.	
aquí,	acá,	here (where *I* am).
ahí,	ahí,	there (where *you* are).
allí,	allá,	there (distant from both).
por aquí,	por acá,	this way, here, hereabouts.
por ahí,	por ahí,	that way, there, thereabouts.
por allí,	por allá,	that way, there, thereabouts.

aquí está,	here he is, } (where *I* am).
viene **acá**,	here he comes, }
ahí está,	there he is, } (where *you* are).
ahí va,	there he goes, }
allí está,	there he is, } (distant from both).
allá va,	there he goes, }
¿vive V. **por aquí**?	do you live hereabouts?
coloque V. eso **por ahí**,	set that there, somewhere.

Remark. — **Por ahí** has also certain vague meanings referring to the whereabouts of persons and things, not easily translated. It is conveniently used when we do not know or wish to declare where a person or thing is, as well in a favorable as in an unfavorable sense: —

¿dónde está fulano?—estará **por ahí**,	where is so and so?—I presume he's off somewhere.
anda **por ahí** como siempre,	he is at his old haunts.
la cesta está **por ahí** fuera,	the basket is out there somewhere.

a. We may say **aquí en**, *here in* (Madrid, where *I* am); **ahí en**, *there in* (Valparáiso, where *you* are); but **allá en**, *there in* (California, where *neither* is)—never **allí en**. In good English, the adverb is usually omitted in such cases:—

aquí en Filadélfia,	(here) in Philadelphia.
ahí en Sevilla,	(there) in Seville.
allá en Bóston,	(there) in Boston.

b. By the same principle, **de aquí** means *from here*, or *hence* (from what *I* have said); **de ahí**, *thence* (from what *you* have said); and **de allí**, *from there*, *thence* (from what *has been* said).

595. **Donde**, *where*, is either an interrogative adverb of place, or a relative signifying *which*. Its meaning is rendered specific by prepositions like **á**, *to*; **en**, *in*; **de**, *from*, and **por**, *through*:—

Interrogative.

¿**dónde** vive V.?	where do you live? (*rest.*)
¿**á dónde** va V.?	where are you going? (*motion.*)
¿**de dónde** viene V.?	where do you come from?
¿**por dónde** pasa V.?	which way do you go?

Relative.

la calle **donde**, *or* **en donde** vive,	the street where *or* in which he lives.
la calle **á donde** va,	the street to which he goes.
la calle **de donde** viene,	the street from which he comes.
las calles **por donde** pasa,	the streets through which he passes.

REMARK. — **Donde** assumes the graphic accent only when it is interrogative in a direct or indirect sentence: —

¿**dónde** vive?	where does he live?
no sé **dónde** vive,	I do not know where he lives.
¿**á dónde** va?	where is he going?
ignoro **á dónde** vaya,	I do not know where he is going.

596. The adverbs *ago*, *since*, are expressed by certain tenses of the verbs **hacer** and **haber** used impersonally: —

hacer	*haber*	
hace cuatro dias,	cuatro dias **há**,	four days ago.
hace mucho tiempo,	mucho tiempo **há**,	long ago.
hacía un mes,	un mes **había**,	(it was) a month ago.
hará seis años,	seis años **habrá**,	(it will be) six years ago.

597. **Mismo** qualifies such adverbs of time and place as *ahora*, *hoy*, *ayer*, *mañana*, *aquí*, *allí*, etc.: —

ahora **mismo**; hoy **mismo**,	this very moment: — day.
ayer **mismo**; mañana **mismo**,	only yesterday; to-morrow surely.
aquí **mismo**; **allí mismo**,	in this — that — very place.

598. **Muy**, *very*, *very much*, qualifies adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial expressions, in the *positive* degree: —

muy bueno; **muy** bien,	very good; very well.
muy amado; **muy** alegremente,	very much beloved; very gaily.
muy á la ligera,	very rapidly, superficially.

a. Likewise past participles of verbs conjugated with *ser*, *estar*, or their substitutes: —

es **muy** amado,	he is very much beloved.
estaba **muy** afligido,	he was very much grieved.
se quedó **muy** satisfecho,	he was very well satisfied.
muy airado; **muy** exaltado,	very much angered — excited.

599. Mucho, *much,* and **muchísimo,** *very much,* qualify adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial phrases, in the *comparative* degree: —

mucho mejor; mucho peor,	much better; much worse.
mucho más; mucho ménos,	much more; much less.
mucho más contento,	much better pleased.
muchísimo mejor — peor,	very much better — worse.

a. Likewise verbs, and past participles conjugated with *haber:* —

lo siento **mucho** — **muchísimo,**	I regret it much — very much.
no conviene hablar **mucho,**	it is not fitting to talk much.
se ha quejado **mucho,**	he complained a good deal.
han sufrido **muchísimo,**	they endured very much.

a. *Muy* cannot qualify *mucho,* in the present state of the language; *very much, a great deal,* must be expressed by the superlative **muchísimo**: —

pide **muchísimo,**	he demands a great deal.
padece **muchísimo,**	he suffers very much.

b. *Muy* can never stand alone without an adjective or an adverb; in such case it is always replaced by *mucho* in the signification of *muy:* —

¿es divertido el cuento? — **mucho,**	is the story amusing? — very.
¿está muy triste? — sí, **mucho,**	is he very sad? — yes, very;

but not *mucho* divertido, *mucho* triste.

600. Recientemente, *recently,* is reduced to **reciēn** when standing as an adverb before participial adjectives: —

llegó **recientemente,**	he arrived recently.
el **recien** llegado,	the newly-arrived person.
un niño **recien** nacido,	a new-born child.
los **recien** venidos,	the new comers.
los **recien** casados,	the newly-married pair.
casas **recien** construidas,	newly-built houses.

601. The conjunction **si**, *if*, is often employed adverbially to mean *why*, expressive of wonder, surprise, or it may have the force of an expletive: —

si no he dicho nada,	why, I did not say anything.
si lo acabo de ver,	why, I just saw it.
pero, señores, **si** no lo he dicho todavía.	but, gentlemen, I have not mentioned it yet.

602. **Sí** (with the graphic accent) signifies *yes*, and may be strengthened and emphasized by adding particles like *tal*, *que*, or by its position. It is then translated by *yes*, *indeed*, or by one of the modal auxiliaries *do*, *did*, *would*, etc.: —

¿lo ve V. ya? — **sí tal**, / **sí que** lo veo, / lo veo, **sí**,	do you see it now? — I do. / indeed, I do. / yes, I do.
¿vendrá V.? — **sí tal**, / **sí que** vendré, / vendré, **sí**,	will you come? — I will. / indeed, I will. / yes, I will.
¿le conviene á V. esto? — **eso sí** que me conviene,	does this suit you? — that, indeed, does suit me.
¿le gustan á V. los cuadros? — **esos sí** que me gustan,	do you like the pictures? — those, I do, indeed.

a. In contrasted clauses, **sí** is likewise equivalent to *indeed*, *I grant*, *I concede*, or to any appropriate modal auxiliary: —

pobre, **sí**; pero honrado como ninguno,[1]	poor, it is true; but second to none in integrity.
vendré, **sí**; pero no hoy,	I will come; but not to-day.
es licencia, **sí**; pero no poética,	it is a license, I grant you; but not a poetical one.
él no lo quiso; yo, **sí**,	he did not wish to; I did.
estos, **sí**; pero no aquellos,	these, indeed; but not those.

[1] In the dialect of the illiterate, *probe sí; pero honrão como denguno.*

b. After verbs of declaring, believing, suspecting, fearing, and so forth, the adverbs **sí** and **no** are joined to such verbs by means of the conjunction **que**, *that*, and are translated by *yes* or *so*, *not*, or by the appropriate modal auxiliary: —

dice **que sí**, — **que no**,	he says "yes," — "no," *or* "that he will," "— will not."
creo **que sí**, — **que no**,	I think so, — not, *or* that I (he) will, — will not.

Negation in Spanish.

603. **No** signifies *not*, and always stands before the verb, or in default of the verb, after a subject-pronoun: —

no tengo; ¿**no** tengo yo?	I have not; have I not?
no lo tengo; ¿**no** lo tengo yo?	I have it not; have I it not?
yo **no**; ellos **no**,	not I; not they.

604. Two negatives strengthen one another in Spanish. Therefore adverbs like **ni**, *neither*, *nor;* **nunca** or **jamás**, *never;* **nada**, *nothing*, *not anything*, require the verb to be made negative when they stand after the verb; but, if they stand before it, the negative is not required: —

no tengo **ni** pluma **ni** papel, **no** tengo pluma **ni** papel, **ni** pluma **ni** papel tengo,	I have neither pen nor paper.
no le he visto **nunca**, **nunca** le he visto,	I have never seen him.
no me lo dijo **jamás**, **jamás** me lo dijo,	he never told me so.
tal obra **jamás** la tuvo entre sus libros,	he never had such a work among his books.
no nos hace falta **nada**, **nada** nos hace falta,	we lack nothing (nothing is wanting to us).

a. *Nunca* and *jamás* may be associated in the same sentence to emphasize a negation: —

ya **no** le hablaré **nunca jamás**,	I shall *never* speak to him again.
nunca jamás se lo volveré á decir,	I shall never say it to him again.

b. Instead of *nunca* or *jamás*, the term **en mi vida**, without a negative expressed, is frequently employed for *never, never in my life:* —

en mi vida he dicho semejante cosa,	I never said such a thing.
en mi vida me había visto señor de tanto dinero junto,	never before was I master of so much money at one time.

c. *Nunca, jamás,* and *en mi vida,* signify, on the other hand, **ever,** in clauses containing **sin,** *without;* **ni** or **tampoco,** *nor;* in interrogative and exclamatory sentences expecting negative answers, and after comparatives or superlatives: —

sin que diga **nunca** lo que piensa,	without his ever saying what he thinks.
sin haberle visto **jamás**,	without ever having seen him.
¿cómo podré pagar **nunca** todo lo que le debo?	how can I ever pay all that I owe him?
¿podría yo ir **jamás** á un sitio tal?	could I ever go to such a place?
tampoco se diga **nunca** que yo le haya faltado,	nor let it ever be said that I have slighted him.
hoy está **peor** que **nunca**,	he is worse to-day than ever.
tiene la figura **más mala** que **en mi vida** he visto,	he has the worst countenance that I ever saw.
(un animal) **el más adornada** que **en mi vida** he visto,	(an animal) the most adorned with trappings I ever saw.

605. **Siquiera,** *even, at least,* may be employed affirmatively or negatively with *no* and *ni:* —

le rogué me hiciese el favor una vez **siquiera**,	I begged him to do me the favor once at least.
no quiso rebajar un real **siquiera**,	he would not take off even a *real* (five cents).
ni siquiera una vez, *or* **ni** una vez **siquiera**,	not even once.
ni un real **siquiera**, *or* **ni siquiera** un real,	not one real even.
no le ofreci **ni** uno **siquiera**,	I did not promise him one even.

606. **Tampoco**, *nor — either, no*, can be used with *no* and *ni* when it closes a negative phrase, and without them when it begins one. In a series of two or more negative answers, it replaces the adverb *no* after the first: —

ni yo **tampoco**,	nor I either.
¿quiere V. este libro? — no. Y ese? — **tampoco**,	do you want this book? — no. And that one? — no.
no quiero ese libro **tampoco**, *or* **tampoco** quiero ese libro,	I do not want that book, either, *or* nor do I want that book.

607. **Ya**, *already, now* (Lat. *jam*), means, with a negative, *no longer, not any longer, not — now*: —

ya no me habla,	he does not speak to me now.
ya no hace falta,	I don't need it any more.

608. Certain verbs, in association with others, are translated into English by adverbial expressions. Such are: **volver á**, followed by an infinitive, meaning *again*; **acabar de**, followed likewise by an infinitive and equivalent to *to have just*, while the infinitive is translated by the past participle: —

vuelve á hablar; á escribir,	he speaks again; writes again.
acaba de salir; de entrar,	he has just gone out; come in.
acababa de llegar,	he had just arrived.

(*literally*, he returns to speak; he finishes to go out.)

Comparison of Adverbs.

609. Adverbs, like adjectives, have the three usual degrees of comparison, but without variation for gender and number: —

Positive.	Comparative.
cerca, *near.*	**más cerca,** *nearer.*
léjos, *far, far off.*	**más léjos,** *farther, farther off.*
claro, *clearly.*	**más claro,** *more clearly.*
doctamente, *learnedly.*	**más doctamente,** *more learnedly.*
fielmente, *faithfully.*	**más fielmente,** *more faithfully.*
Superlative Relative.	**Superlative Absolute.**
(lo) más cerca, *the nearest.*	**cerquísimo** (§ 180, *b*), *very near.*
(lo) más léjos, *the farthest off.*	**lejísimo,** *very far off.*
(lo) más claro, *the most clearly.*	**clarísimo,** *very clearly.*
(lo) más doctamente, *the most learnedly.*	**doctísimamente,** *very learnedly.*
(lo) más fielmente, *the most faithfully.*	**fidelísimamente,** *very faithfully.*

610. Four adverbs have an independent organic comparison: —

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative Relative.	Superlative Absolute.
mucho, *much.*	**más,** *more.*	**(lo) más,** *the most.*	**muchísimo,** *very much.*
poco, *little.*	**ménos,** *less.*	**(lo) ménos,** *the least.*	**poquísimo,** *very little.*
bien, *well.*	**mejor,**[1] *better.*	**(lo) mejor,** *the best.*	—— ——
mal, *badly.*	**peor,**[2] *worse.*	**(lo) peor,**[2] *the worst.*	**malísimo,** *very badly.*

611. Another form of the superlative absolute is constructed by associating with the positive one of the

[1] **Más bien,** like **ántes,** means *rather.*
[2] Occasionally **más mal,** *worse* or *worst.*

adverbs **muy, bien,** *very;* **bastante, harto,** *quite, sufficiently;* **sumamente,** *exceedingly;* etc.: —

muy cerca; **bien** claro,	very near; very clearly.
bastante léjos,	a good way off, quite far.
sumamente bien,	exceedingly well.

REMARK. — A kind of superlative absolute is found in the repetition of certain adverbs: —

bien bien, *very well.*	luego luego, *very soon.*
casi casi, *very nearly.*	lo ménos lo ménos, *the very least.*
de par en par, *wide open.*	ya ya, *very truly, quite so.*

612. Comparative formulæ are: —

613. Equality, with adverbs: **tan** — **como,** *as — as;* **no** – **ménos** — **que,** *not – less — than:* —

escribe **tan** bien **como** V.,	he writes as well as you.
vive **tan** léjos **como** nosotros,	he lives as far off as we.
lee **tan** corrientemente **como** su maestro,	he reads as fluently as his teacher.
no viene **ménos** amenudo **que** yo,	he does not come less often than I do.
no trabaja con **ménos** asiduidad **que** el oficial (§ 624),	he does not work less steadily than the journeyman.

a. With verbs: **tanto como,** or **tanto cuanto,** *as much as;* **no** – **ménos que,** *not – less than:* —

estudia **tanto como** (*or* **cuanto**) su hermano,	he studies as much as his brother.
no trabajo **ménos que** V.,	I do not work less than you.

614. Superiority, with adverbs: **más** — **que,** *more — than:* —

escribe **más** rápidamente **que** el dependiente de banquero,	he writes more rapidly than the banking-clerk.
vive **más** cerca **que** V.,	he lives nearer than you.

a. With verbs: **más que**, *more than;* **mejor que**, *better than:* —

escribe **más que** su hermano,	he writes more than his brother.
vivirá **más que** nosotros,	he will live longer than we.
está mucho **mejor que** ántes,	he is much better than formerly.

615. Inferiority, with adverbs: **ménos — que**, *less — than;* **no – tan — como**, *not – so — as:* —

escribe **ménos** elegantemente **que** su maestro,	he writes less beautifully than his master.
no habla **tan** corrientemente **como** su hermano,	he does not speak so fluently as his brother.
me visita **ménos** amenudo **que** ántes,	he calls on me less frequently than before.
no me visita **tan** amenudo **como** solía,	he does not call on me so often as before.
no obra **tan** de ligero **como**	he does not act so giddily as he used to.

a. With verbs: **ménos que**, *less than;* **no – tanto como**, or **no – tanto cuanto**, *not – so much as;* **peor que**, *worse than:* —

sale **ménos que** ántes,	he goes out less than formerly.
no sale **tanto cuanto** solía, / **no** sale **tanto como** solía,	he does not go out as much as he used to.
vive **peor que** sus vecinos todos,	he lives worse than all his neighbors.
escribe **peor que** su hermana,	he writes worse than his sister.

616. The correlatives **cuanto — tanto**, *the — so much the* —, may be used with any comparative adverb. **Tanto**, *so much*, may be omitted from the formula in both languages, unless used alone: —

cuanto más habla, (**tanto**) **más** perjudica su causa,	the more he talks, (so much) the more he injures his case.
cuanto más estudia, (**tanto**) **más** aprende,	the more he studies, (so much) the more he learns.
cuanto ménos escribe, (**tanto**) **peor** sale su letra,	the less he writes, (so much) the worse his hand appears.

cuanto ménos, (tanto) mejor,	the less, the better.
tanto peor para él,	so much the worse for him.
tanto mejor para todos,	so much the better for all.

617. *Than* before a numeral is expressed by **de**, instead of **que**, unless the verb in the first member of the comparison be negative: —

se lo dije más **de** dos veces,	I told him so more than twice.
hace más **de** mes y medio que estoy aquí,	I have been here more than a month and a half.
no me dijo más **que** dos palabras,	he did not say more than two words to me.

618. *Than* is expressed by **de lo que** when the second member of the comparison contains a verb forming a complete sentence: —

pide más **de lo que** tengo,	he asks more than I have.

619. In the phrase, **no poder ménos de**, *to be able to do no less than*, the use of *que* is regarded in Spain as provincial: —

no pudo **ménos de** censurarle,	he could not do less than censure him.

620. The use of the expletive adverb **no**, *not*, may be admitted into the second member of a comparison after **que**, *than*, provided the first member be not interrogative, or negative expecting a negative answer: —

más vale el contentamiento que **no** las riquezas,	contentment is better than riches.
¿no son ellos más felices que [nosotros?	are they not happier than we?

621. The relative superlative of adverbs is identical in form with the comparative: —

él es quien vive **más cerca,**	he lives nearest.
el que lee **más distintamente,**	the one who reads the most distinctly.
los que escriben **más rápida** y **elegantemente,**	the ones who write most rapidly and beautifully.
los reyes no son los que **más** gozan,	kings are not the ones who enjoy most.
los que **ménos** trabajan,	those who toil least.
el que come **mejor** es el que tiene buen apetito,	he who dines the best is the one who has a good appetite.
es lo que **ménos** le preocupa,	that troubles him least.

a. If, however, the relative superlative is followed by a qualifying term, the neuter article **lo,** *the,* may be used: —

lo más cerca *or* **cuanto más cerca posible,**	the nearest possible, *or* as near as possible.
acérquese V. lo más **que pueda,**	come as near as you can.
se acercó lo más **que pudo,**	he came as near as he could.
lo ménos **posible,**	the least possible.
obra lo más cuerdamente **que pueda,** / **que le sea posible,**	*he acts as prudently as he can.*

REMARK. — We may also say, **hizo lo posible para . . . ,** *or* **cuanto estuvo de su parte para . . . ,** *he did all that he could to . . .*

622. When "most" means *the greater part,* it is expressed by **la mayor parte** in the singular, and by **los** or **las más** in the plural: —

me dejó en herencia **la mayor parte** de todo cuanto poseía,	he bequeathed to me the most of all that he possessed.
los más de los hombres,	most men.
los más no consintieron en ello,	the greater part did not agree to it.
de las señoras **las más** se quedaron en casa,	of the ladies, the greater part stayed at home.
fabulosos son **los más** de los asuntos por los trágicos de todo tiempo inmortalizados,	the greater part of the subjects immortalized by tragic writers in every age are pure fable.

623. The absolute superlative indicates a very high degree, but without comparison: —

vive **lejísimo**, *or* **muy léjos**,	he lives a great way off.
escribe **elegantísimamente**, *or* con **suma** elegancia,	he writes most beautifully.
se ha portado **muy mal**, *or* **malísimamente**,	he has acted despicably.
el actor representó **pésimamente**, *or* **malísimamente**,	the actor played very badly indeed.

624. Adverbs formed by the association of the preposition **con** with a substantive, insert between them the first term of the comparative: —

Con frecuencia,	*Frequently.*
con **tanta** frecuencia **como** ántes,	as frequently as before.
con **más** frecuencia **que** ántes,	more frequently than before.
con **suma** frecuencia, *or* con **la mayor** frecuencia,	very frequently.

But, aside from *con*: —

Á gusto,	*Satisfactorily.*
tan á gusto **como** siempre,	as satisfactorily as ever.
más á gusto **que** nunca,	more satisfactorily than ever.
más á gusto; **muy** á gusto,	most satisfactorily; very satisfactorily.

The Preposition.

625. Prepositions are **simple** or **complex**, according as they govern their object directly, or in combination with other words.

626. The *simple* prepositions are: —

á, *to.*	**cabe**, *near*, *by* (archaism).
ante, *before*, *in presence of.*	**con**, *with.*
bajo, *under.*	**contra**, *against.*

de, *of*, *from*.
desde (vulg. **dende**), *from*, [*since*.
durante, *during*.
en, *in*, *at*, *on*.
entre, *between*, *among*.
excepto, *except*.
hácia, *towards*.
hasta, *till*, *until*, *up to*, *to*.
mediante, *through*, *by means of*.
ménos, *except*, *but*.
no obstante, *notwithstanding*.
para, *for*, *in order to*, *to*.
por, *by*, *through*.
sacado, a (part.), *deducting*.
salvo, *excepting*, *save*.
segun, *according to*.
sin, *without*.
so (*sub*), *under*, *on*.
sobre, *on*, *upon*, *about*.
tras, *after*.

627. The *complex* prepositions are:—

a. Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *de*, that is, governing the genitive:—

acerca de, *about*, *concerning*.
además de, *beside*.
alrededor de, *around*.
ántes de, *before* (time, order).
cerca de, *near*, *about*.
debajo de, *under* (place).
delante de, *before* (place).
dentro de, *within*, *in*, *into*.
despues de, *after* (time, order).
detrás de, *behind* (place).
encima de, *on*, *over*.
fuera de, *outside*, *beyond*.
léjos de, *far from*.

b. Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *á*, that is, governing the dative:—

conforme á, *according to*.
contrario á, *contrary to*.
frente á, *opposite*, *in front of*.
junto á, *near*, *close by*.
respecto á, *with respect to*.
tocante á, *touching*.

c. One composed of a single adverb followed by *con*:—

juntamente con, together with.

d. Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *de*:—

á casa de, *to the house of*.
á causa de, *on account of*.
á excepcion de, *with the exception of*.
á fuerza de, *by dint of*.

á la vista de, *within sight of.*
al cabo de, *at the expiration of.*
al lado de, *by the side of.*
al través de, *across, through.*
á pesar de, *in spite of.*
á razon de, *at the rate of.*
de casa de, *from the house of.*
de parte de, *on the part of.*
en casa de, *at the house of.*
en frente de, *opposite.*
en lugar de, *instead of.*
en medio de, *in the midst of.*
en vez de, *instead of.*
en virtud de, *by virtue of.*
en vista de, *in view of.*
más allá de, *beyond.*
por causa de, *on account of.*
por el lado de, *on the side of.*
por razon de, *by reason of.*
sin embargo de, *notwithstanding.*

e. Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *á*: —

en cuanto á, *with respect to.*
en órden á, *with regard to.*

f. Those composed of two successive prepositions: —

de á, *of, at, — each.*
para con, *towards, to.*

USE OF CERTAIN PREPOSITIONS.

A, En, De.

628. The leading signification of **á** is *to*, with verbs of motion toward a given point; that of **en**, *in, at, on*, with verbs of rest in a place: —

Voy	I am going
á España, **á** Lisbōa, **al** correo,	to Spain, to Lisbon, to the post;
al rio, **á** palacio, **á** casa,	to the river, to the palace, home;
á la tienda, **á** la plaza,	to the shop, to market.
Estoy	I am
en España, **en** Madrid,	in Spain, at Madrid;
en palacio, **en** casa,	at the palace, at home.
Vengo	I come
de España, **de** Madrid,	from Spain, from Madrid;
de palacio, **de** casa,	from the palace, from home;
de la tienda, **del** Museo,	from the shop, from the Museum.

REMARK. — It will be observed that the Spanish use of *á* and *en* differs materially from the French: *je vais en Espagne, à Lisbonne; j'ai demeuré en Espagne, á Madrid.*

629. **Á** is further used: —

a. In general, in the dative relation — *to:* —

al hombre; **al** muchacho,	to the man; to the boy.
á la mujer; **á** los niños,	to the woman; to the children.

b. To mark a personal object when specific (§ 76): —

busco **al** criado; busco un criado,	I look for *the* servant; — *a* servant.
veo **á** la mujer; veo una mujer,	I see *the* woman; — *a* woman.
temen **á** Dios; — **al** juez,	they fear God; — the judge.

c. As a connective between certain verbs and a dependent infinitive — *to:* —

voy **á** verle,	I am going to see him.
empieza **á** hablar,	he begins to speak.
echó **á** correr,	he set out to run.
se puso **á** llorar,	he commenced to cry.

d. Temporary situation — *at:* —

á la puerta; **á** la esquina,	at the door; at the corner.
á la mesa; **al** mostrador,	at table; at the counter.
al Ateněo; **á** la Academia,	at the Atheneum; — Academy.

e. Time, price, rate, — *at:* —

á la noche; **al** amanecer,	at night; at dawn.
á las doce; **á** media noche,	at noon; at midnight.
á dos reales el metro,	at two reals per metre.
á veinte duros mensuales,	at twenty dollars a month.
á ocho reales diarios,	at forty cents *per diem*.
¿**á** cuánto? — **á** tanto,	at how much? — at so much.

f. Distance off — *at - off:* —

á una lēgua; **á** veinte pasos,	at a league off; at twenty paces.
á tiro de ballesta; **á** tiro de piedra,	at a bow shot; at a stone's throw.

g. Distributively — *by:* —

uno **á** uno; dos **á** dos,	one by one; two by two.
gota **á** gota,	drop by drop.
poco **á** poco,	little by little.

h. Adverbially — *on, in, with:* —

á caballo; **á** pié,	on horseback; on foot.
á tiempo; **á** palos,	in time; with blows.

i. After certain verbs — *on, at, in, off, from:* —

las ventanas dan **al** jardin,	the windows face the garden.
jugar **á** los nāipes; — **al** ajedrēz; — **á** la lotería,	to play (at) cards; — chess; — (*in*) the lottery.
sabe **á** herejía; sabe **á** ajo,	it savors of heresy; it tastes of [garlic.
huele **á** ámbar,	it smells of amber.
llevó **al** caballero una onza,	he charged the gentleman sixteen [dollars.
robó **al** mozo su chaqueta,	he stole the lad's jacket.

(*literally*, he took from the gentleman [the price of] an ounce; he stole from the lad his jacket).

j. Elliptically: —

á que no lo tiene V.,	I'll bet you haven't it.
á que sí; **á** que no,	I have; you haven't.

REMARK. — This ellipse, common in ordinary conversation, depends on the verb **apostar á**, *to wager that*, expressed or understood. **Apuesto** (*or* **apostaré**) **á que me va V. á pagar lo que me debe**, *I'll wager you'll pay me what you owe me.* — **A que no**, *I'll bet I won't.* — **A que sí**, *you will*, etc. So, **á que vendrá mañana Fulano de Tal**, *I'll wager So and So will come to-morrow.* — **A que no vendrá**, *I'll bet he won't*, etc. Not very elegant, but constantly heard.

630. **En** further signifies *on, in:* —

en la mesa; **en** la chimenēa; **en** la silla,	on the table; on the mantel-piece; on the chair.
en el cajon de la mesa,	in the table-drawer.
en la ciudad; **en** el campo,	in the city; in the country.
en su ausencia; **en** general,	in his absence; in general.

631. **De** primarily signifies *of,* and corresponds to the English possessive case: —

las tapias **de** la casa,	the (outside) walls of the house.
los árboles **del** pasēo,	the trees of the promenade.
el palacio **del** rey,	the king's palace.
un amor **de** madre,	a mother's love.

a. It is often to be translated by *to:* —

el camino **de** la Córte; — **de** la ciudad,	the road *or* way to the capital, — to the city.
la guia **de** España,	the guide-book to Spain.

b. It often connects words which are to be translated by compound expressions, or by an adjective and a noun: —

un buzon **de** correos,	a post-box, letter-box (public).
un apartado **de** correos,	a letter-box (private).
un billete **de** ferro-carril,	a railway ticket.
un talon **de** equipage,	a luggage-check.
un carro **de** mudanza,	a furniture van.
la estacion **del** mediodía,	the southern station.
el tren **del** Norte,	the northern train.
una cuchara **de** plata,	a silver spoon.
un reloj **de** oro,	a gold watch.

c. It denotes cause — *for, with:* —

lloró **de** gozo,	he wept for joy.
brincó **de** contento,	he leaped about with pleasure.
tiembla **de** frio; — **de** miedo,	he trembles with cold; — fear

d. After certain participles and adjectives: —

colmado **de** beneficios,	laden with benefits.
aborrecido **de** todos,	detested by all.

e. It is often superfluous in English: —

se olvida **de** sus amigos,	he forgets his friends.
abusa **de** la amistad,	he abuses friendship.
no me acuerdo **de** él,	I do not remember him.

f. After certain verbs — *as, in:* —

va **de** empleado,	he goes as a government-clerk.
va **de** embajador,	he goes as an ambassador.
está **de** luto,	he is in mourning.

Ante, Delante de, Ántes de.

632. Ante signifies *in the presence of* an authority; and, in an official sense, relating to persons, courts, deliberative bodies, nations, the world, history, the conscience, etc., viewed as judges, witnesses, or interested spectators: —

ante el juez; — el alcalde,	before the judge; — the mayor.
ante el gobierno; — una comision,	before the government; — a committee.
ante los tribunales; — la Cámara,	before the courts; — the House.
ante la nacion; — la historia,	before the nation; — history.
ante la conciencia; **ante** todos,	before conscience; before all.

a. Also, in general, *in presence of, in view of:* —

ante esta actitud del pueblo,	in view of this attitude of the people.

b. Likewise order and preference: —

ponen á cubierto **ante** todas cosas su responsabilidad,	first of all, they put their responsibility out of danger.
ante todo soy Español,	I am a Spaniard before all else.

633. Delante de denotes mere situation in front of things; location before people, but without the formality inherent in **ante**:—

delante de la casa; — **del** rey,	before the house; — the king.
delante del espejo; — **del** mundo,	before the mirror; — the world.
habló **delante de** mucha gente,	he spoke before many people.
lo dijo **delante de** testigos,	he said it before witnesses.

REMARK. — *Ante* and *delante de* may, therefore, be used interchangeably before persons, according as we attribute to them a judicial or critical attitude, or consider them as mere auditors.

634. Ántes de denotes priority of time, order, and rank:—

ántes de la comida; — **de** la reunion,	before dinner; before the meeting.
ántes de la una; — **de** las dos,	before one — two — o'clock.
ántes de un año; **ántes de** su llegada,	before a year; before his (her, their) arrival.
V. está **ántes de** mí,	you come before me.
un marques es **ántes de** un duque, y éste **ántes de** un conde,	a marquis is before a duke, and the latter before an earl.

Tras, Detrás de, Después de.

635. Tras is *after* in the sense of what immediately *follows*:—

tras mí viene mi amigo,	after me comes my friend.
tras la soga viene la mula,	after the rope came the mule.
tras un mal vino otro,	after one misfortune came another.
tras la adversidad vendrá mejor suerte,	after adversity a better time will come.
uno **tras** otro,	one after another.
yo iba **tras** él,	I went after him.
tras esto,	(immediately) after this.

a. **Tras de** often occurs, but rather in the sense of *aside from, besides:* —

tras de venir tarde, regaña,	besides coming late, he finds fault.

636. **Detrás de** signifies *behind, close behind,* of place, situation, and order, corresponding to **delante de**, *in front of:* —

detrás de la puerta,	behind the door.
detrás de la tapia,	behind the wall.
se puso **detrás de** mí,	he got behind me.

637. **Despues de**, *after,* corresponds to **ántes de**, *before,* of time and order:—

despues de mucho tiempo,	after a long time.
llegó **despues de** todos,	he arrived the last of all.
el ministro es **despues del** embajador,	the minister is after the ambassador (in rank).
despues de haber platicado largo rato, al fin se sentó,	after having discoursed a long while, at last he sat down.

Bajo, So, Debajo de.

638. **Bajo** denotes situation close under; hence *beneath, underneath, below:* —

bajo la mano; — la piedra,	under the hand; — the stone.
bajo el cielo; **bajo** el sol,	beneath the sky; under the sun.

a. Figuratively and adverbially with the idea of protection, guarantee, subordination in rank, duty, etc.: —

bajo sobre; — fianza; — protesta,	under cover; — bonds; — protest.
bajo llave,	under lock and key.

bajo ciertas condiciones,	on certain conditions.
bajo palabra de honor,	upon honor.
bajo un gefe; **bajo** ayos,	under a superior; under tutors.

REMARK.—**Bajo de** is occasionally heard among the people, and frequently found in the older literature or modern quaint style.

639. **So** (Lat. *sub*), formerly interchangeable with *bajo* in the second sense, is now limited to a few phrases only:—

so pena de la vida, **bajo** pena de muerte,	under { forfeiture of life. / penalty of death.
so capa de; **so** pretexto de,	under the mask — pretence — of.

640. **Debajo de** corresponds to **encima de**, and denotes mere material situation, *under:*—

debajo de la mesa,	under the table.
debajo de la higuera,	under the fig-tree.
el miedo de las cosas **debajo de** tierra,	the fear of things underground.

REMARK.—*Bajo* and *debajo*, like *ante* and *delante*, are often used interchangeably.

bajo *or* **debajo de** mis plantas,	beneath *or* under my feet.

Sobre, Encima de.

641. **Sobre** (Lat. *super*) and **encima de** (en cima = *on top*) both mean *on, upon*, in the sense of location; but **encima** has an additional application to things higher than we — *up on.* It also means *over*, higher than one's head: as, *the birds fly over the house*, **encima de la casa:**—

sobre *or* **encima de** la mesa,	on the table.
sobre *or* **encima de** la silla,	on the chair.
encima del armario,	on the top of the wardrobe.
encima de la ciudad,	over the town *or* city.

a. **Sobre** has also the figurative sense of *over, more than, above:* —

amará Dios **sobre** todas las cosas,	to love God above all things.

b. It also signifies *of, concerning, about:* —

¿qué opina V. **sobre** esto?	what is your opinion about this?
hablando **sobre** estas cosas se exaltó,	speaking about these things, he became excited.

Con.

642. **Con** denotes accompaniment, means, and instrument: —

ir **con** alguno,	to go (along) with some one.
con estos recursos se rehabilitan,	by means of such expedients, they regain public favor.
le hirió **con** una porra,	he struck him with a club.

a. **Con** makes many idiomatic expressions with verbs, especially with **dar**, *to give:* —

dió con él en la calle,	he met him in the street.
dió con ellos por la ventana,	he threw them out of the window.
le **dió con** la puerta en los ojos,	he closed the door in his face.
dió consigo en el suelo,	he fell down.

Desde.

643. **Desde** signifies *from,* as a starting-point of time and place: —

desde entónces,	from that time, since then.
desde el principio,	from the beginning.
desde arriba hácia abajo,	from above, downwards.
desde la una en adelante,	from one o'clock onwards.
desde Lóndres hasta París,	from London to Paris.
desde muchos años,	for many years.

Hácia.

644. **Hácia** denotes material direction *towards:* —

los vió venir **hácia** sí,	he saw them coming toward him.
la proa del buque se dirijió **hácia** el Mediodia,	the ship's bow was pointed toward the south.
miraba **hácia** el puerto,	he was looking toward the port.
hácia la noche,	towards night.

a. It also is popularly used in the sense of moral direction *toward* one, like **para con**: —

demuestra mucho cariño **hácia** nosotros,	he displays a great attachment for us.

Hasta.

645. **Hasta** signifies *as far as, to, up to, till, until,* of place, time, and degree: —

hasta la puerta; — la ciudad,	up to the door; — the town.
hasta Paris; **hasta** Lóndres,	up to (*or* to) Paris; to London.
hasta entónces; **hasta** ahora,	until then; until now.
hasta las doce; — las dos,	up to twelve — two — o'clock.
la acompañé **hasta** su casa,	I went with her as far as her house.
hasta no más; **hasta** lo último,	as far as I could; up to the very last.

Para, Por.

646. **Para** represents the Latin dative and the prepositions *pro* and *ad;* therefore, its meaning is *for* in the sense of destination, end, purpose; and it also denotes the relation of one thing to another —*for, to, in order to, for the purpose of:* —

esta carta no es **para** V.,	this letter is not for you.
no sirve **para** militar,	he will not do for a soldier.
se sentía más apto **para** la política que **para** las letras,	he felt that he was better fitted for politics than for letters.

me marcho **para fuera,**	I am going abroad, *or* out of town
me parece que no es **para** ménos,	it seems to me I could not do less.
para hacer eso se necesitan tiempo y dinero,	to do that time and money are necessary.

647. **Por**, a confounding of the Latin *per* and *pro*, has the meanings of both —*for, in behalf of, for the sake of, by, through, along, on account of, out of, as:* —

lo hago **por** un amigo, (lo hago **para** un amigo,)	I do it for (in behalf of) a friend. (I am making it for a friend.)
dan dinero **por** verlo, (dan dinero **para** poder ver, y lo consiguen,)	they give money to see it. (they give money to be able to see, and they succeed.)
lo dan **por** cosa extraña,	they represent it as a strange thing.
ó, **por** mejor decir,	or, rather (to speak more correctly).
por miedo de las consecuencias,	for fear of consequences.
por (amor de) Dios,	for Heaven's sake.

Á casa de, En casa de.

648. The prepositions **á casa de**, *to the house* or *shop* of any one; **en casa de**, *at the house* or *shop* of any one, are respectively translated by *to* and *at* with the possessive case. The former is used with verbs of motion, and the latter with verbs of rest: —

ha ido **á casa del** Señor de Herrera,	he has gone to Mr. Herrera's.
viene **de casa de** Lhardy,	he comes from Lhardy's.
ha ido **á su casa**; — **á casa,**	he has gone to his house; — home.
está **en casa de** Murillo,	he is at Murillo's.
no vive ya más **en casa del** señor marqués,	he does not live at the marquis's any more.
¿á dónde va V.? — **á casa,** *or* **á casa del** señor conde,	where are you going? — **home,** *or* to the earl's.

¿de dónde viene V.? — **de casa,** *or* **de casa del** señor Moreno,	where do you come from? — from home, *or* from Mr. Moreno's.
¿en dónde ha estado V.? — **en casa,** *or* **en casa de** Lhardy,	where have you been? — home, *or* at Lhardy's.

649. **De á** (*of, at*) are employed to denote rate, denomination, or with adverbs to convert them into species of adjectives: —

un guardia civil **de á** caballo,	a mounted rural guard.
los **de á** caballo; los **de á** pié,	the cavalry; the infantry.
veinte sellos (de correo) **de á** veinte y cinco céntimos,	twenty five-cent stamps (twenty stamps at twenty-five centimes each).
dos cañones **de á** veinte y cuatro,	two twenty-four pounders (guns).
una moneda **de á** ocho (*obs.*),	a piece of eight (coin).
el patio **de á** mano derecha,	the right-hand court.

REMARK. — The prepositions **de, para,** and **por,** are idiomatically associated with other prepositions to define more closely the direction, time, or manner, expressed by the latter: —

de entre los árboles,	from among the trees.
cada uno **de por sí,**	each one by himself.
ántes los títulos de condes se daban **de por** vida,	formerly the title of a count was given for life (only).
para entre amigos se deja de complimientos,	among friends compliments are to be laid aside.
pasar **por delante de** una casa,	to pass along by a house.
"**Por entre** unas matas, Seguido de perros (No diré corría) Volaba un conejo,"	"Through the thicket, Pursued by dogs, A coney flew (Not to say ran)." — *Iriarte.*

650. **Para con,** *to, toward,* signifies moral direction: —

su conducta **para con** sus hijos,	his behavior toward his children.

651. Many complex prepositions which contain a noun, transform their object into an adjective when that object is a personal pronoun: —

al lado de,	by the side of.
al lado **mio,** *or* **á mi** lado,	at my side, by me.
de parte de,	on the part of, from.
de parte **suya,** *or* **de su** parte,	on his part, from him.
en conformidad con esto,	in harmony with this, *or*
en **esta** conformidad,	in this way.

But the latter, I think, is originally dialectic, since it is largely used by *Aragonese* writers.

The Conjunction.

652. Pure conjunctions are few in number, while adverbs and prepositions temporarily employed as conjunctions, with or without *que*, are numerous. All admit the usual divisions into copulative, disjunctive, causal, concessive, conditional, temporal, adversative, etc.

653. The pure conjunctions are: —

pero, mas, sino, *but.*	**que,** *that.*
ni, *nor.*	**si,** *if, whether, I wonder if.*
ó (before another *o*, **ú**), *or.*	**y** (before *i* or *hi*, **é**), *and.*

654. **Pero** and **mas** are found at the beginning of a paragraph or a phrase, and in an adversative sentence; but **sino** only in such a sentence when the first clause contains a negation that is contrasted with an affirmation in the second: —

pero la historia dice otra cosa,	but history tells a different story.
así lo cuenta él; **pero** otros lo refieren de distinto modo,	so he relates it; but others give a different account.
el niño sabía perfectamente la leccion, **mas** no supo decirla,	the child knew the lesson perfectly, but could not recite it.

no fué él, en verdad, el único intolerante de su siglo; **mas** ¿qué importa?	truly he was not the only intolerant man of his time; but what matters it?
no lo digo en broma, **sino** muy	[all sincerity. I do not say it jestingly, but in
no hay optimismo en lo que digo, **sino** pura imparcialidad y justicia,	there is no optimism in what I say, but pure impartiality and justice.

655. The conjunction **y**, *and*, assumes its ancient form **é** when a word follows beginning with the vowel *i* or the syllable *hi*:—

Fernando **é** Isabel,	Ferdinand and Isabella.
padres **é** hijos,	parents and children.

REMARK.—**Y** and **hy** were anciently adverbs meaning *there*, and the conjunction *and* was always expressed by **é** (Lat. *et*). In the latter part of the fifteenth century **y** and **é** became interchangeable, but a century later **é** had entirely disappeared:—

é murieron **y** muchos moros,	and many Moors died there.
é tomaron los cuerpos delos reyes que **y** yazien enterrados **é** lleuarõ los alas Asturias,	and they took the bodies of the kings who lay buried there and carried them to Asturias.

—*Chronica General*, A.D. 1260, ed. 1541; ff. 260*b*, 261*a*.

finco **hy** sus tiendas,	he pitched his tents there.
que nõ se partiria de **hy**,	that he would not go from there.

—*Chronica del Cid*, fourteenth-century, ed. 1593; pp. 87, 95.

656. Conjunctions with *que*, formed of adverbs and prepositions, are:—

á fin de que, *in order that*.	caso que, *in case that*.
á ménos que, } *unless*.	como quiera que, *however*.
á no ser que, } *unless*.	con que, *so*, *therefore*, *so then*.
ántes que, *before*.	con motivo que, *so that*.
así que, *so that*, *so*.	con tal que, *provided that*.
aunque, } *although*.	cuanto más que, *the more since*.
bien que, } *although*.	dado que, *in case that*.

dado caso que, *supposing that.*
de manera que, } *so that.*
de modo que, } *so that.*
de suerte que, } *so that.*
desde que, *since.*
despues que, *after.*
en tanto que, *while, in case that.*
en vez de que, *instead of.*
entre tanto que, *while.*
excepto que, *excepting.*
hasta que, *until.*
luego que, *as soon as.*
miéntras que, *while.*
no obstante que, *notwithstanding.*
para que, *in order that.*
por — que, *however.*
porque, *because, in order that.*
por más que, *however much.*
por ménos que, } *however little.*
por poco que, } *however little.*
pues que, } *since.*
puesto que, } *since.*
sea que, *whether, while.*
siempre que, *whenever.*
sin que, *without.*
supuesto que, *since.*
tanto que, *so that.*
ya que, *since.*

657. The principal correlatives are: —

apénas — cuando, *scarcely — when.*
así — como, *both — and.*
ni — ni, *neither — nor.*
no bien — cuando, *scarcely — when.*
no solo — sino, } *not only — but.*
no solamente — sino, } *not only — but.*
ó — ó, *either — or.*
sea — sea, *whether — or.*

The Interjection.

658. The interjections proper are: —

a. Exclamations denoting any strong emotion, such as surprise, pain, disgust, encouragement, remonstrance, desire, etc.: —

oh, ah, *oh! ah!*
ay, *oh! alas! ah!*
ha (exultation), *ha! eh!*
hé (shock, start), *eh!*
ea (encouragement), *come!*
ea ea (impatience), *come now!*
huy (pain, shock), *oh! dear me!*
puf (aversion), *ugh!*
uf (weariness), *oh!*
ca and **quiá** (expressive of indignant negation or doubt).
cáspita, *zounds!*
chiton, *hist! hush!*
ojalá, *would that! O that!*
ola, or **hola** (recognition or discovery), *ah! oh!*

REMARK. — Of these *ay*, *ea*, *huy*, *uf*, and *ojalá*,[1] are of Arabic origin, and consequently *un*-European and characteristic, especially *ay*, which indicates delight, as well as pain or surprise; and, popularly, is as common as the trans-Pyrenean *oh!* **Chiton** imposes silence about something forbidden, with the finger on the lips, well illustrated by the national proverb, **Inquisicion . . . chiton!** *when the Inquisition is mentioned, hold your breath!*

b. Cries addressed to domestic animals, birds, etc.: —

arre, **anda**, **alza** (to urge forward horses, mules, etc.).	**so**, **jo**, or **cho**, *whoa!*
	ox (to frighten away birds).
	zape (to frighten cats).

c. Words that serve to imitate sounds: —

cataplúm, *crash!*	**tras** and **zas**, *thump, thump!*

REMARK. — These are very numerous, and differ with the individual character or province. *Tras* and *zas* may be repeated to represent rapping at the door, the sound of feet tripping along the hall, and many other movements and sounds.

d. Idle or profane terms, common to all classes, with their euphemisms or evasions of the original word: —

caramba, **carái**, **caracóles**, **canasto**, **canario** and others in *ca* (expressing surprise), *egad!*	**cielos**, **Dios**, **por Dios**, *heavens!*
	Dios mio, *dear me!*
	ay Dios mio, *Oh, dear me!*
	Jesús, *O heavens!*
	válgame Dios, *bless me!*
diantre (to avoid *diablo*, *demonio*), *the deuce! by Jove!*	**vírgen santa**, *marry!*

REMARKS. — "*¡Jesús!*" "*¡Ave María!*" "*¡Ave María purísima!*" are heard when anything heretical, exaggerated, or surprising, is told or seen; and the exclamation **¡Jesús!** alone, when any one sneezes or gapes, is considered as a polite formula of exorcism, at which name evil spirits will forbear pursuing their advantage to possess the individual.

---

[1] From *in shâ 'llah*, "if Allah please," written formerly *oxalà*, and pronounced anciently *oshald*.

659. Other words used as exclamations are: —

a. Verbs in the imperative mode: —

anda (importunity, incredulity), *come! pshaw!*
calla or **calle** (command, incredulity), *keep still! nonsense!*
diga, *say!*
oye and **oiga,** *say! hallo!*
quita, or **quítese V.,** *let me alone! go away!*
toma, *indeed! really!*
vamos, *come! why! well!*
vaya (surprise, to take leave, assent), *indeed! well! of course!*

b. Nouns, adjectives, and adverbs: —

al asesino, *murder!*
al ladron, *stop thief!*
bravo, *bravo! good!*
caballero (indignation), *sir!*
cómo, *how! why!*
cuidado, *take care!*
fuego, *fire!*
socorro, *help! murder!*

REMARK. — Conversation is frequently rendered emphatic by introducing the words **hombre,** *man;* **mujer,** *woman;* **as, sí, hombre,** *yes, of course;* **no, mujer,** *not at all, sure.*

660. Adjectives employed as interjections are accompanied by the preposition *de* when a personal pronoun follows: —

¡necio **de** mí!	silly me that I am (I was)!
¡pobre **de** mí!	alas for me!
¡desgraciados **de** nosotros!	unfortunate ones that we are!

a. The interjection *¡ay!* is also accompanied by *de* when a noun or pronoun follows: —

¡ay **de** mí!	alas for me! woe is me!
¡ay **de** mi Alhama!	alas for my (city) Alhama!
¡ay **de** tí! — de nosotros!	alas for you! — for us!
¡ay **del** malhechor!	woe to the transgressor!

REMARK. — With adjectives, exclamations may be introduced by *qué:* as, **¡qué desgraciada soy!** *how unfortunate I am!* **¡qué bueno es!** *how kind he is!*

SECTION THIRD.

THE ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX.

The Article.

Use of the Definite Article.

661. The expression or omission of the definite article *el*, *la*, *los*, *las*, depends, in general, on the degree of limitation we wish to assign to the accompanying substantive. The laws that govern this article may be reduced to three, two of which correspond also with the English usage.

662. ***First.*** The definite article is expressed both in Spanish and in English, when it designates a particular individual or a specific object, thought, or class, in the singular, and several particular individuals, or objects of a class, in the plural: —

el hombre es soberbio,	*the* man is haughty.
la casa es hermosa,	*the* house is beautiful.
el paño es carísimo,	*the* cloth is very dear.
el trigo está vendido,	*the* wheat is sold.
los hombres son soberbios,	*the* men are haughty.
los caballos son fogosos, [nas,	*the* horses are fiery. [guages.
el estudio de las lenguas moder-	*the* study of the modern lan-
la enseñanza de **los** jóvenes,	*the* instruction of the young.

a. Consequently, the article is used in both languages before the epithets of sovereigns, poets, artists, and with facetious nicknames (*apodos*): —

Alfonso **el** Sabio,	Alfonso the Wise.
Fernando **el** Católico,	Ferdinand the Catholic.
Pedro **el** Cruel,	Peter the Cruel.
Cárlos tercero **el** Grande,	Charles III. the Great.
Boabdil **el** Chico,	Boabdelí the Less.
Herrera **el** Mozo,	Herrera the younger.[1]
Pepito **el** Ciego,	little Joe, the blind boy.

REMARK. — Under this law of particulars, the article often has the force of a demonstrative adjective, and may be translated by *that*.

663. ***Second.*** The definite article is omitted in both languages, when the noun is taken in an indeterminate sense, involving a portion of a substance or a class : —

déme V. pan ; — queso,	give me bread ; — cheese.
tráigame V. dinero ; — vino,	bring me money ; — wine.
me dió oro y valores,	he gave me gold and securities.
ganoso de paz y tranquilidad,	desirous of peace and quiet.
tiene casas y heredades,	he possesses houses and lands.
veo praderas y huertas,	I see green fields and plantations.
cargado con grandes paquetes,	laden with large bundles.
cubierto de riquísimos paños,	covered with rich stuffs.

REMARK 1. — This law of the partitive sense of substantives is expressed regularly in French by a special use of the definite article ; as : —

donnez-moi **du** pain,	give me some bread.
apportez-moi **de** l'argent, [leurs,	bring me some money.
il m'a donné **de** l'or et **des** va-	he gave me gold and securities.

2. — An echo of this construction is occasionally met with in Spanish : —

"— te he dicho	"— I ordered you
Que me des **de lo añejo**	To give me some of the old
Cuando te pida vino,"	When I call for wine."

— *Cadalso*, *Obras*, *Madrid*, 1818, vol. iii., p. 37.

es *or* son **de los famosos**, [hay,	it is *or* they are famous ones.
son **de los más célebres** que	they are some of the best known.

[1] To distinguish him from **Herrera el viejo**, *the elder Herrera.*

3. — In Spanish, as in English, the partitive substantive may be qualified by some term like **alguno, un poco de**, *some, a little*, for the singular; and **algunos, unos, unos cuantos, unos pocos**, *some, a few*, for the plural: —

déme V. **un poco de** pan,	give me a little bread.
tráe **unos cuantos** paquetes,	he brings a few parcels.

a. Also in a great many adverbial expressions: —

á pié; á caballo; en coche,	on foot; on horseback; by coach.
con alegría; con dolor,	with joy; with sorrow.
á casa; en casa,	home (*motion*); at home (*rest*).
llevado en triunfo,	borne in triumph.

664. ***Third.*** The definite article is expressed in Spanish and omitted in English, when it designates an object, a substance, or a thought, in an universal, very general, or in an absolute sense, for the singular, and all the individuals of a class, for the plural: —

la vida es breve,	life is short.
la juventud es pasajera,	youth is transitory.
el oro es preciosísimo,	gold is very precious.
el trigo es abundante,	wheat is plentiful.
la caridad es benigna,	charity is kind.
la muerte se acerca,	death draws near.
la libertad es un derecho inajenable,	liberty is an inalienable right.
la buena administracion conduce á la prosperidad,	good administration leads to prosperity.
el hombre piensa; — habla,	man thinks; — talks.
los caballos son útiles,	horses are useful.
los gobiernos son necesarios,	governments are necessary.
los hombres piensan; — hablan,	men think; — talk.

REMARK. — Nearly all these and similar comprehensive sentences may be turned into particular ones, when the sense requires it, or by some slight modification, such as the insertion of an adjective, an adjunct, or a relative: —

la vida **del hombre** es breve,	*the* life of man is short.
el mejor trigo no es siempre abundante,	*the* best wheat is not always plentiful.
el hombre **que** piensa,	*the* man who thinks.
los caballos **que** posee,	*the* horses which he owns.

a. The same law applies to the English also, in a few words, when we speak of them in general terms: —

la mente no lo alcanza,	*the* mind cannot grasp it.
el caballo es un animal sumamente fuerte y útil,	*the* horse is an exceedingly strong and useful animal.

b. Likewise, in general, the article is expressed with words that are originally adjectives, when they are used as nouns, and are taken in an universal or very comprehensive range of meaning: —

los avaros nunca están satisfechos,	misers (the avaricious) are never satisfied.
los Españoles son bastante pundonorosos,	Spaniards (the Spanish) are very jealous of their honor.
tanto **los** Protestantes como **los** Católicos adoran á Dios,	both Protestants and Catholics worship God.

665. The definite article is furthermore expressed diversely from the English usage: —

a. With the names of the days of the week, except in dates: —

vendrá **el** sábado,	he will come on Saturday.
los miércoles y juéves,	Wednesdays and Thursdays.
todos **los** mártes y viérnes,	every Tuesday and Friday.
domingo, tres de abril,	Sunday, April 3.

b. With the names of the seasons: —

en **la** primavera parece que la naturaleza se despierta como de un sueño,	in spring, nature appears to rouse up as from

mi amigo pasa el verano á los baños de mar; el otoño en Madrid, y el invierno en Sevilla ó Málaga,	my friend spends summer at the seaside, autumn at Madrid, and winter in Seville or Malaga.

c. Before all titles of respect, dignity, or office, when the individual is spoken of, not when he is addressed:–

el señor y **la** señora (*or* **los** señores) de Moreno,	Mr. and Mrs. Moreno.
las señoritas de García,	the Misses (*young ladies*) Garcia.
el rey don Alfonso doce,	King Alfonso the Twelfth.
el general Concha,	General Concha.
el secretario Zurita,	Secretary Zurita.
el cardenal Quiroga,	Cardinal Quiroga.
el maestro Luis de Leon,	Master Louis de Leon.
el padre Íñigo (*een'-ye-go*),	Father Ignatius.
la madre Serafina,	Mother Seraphina (*prioress*).

Exceptions are: the title of **don** (before the Christian name); **fray** (of an ecclesiastical order) and **frey** (of a military order), *brother*; **san** or **santo**, *saint*; **sor** (of nuns), *sister*, but the more common word **hermana** takes the article; as, **sor Angélica**, or **la hermana Angélica**, *sister Angelica*.

d. Before the names of Italian classic writers and artists:—

el Dante, **el** Bocacio, **el** Petrarca, **el** Ticiano, *etc.*

So also with the names of Spanish authors when they represent their works:—

tráigame V. **el Garcilaso,**	bring me Garcilaso's works.
no encuentro esa voz en **el Covarrubias,**	I do not find that word in Covarrubias (*Dictionary*, 1611).

The same with titles of well-known books:—

la Raquel de Vicente García de la Huerta ó la de Ullōa,	Huerta's or Ulloa's Rachel (*tragedy*).
estoy leyendo **el Quijote,**	I am reading Don Quixote.

e. With a few names of countries, provinces, and cities. Such are at present chiefly: —

el Japon; **el** Brasil,	Japan; Brazil.
el Canadá; **el** Perú,	Canada; Peru.
el Paraguay; **la** Florida,	Paraguay; Florida.
La Mancha; **La** Rioja,	(*provinces of Spain*).
Castilla **la** Nueva; — **la** Vieja,	New — Old — Castile.
la Coruña; **la** Habana,	Corunna (*the* "*Groyne*"); Havana.
el Ferrol; **el** Cairo; **el** Havre,	Ferrol; Cairo; Havre.

REMARK. — With other names of countries and provinces it is not now common to use the article, save in the poetical or oratorical style, or when an adjective qualifies them.

la Europa **católica**,	Catholic Europe.
la España **liberal**,	liberal Spain.

f. With the Christian names of women in familiar style: —

la María; **la** Juana,	Mary; Jane.
la Mercēdes; **la** Dolores,	Mercy; Dolores.
me lo regaló **la** Pepa,	Josie gave it to me.
la Mariquita no ignoraba el contenido de la carta,	Molly was not unacquainted with the contents of the letter.

Also with surnames, but generally vulgar: —

me lo contó **la** Álvarez,	(the woman) Alvarez told it to me.

g. With numerals to indicate the hour: —

es la una; son **las** diez,	it is one — ten — o'clock.
á la una; **á las** diez,	at one; at ten (o'clock).
á las doce (del dia),	at twelve o'clock, noon.
á la madrugada,	before sunrise, at an early hour.

h. With many adverbial and other phrases: —

á la noche; **á la** ciudad,	at night; to town.
á la escuela; **á la** iglesia,	to school; to church.
en **la** ciudad; en **la** escuela, *etc.*,	in town; at school; — church.
al cuidado de; **las** mañanas,	in care of; mornings.

666. The definite article is sometimes employed for the indefinite, in general, indeterminate, expressions and phrases: —

la fragancia de **la** rosa,	the fragrance of a rose.
me parece que **la** monarquía tiene sus ventajas,	it appears to me that a monarchy has its advantages.
me dió **las** buenas noches y salió,	he bade me (a) good night and [went out.

a. Also to denote rate, with words signifying weight, measure, and distance: —

dos duros **la** libra,	two dollars a pound.
cuatro reales **la** botella,	four reals a bottle.
á tanto **la** vara; — **la** lēgua,	at so much a yard; — a league.

667. The definite article is omitted in Spanish and expressed in English: —

a. Before a number indicating the order of succession of pontiffs and sovereigns: —

Pablo cuarto, *or* Pablo IV.,	Paul the Fourth, *or* Paul IV.
Cárlos quinto de Alemania y primero de España,	Charles the Fifth of Germany and the First of Spain. [*etc.*
Felipe segundo; — tercero; *etc.*	Philip the Second; — the Third;
Fernando séptimo,	Ferdinand the Seventh.
Alfonso doce, rey de España,	Alfonso XII., king of Spain.

Except when speaking of the ancient sovereigns in whose times the article was employed, but even with these the use is not uniform: —

Don Alfonso décimo,	Alfonso the Tenth.
Don Alfonso **el** onceno,	Alfonso the Eleventh.
Don Enrique **el** cuarto,	Henry the Fourth (of Spain).
Don Juan segundo, *or* **el** s.,	John the Second (of Spain).

REMARK. — The ordinal numbers are used in such cases up to eleven; thence onward the cardinals. See § 674.

b. With nouns in the predicate modified by an adjunct: —

es hija de un conde,	she is the daughter of an earl.
es comandante de la plaza,	he is the commander of the fort.
la necesidad es madre de la invencion,	necessity is the mother of invention.
ha sido nombrado representante de España cerca de la Santa Sede,	he has been appointed the representative of Spain near the Holy See.

c. With a word in apposition: —

Don Quijote, obra del inmortal Cervántes,	Don Quixote, the work of the immortal Cervantes.
Madrid, corte de España,	Madrid, the capital of Spain.
Boabdil, último rey moro de Granada,	Boabdelí, the last Moorish king of Granada.

d. At the head of titles of books and articles: —

Vida del arzobispo de Toledo, primado de las Españas,	The Life of the Archbishop of Toledo, the Primate of Spain.
Historia del sitio de Gibraltar,	The History of the Siege of Gibraltar.
Revista Hispano-Americana,	The Spanish-American Review.

e. In certain conventional phrases: —

á esquina de tal calle,	on the corner of such a street.
á orillas de un rio,	on the banks of a river.
á razon de cuatro millas la legua,	at the rate of four miles per league.
ir á casa de; — á palacio,	to go to the house of; — to the palace.
estar en casa de; — en palacio,	to be at the house of; — at the palace.
tener intencion de,	to have the intention of.
dormir siesta (= horâ *sextâ*),	to take the noon nap.
de parte de su padre,	on the part of his father.
en nombre de la religion,	in the name of religion.
con objeto de,	with the object of.

Use of the Indefinite Article.

668. The indefinite article **un, una**, is in general used much the same in both languages. Special divergences, however, are the following: —

669. The indefinite article is omitted in Spanish: —

a. Before substantives standing in the predicate when they denote rank, class, occupation, and characteristic, in very general terms: —

mi amigo es capitan,	my friend is a captain.
fulano es artista inglés,	such a one is an English artist.
es caballero; es título,	he is a gentleman; — a noble.
es sastre; es albañil,	he is a tailor; — a mason.
es cobarde; es holgazan,	he is a coward; — an idler.
se ha hecho soldado,	he has become a soldier.
la fé es don de Dios,	faith is a gift of God.
dar la limosna es obra de caridad,	to distribute alms is a work of charity.
es católico; es protestante,	he is a Catholic; — a Protestant.
es judío; es libre pensador,	he is a Jew; — a free-thinker.

REMARK. — But if the separate existence of the predicate substantive is to be emphasized and particularized, the article may be expressed: —

es **un** cobarde; — **un** holgazan,	he is a coward; — an idler.
esta niña es **una** pobre huérfana,	this girl is a poor orphan.
es **un** oficial de grande mérito,	he is an officer of great merit.
su madre es **una** católica de las más fervorosas,	her mother is a most fervid Catholic.

b. With nouns designating title, office, or attribute, preceded by the preposition *de*: —

el empleo de secretario,	the office of (a) secretary.
va de embajador á tal parte,	he goes as an ambassador to such a place.

el título de grande de España,	the title of (a) grandee of Spain.
el nombre de libertador de la patria,	the name of liberator of his country.

c. With substantives that express an idea in a general, indefinite way: —

tengo motivo para afirmarlo,	I have a reason for affirming it.
tiene derecho de manifestarlo,	he has a right to declare it.
poner precio; — tasa *or* coto,	to fix a price; — a limit.
poner escuela; — tienda,	to set up a school; — a shop.
buscar vida desahogada,	to seek an easy life.
llegó á pasar por jóven de esperanzas,	he came to be considered as a young man of expectations.
los palaciegos lo tenían por incomparable desgracia el ser desterrado de la corte,	palace people considered it an unequalled calamity to be exiled from the court.
manifestó ódio encarnizado contra la herejía,	he exhibited a furious hatred towards heresy.
dia vendrá en que lo he de manifestar,	a day will come in which I shall declare it.

d. After the verb *tener* with a substantive denoting some quality of the mind or heart, when combined with an adjective: —

tiene buen corazon,	he has a good heart.
tiene feliz memoria,	he possesses a fine memory.
tiene grande inclinacion de hacerlo,	he has a great mind to do it.

REMARK. — So also in general after *tener* and *tener por*, as under rule *c*, in indefinite statements: —

tener gana de, tiempo de,	to have a mind, time, to.
tener apetito; — motivos,	to have an appetite; — reasons.

e. With words in apposition: —

Cádiz, ciudad de Andalucía,	Cadiz, a city of Andalusia.
Calderon, poeta insigne,	Calderon, a celebrated poet.
la Carta de Paracuellos, sátira de Francisco Sánchez,	the Paracuellos Epistle, a satire by Francisco Sanchez.
entró su hijo, muchacho vivo,	his son, a bright lad, came in.

f. With certain indefinite expressions, like **otro, otra vez, cierto, semejante, tal, como, gran número de, tan**:—

vino el dia siguiente **otro** aviso,	the following day another notice came.
otra vez no seré tan torpe,	another time I shall not be so stupid.
llegó á mis oidos **cierta** noticia,	a certain item came to my ears.
no me gusta **semejante** engaño,	I do not like such deception.
tal dia; **tal** noche,	such a day; such a night.
obró **como** maestro,	he proceeded like a master.
la pintura **como** arte,	painting as an art.
hubo **gran número de** gente,	there was a large number of people.
á **tan** concluyente explicacion nadie puede replicar,	to such a conclusive explanation no one can reply.

g. With nouns in negative sentences:—

sin obtener respuesta,	without obtaining an answer.
se fué sin decir palabra,	he went off without saying a word.
sin que recibiese contestacion,	without his getting a reply.
no me ha de quedar consuelo,	no consolation will remain to me.
no tengo genio para eso,	I have no talent for that.

h. At the head of book titles:—

Diccionario de la Lengua Castellana,	A Dictionary of the Castilian Language.
Ensayo sobre la Legislacion Española,	An Essay on Spanish Legislation.

i. With nouns denoting weight or measure, accompanied by the fractions thereof:—

compré libra y media,	I purchased a pound and a half.
anduve legua y cuarta,	I travelled a league and a quarter.
me midió dos varas y tercia,	he measured me off two yards and a third.

j. In exclamations after **qué**:—

¡**qué** ruido! ¡**qué** dia!	what a noise! what a day!
¡**qué** hermoso paisaje!	what a fine landscape!
¡**qué** bobo eres!	what a dunce you are!

Use of the Neuter Article Lo.

670. The neuter article *lo* is only used in the singular, and turns an adjective into a substantive, for which a pure substantive may likewise be often employed (see §§ 83; 113, *a*):—

dominaba en ella el sentimiento de **lo** maravilloso,	the sense of the marvellous was dominant in her.
no dejes de mandarles algo de **lo** mucho que vas á ganar,	do not fail to send them something of the much you will earn.
en **lo** sucesivo; **lo** pasado,	for the future; the past.
en **lo** más escondido de un valle,	in the most retired (part) of a valley.
contra **lo** dispuesto por las leyes,	against what is provided by the laws.

671. The substantive nature of the adjective with *lo* is especially manifest when they are accompanied by **que** with the verb *to be*, or one of its substitutes. In this case, as we have seen (§ 113, *a*), the adjective is varied anomalously, agreeing in gender and number with the noun subject to the verb. The formula then will be:—

Lo — variable adjective — **que** — verb *to be* — noun-subject; or, without *que*. noun-subject — verb *to be* — **lo** — variable adjective.

lo amen*a* que es esta pradera,	the amenity of this green field.
lo caprichos*a* que es la imaginacion,	the capriciousness of the imagination.
lo pundonoroso que es este caballero,	the punctiliousness of this gentleman.
lo fresc*as* que son estas aceitunas,	the freshness of these olives.
lo desatendid*as* que habían sido sus súplicas,	the deaf ear that had been turned to his prayers.
lo honrad*os* que se considerarían, si, *etc.*	the honor they would consider done to them, if, *etc.*
lo convenient*es* que fueron en otros tiempos, y lo útil*es* que pueden ser todavía,	the suitableness of them in other days, and their possible utility still.

una prueba de lo satisfactori*os* que le son vuestros trabajos,	a proof of his satisfaction with your labors.
el ministro se propone que la discusion de los presupuestos sea todo lo ampli*a* posible,	the minister proposes to give all possible latitude to the discussion of the budget.
es una de esas reformas que por lo necesari*as* están fuera de toda discusion,	it is one of those reformatory measures, the necessity of which is too evident for discussion.

The literal version of a few of these examples, which are all taken from modern writers, will explain this extraordinary idiom: —

The agreeable that this green field is; the fresh that these olives are; the honored that they would consider themselves, if, etc.; *the suitable that they were in other times, and the useful that they may still be; a proof of the satisfactory that your labors are to him; the minister proposes that the debate on the estimates be all the broad possible; it is one of those reforms that by the necessary (on account of their necessity) are beyond all discussion.*

The Use of the Numerals.

672. Order in a series is properly expressed as in English by the ordinal numbers: —

el **primer** dia; el **segundo** año,	the first day; the second year.
el **tercer** aniversario,	the third anniversary.
la **cuarta** fila,	the fourth row *or* file.
el **quinto** artículo,	the fifth article.
las lecciones **décima** y **undécima**,	the tenth and eleventh lessons.
los siglos **décimo sexto** y **décimo séptimo**,	the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.
el libro **trigésimo tercio**,	the thirty-third book.

673. Popularly, the cardinals are more generally used than the ordinals to specify the number of a volume, book, chapter, lesson, century, or other word which, from its signification, naturally involves a series: —

capítulo **veinte y uno,**	chapter twenty-first.
leccion **quince,**	lesson fifteenth.
página **ciento y una,**	page one hundred and first.
el siglo **diez y nueve,**	the nineteenth century.

674. The ordinals are used up to *eleven*, to indicate the order of succession of sovereigns; but from that number, the cardinals are regularly substituted: —

Cárlos **primero** de España y **quinto** de Alemania,	Charles the First of Spain and the Fifth of Germany.
Henrique **cuarto,**	Henry the Fourth.
Fernando **séptimo,**	Ferdinand the Seventh.
Leon **trece**; Alfonso **doce,**	Leo XIII; Alfonso XII.
Luis **catorce,** rey de Francia,	Louis XIV, king of France.

675. The cardinal numbers are used instead of the ordinals, in *dates*, with the sole exception of **primero,** *first.* In this case, the month and year, when expressed, are always to be preceded by the preposition *de*: —

Madrid, **primero de** Enero, **de** mil ochocientos y ochenta,	Madrid, January first, eighteen hundred and eighty.
el **dos** de Mayo, **de** 1808,	the second of May, 1808.
el **diez y siete** de Abril,	April 17th.
el dia **once** de Febrero,	February 11th.
viérnes, **cuatro** de Julio, **de** mil setecientos sesenta,	Friday, July fourth, seventeen hundred and sixty.
vendrá el dia **diez,**	he will come on the 10th.

REMARK. — The word **dia,** *day*, may be or not employed when the month is expressed; but when the number stands alone, it is more common to give it: —

el **dia** quince Junio, *or* el **quince** de Junio,	the fifteenth of June.
el **dia** cuatro,	the fourth.
tenemos cita para el **dia** doce,	we have an appointment for the twelfth.
falleció el dia dieciseis,	he died on the sixteenth.

676. The question, *What day of the month is it?* may be expressed in Spanish by **¿qué dia del mes tenemos?** or by **¿á cuántos estamos del mes?** and is answered in the first case by the cardinal number (except the *first*) with the definite article; and in the second case, by the same preceded by the preposition *á*, with or without the corresponding verb: —

tenemos	*estamos*
el **primero**; el **dos**; el **dieci-[seis,**	**á primero**; **á dos**; **á diez y seis**
it is the first; — the second; — the sixteenth.	

REMARK. — Indefinite or approximate expressions are: —

á **primeros** de (Enero),	in the early part of (January).
á **principios** del (siglo actual),	at the beginning of (the present century).
á **mediados** del (año pasado),	about the middle of (last year).
á **fines** del (siglo pasado),	toward the close of (the last century).
á **últimos** del (mes que viene),	about the end of (next month).

More definite are: —

á *or* en primero de (mes),	on the first of (the month).
á *or* en fin de (año),	at the end of (the year).

677. A week is more often expressed by **ocho dias**, and a fortnight by **quince dias**, than by the general terms *una semana, dos semanas:* —

vendrá dentro de **ocho dias**,	he will come within a week.
mañana en **ocho dias**,	a week from to-morrow.
hace más de **quince dias** que no le veo; **quince dias** há,	I have not seen him in more than a fortnight; a fortnight ago.
de hoy en **ocho** (**quince**) dias,	a week (fortnight) from to-day.

678. The hour or time of day is expressed by the cardinals with the feminine article plural *las* (except la **una**, *one*), agreeing with *hora, horas*, understood: —

¿qué **hora es?**	what time is it?
es **la una**; la una y media,	it is one — half-past one — [o'clock.
es la una y tres cuartos, *or* son **las dos** ménos cuarto,	it is quarter to two.
son **las once**; **las doce**,	it is eleven — twelve — o'clock.
son las diez y cuarto,	it is a quarter past ten.
á la una; á las siete,	at one o'clock; at seven.
á las dos de la madrugada,	at two o'clock in the morning.
á las ocho de la mañana,	at eight, A.M.
á las cuatro de la tarde,	at four o'clock, P.M.
á las nueve de la noche,	at nine o'clock at night.

REMARK. — To *strike the hour* is **dar la hora**, used intransitively: —

las tres van á dar,	it is going to strike three.
ya van á dar las cinco,	it is just going to strike five.
han dado las doce ya,	it has already struck twelve.
dada la una; dadas las once,	when it had struck one — eleven.
al dar las doce,	as it struck twelve.

679. In stating age, the Spanish employs the verb **tener**, *to have*, with **años**, *years*, preceded by the cardinal number: —

¿cuántos **años tiene** V.?	how old are you?
¿qué edad tiene V.?	what is your age?
tengo veinticinco años,	I am twenty-five years old.
este jóven **tendrá** unos diez y ocho años,	this young man must be about eighteen.
su padre **tiene** cincuenta años, y su madre **cuarenta**,	his father is fifty years old, and his mother forty.
no es muy viejo,	he is not very old (in life).
es todavía jóven, ó más bien de edad mediana,	he is still young, or rather in middle life.
es un viejo (*indelicate*), es un anciano (*courteous*),	he is an old man.
fué mi antíguo preceptor,	he was my old teacher.

REMARK. — **Viejo** always signifies literally *old in years*; *old*, meaning "former," is **antiguo**; *he is an old friend*, **es un antíguo**

amigo. To be "older" than another is, **tener más edad, más años, que otro,** although aged people might say of each other, **más viejo que,** *older than.*

680. "To be just so many years old," "to have completed so many years" is **tener — años cumplidos, cumplir — años:—**

tiene veintiseis años **cumplidos,**	he is just twenty-six years old.
al cumplir los trece años,	when he had completed his thirteenth year.

REMARK. — Idioms with expressions of age and time are: —

á los dos dias,	in two days, on the second day.
á la edad de cinco años,	at five years of age.
á los cinco años de su edad,	at the age of five years.
á los veinte años de su reinado,	in the twentieth year of his reign.
á los cinco meses de su estancia,	after a stay of five months, *or* when he had stayed five months.
falleció jóven de veinte años,	he died at the age of twenty years.

The Laws of Agreement.

The Adjective and Noun.

681. Adjectives agree in gender and number with the substantive they limit or describe: —

un hombre **activo,**	an active man.
una señora **anciana,**	an old lady.
personas **emprendedoras,**	enterprising persons.
ciertas sociedades son **fomentadoras** de la riqueza **pública,**	certain societies are promoters of the public wealth.

682. A plural substantive may be limited by two or three adjectives in the singular, agreeing in gender only, when they relate to distinct members of the same series: —

las lenguas **castellana** y **francesa**,	the Spanish and French languages.
los tomos **primero** y **cuarto**,	the first and fourth volumes.
los siglos **segundo** y **tercero**,	the second and third centuries.

683. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives of the same gender (whichever be the number), it stands in the plural, and the gender will be determined by that of the substantives: —

el padre y el hijo están **malos**,	the father and son are ill.
la madre y su hija son muy **parecidas**,	the mother and her daughter look very much alike.
la madre y sus hijas son **bellas**,	the mother and her daughters are fair.
la aplicacion y constancia en el estudio son **necesarias** al que quiere adelantar,	diligence and perseverance in study are necessary to one who desires to advance.

684. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the singular number and of different genders, it stands in the masculine plural, provided the substantives have distinct meanings: —

el padre y la madre son **ambos caritativos**,	the father and mother are both benevolent.
el cielo y la tierra son **dignos** de admiracion,	the sky and the earth are worthy of admiration.
la plaza y el cuartel más **limpios** de la ciudad,	the neatest square and neighborhood in town.

REMARK. — If, however, the two nouns are synonymous, or nearly so, in meaning, whichever be their gender, the adjective agrees in the singular with the nearest noun: —

muestra una capacidad, un talento **singular**,	he displays singular ability and talent.
con un alborozo, una satisfaccion **indescriptible**,	with indescribable joy and satisfaction.
para solaz y desahogo **comun**,	for common consolation and relief.

685. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the plural number and of different genders, it agrees with the nearest noun in gender and number:—

observaban ademanes y conversaciones **agitadas**,	they noticed excited gestures and conversation.
sus esperanzas y temores eran **vanos**,	their hopes and their fears were vain.

686. Adjectives of all kinds that stand before the noun they limit agree in gender and number with the nearest one:—

nuestro atraso y decadencia,	our low state and decline.
poca unidad y trabazon,	little unity and connection.
con **singular** vigor y presteza,	with marked energy and promptness.
con **mucha** furia y denuedo,	with great fury and boldness.

687. With titles, the adjective agrees with the natural, not the grammatical, gender, when it stands in the predicate or as a participle past:—

su majestad está **enfermo**,	his majesty is ill.
su majestad está **enferma**,	her majesty is ill.
sus majestades, **prevenidos**, se levantaron,	their majesties (the king and queen) being notified, arose.

a. But adjectives that form part of the title agree regularly:—

su **sagrada** majestad,	his sacred majesty (*Rom. Emp.*).
sus majestades **católicas**,	their Catholic majesties.
vuestra señoría,	your lordship.

The Verb with its Subject.

688. The verb agrees with its subject, expressed or understood, in number and person:—

yo **leo**; nosotros **leemos**,	I read; we read.
la hoja **cae**; las hojas **caen**,	the leaf falls; the leaves fall.

689. Collective terms in the singular number require a verb in that number whether they involve the idea of unity or plurality: —

el **pueblo** le **escucha**,	the people listen to him.
el **público** se **divierte**,	the public amuse themselves.
la **gente** lo **dice**,	people say so.
el **ejército avanza**,	the army moves forward.
la **tropa acudió**,	the troops came up.
el **congreso** se **reunió**,	the congress met.
la **Academia** lo **aprueba**,	the Academy approves it.
la **junta** se **disolvió**,	the committee was dissolved.
la **multitud** se **impresionó**,	the throng was moved.
la **poblacion queda** tranquila,	the town remains quiet.
el **rebaño huye** ante el lobo,	the flock flees from the wolf.

690. Collective terms followed by an adjunct in the *plural*, expressed or understood, require a plural verb: —

multitud de personas le **felicitaron**,	crowds of people congratulated him.
gran parte de ellos no **consintieron** en ello,	a large number of them did not agree to it.
la mayor parte lo **saben**,	the greater part know it.
parte venían sin armas,	a part came without arms.
la **mitad perecieron**,	one-half perished.

but

la mayor parte de la **gente** lo **cree**,	the greater part of the people believe it.
gran parte de la **poblacion ha quedado reducida** á cenizas,	a large part of the town was reduced to ashes.

691. Nouns in the singular, connected by the correlative **ni** — **ni**, *neither* — *nor*, are now generally accompanied by a plural verb: —

ni el miedo **ni** el interés **torcieron** su fé,	neither fear nor interest swerved his faith.
ni un solo grito, **ni** un solo gesto **empañaron** aquella escena,	neither a single shout nor a single gesture marred that scene.

REMARK. — With **ó — ó**, *either — or*, the use of the language does not seem to be fixed, both numbers being met with: —

ó la ambicion **ó** la ira le **movió** *and* le **movieron**,	either ambition or anger impelled him.

692. When there are two or more subjects in either number, the verb is regularly put in the plural; but in vehement discourse, the verb is often found to agree in the singular with the first noun of a series, before which the verb stands, as if the enumeration of characteristics were mere expansions of one thought: —

la novela y las poesías me **han gustado** mucho,	I was much pleased with the novel and the poetry.
las cartas y el prólogo me **parecieron** muy bien escritos,	the letters and the preface appeared to me to be very well written.
nunca **fué** tan expuesto su valor y constancia,	his courage and firmness were never so tested.
decía mi amigo, con la autoridad que le **dá** su palabra, su talento, su íntegro carácter,	my friend said, with all the weight that his words, talent, and integrity of character give him ....

a. A singular verb may accompany a double subject when these are used synonymously, whichever be the position of the verb: —

el contento y el aplauso **fué** grande,	the satisfaction and applause were great.
el disgusto y murmuracion no **dejó** de hacerse sentir,	dissatisfaction and murmurs did not fail to make themselves felt.

693. When a verb has two or more subjects of different persons, it is put in the plural and agrees with the first person rather than the second or third, and with the second person rather than the third: —

ni yo ni mi amo la **habemos** visto jamás,	neither I nor my master have ever seen her.
yo espero que tú y ella **estéis** [buenos,	I hope that you and she are well.
irémos usted y yo,	you and I will go.

694. When the subject is a relative pronoun, the verb properly agrees in person and number with the person to whom the relative refers, that is, with the antecedent: —

yo soy quien lo **digo**,	I am the one who say it.
nosotros somos los que lo **hemos visto**, [mejor que yo,	we are the ones who saw it, *or* we saw it. [better than we.
vosotros sois los que lo **sabeis**	you are the ones who know it
VV. son los que **hablaron** con él,	you are the ones who spoke to him.

a. In ordinary language, however, and even in literature, it is not uncommon to find the verb in the third person: —

yo soy quien lo **dice**, [favor,	I am the one who say (says) it.
ahóra soy yo el que **pide** á V. el	it is I who ask you the favor now.

695. The third person plural is often used in reference to a vague subject equivalent to the passive voice, or to the French *on* with a singular verb: —

vuelva V. mañana, nos **decían** en todas partes, [casino,	come again to-morrow, said they everywhere. [to the club.
cuando **cierran** el café voy al	when they close the café, I go

(that is, *I was told everywhere to call the next day*. French: *me disait-on partout; lorsqu'on ferme le café, je m'en vais au cercle.*)

The Use of the Tenses.

Indicative Mode.

696. PRESENT TENSE.

hablo; estoy hablando,	I speak; I am speaking.
cómo; estoy comiendo,	I eat; I am eating.
vivo; estoy viviendo,	I live; I am living.

a. Expresses what occurs at the time in which it is asserted: —

escribo una carta,	I am writing a letter.
Juan **lee** el diario,	John is reading the paper.

REMARK. — In this sense, the Spanish may employ equally well the simple verb or the progressive form (§ 379): —

escribo, *or* **estoy escribiendo**	una carta.	Juan **lee,** *or* Juan **está leyendo**	el diario.

b. Expresses habit, custom, and absolute fact, without regard to a determinate period: —

mi tio **es** periodista,	my uncle is a journalist.
doy lecciones de Castellano,	I give Spanish lessons.
nos levantamos temprano,	we get up early.
mi hermana **dibuja** bien,	my sister draws well.
Dios **da** los bienes y los **quita,**	God gives wealth and takes it away.
el hombre **propone,** y Dios **dispone,**	man proposes, and God disposes.

c. Replaces the future in familiar language: —

voy al instante,	I'll go at once.
vuelve en seguida,	he'll be back directly.
en ese caso no **salgo,**	in that case I'll not go out.
¿qué **hago**? ¿**consiento**?	what shall I do? consent?
no lo **firmo,**	I will not sign it.
¿me **hace** V. el favor?	will you do me the favor?

d. Replaces the past definite in lively narration: —

coge su sombrero y **sale,**	he caught up his hat and went out.
llega, saluda, y me **dice,**	he came up, greeted me, and said.

e. Used idiomatically after a clause with the impersonal verb **hace,** *it is,* with expressions of time: —

hace mucho tiempo que no le **veo,**	it is a long time since I have seen him.
hace cuatro años que **vivimos** en esta casa,	we have lived four years in this house.
hace ocho dias que **rondan** la calle donde vivo,	for a week they have been prowling about the street I live in.
¿cuánto tiempo hace que **está** V. en Madrid?	how long have you been in Madrid?
¿hace mucho que **está** V. **esperando**?	have you been waiting long?

697. IMPERFECT TENSE.

hablaba; **estaba hablando**,	I spoke; I was speaking.
comía; **estaba comiendo**,	I ate; I was eating.
vivía; **estaba viviendo**,	I lived; I was living.

a. Denotes progressive continuity in the past: —

como **decía**; como **andaba**,	as I was saying; — walking.
me **hacía** señales,	he made signs to me.

b. Describes an action or situation that was going on or existing, when some incident, expressed by the past definite, was introduced or intervened. In this case, the progressive form must be employed in English and may be also in Spanish: —

escribía (*or* **estaba escribiendo**) cuando **entró** Juan,	I was writing when John came in.
estaba (*or* me **encontraba**) en mi despacho cuando **oí** el grito,	I was in my office (*or* study) when I heard the cry.
miéntras que nos **paseábamos**, **empezó** á llover,	while we were taking a walk, it began to rain.

c. Denotes customary action or state during some previous period. In this case, it may be translated by the absolute imperfect (*I spoke*) or by the term "used to": —

cuando **vivía** en Sevilla, **visitaba** amenudo los jardines del duque,	when I lived in Seville, I often visited the duke's gardens.
me **gustaba** andar por el rio entre la Torre del Oro y el Puente de Barcas,	I used to like strolling along the river, between the Gold-Tower and the Bridge of Boats.
le **veía** todos los dias,	I used to see him daily.
los Griegos **cultivaban** las letras y los Romanos la guerra,	the Greeks cultivated letters, and the Romans war.

REMARK. — Custom may also be expressed by the imperfect tense of the verb **soler**, *to be wont to:* —

en aquella época **solíamos** ir cada año á los baños,	at that period, we used to go to the baths every year.
solían acompañarnos muchos amigos y amigas,	many friends of both sexes were wont to accompany us.

d. It is translated by the absolute past when it involves the idea of more or less duration over a series of moments or of years. In this sense, it is found in vivid descriptions and narrations, or to declare what a person or object was during a certain period in the past: —

mirábale el muchacho con asombro,	the lad gazed at him with astonishment.
me **decía** muchas cosas que me **causaban** extrañeza,	he told me many things which surprised me.
estaba de huésped en dicha casa,	I was a boarder in the house mentioned.
Ciceron **era** grande orador,	Cicero was a great orator.
Alejandro **era** rey de Grecia,	Alexander was king of Greece.

e. In the old language, especially in the ballad poetry, the imperfect occasionally takes the place of the present when the verse requires it: —

Si hallo el agua clara,	If I find the water clear,
Tūrbia la **bebía** yo,	When I drink it it is roiled.

— Ballad beginning "*Fonte frida.*"

Que un Cristiano dejo muerto,	I have slain a Christian,
Tras mí **venía** el alcalde,	The sheriff is pursuing me.

— Ballad "*Yo m'era mora Morayma.*"

f. In familiar language, the imperfect often replaces the conditional: —

si le hubiera dicho la verdad, me **exponía** á un regaño,	if I had told him the truth, I should have risked a scolding.
era tan amigo del padre Quieto, que no le **movía** un terremoto,	he was so partial to father *Ease*, that an earthquake would not disturb him.

REMARK. — The simple form of the English past tense (*I spoke, I wrote*) is expressed then, in Spanish, by two distinct tenses — the imperfect, denoting prolonged past action or custom; and by the past definite, denoting past action without continuity, a past incident: —

hablaba, *I spoke*, — that is, *I was speaking.*	**hablé**, *I spoke*, — that is, *on one occasion past.*

698. PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

hablé, *I spoke.* | **comí**, *I ate.* | **viví**, *I lived.*

a. Indicates what occurred on *one* occasion in the past, whether a short time or ages before, of which no part is continued to the present, and without involving duration or extension of time. It is, therefore, the tense of absolute past time, corresponding to the Greek aorist: —

le **ví** hace un momento,	I saw him a moment ago.
lo **dijo** ayer, pero lo niega hoy,.	he said so yesterday, but he denies it to-day.
Juan **salió** temprano,	John went out early.
el mes pasado **estuve** en el Escorial,	last month I was at the Escorial.
Alejandro **murió** jóven,	Alexander died young.
Cain **mató** á su hermano,	Cain slew his brother.

b. Hence the past definite is the favorite tense for historical narration, in every case in which the action or state is devoid of the idea of repetition, custom, and prolonged duration, which distinguishes it radically from the imperfect: —

hasta la mañana del ocho no **pudo** el confesor enterar del edicto á Carlos III, quien sin demora **mandó** á su ministro despachar un correo al Inquisidor general,	until the morning of the eighth, the confessor was not able to inform the king of the edict, who immediately directed his minister to despatch a courier to the Inquisitor-general.

— Ferrer del Rio, *Cárlos III*, Madrid, 1856; I. 388.

la ciudad de Granada **fué** poblacion de los de Damasco, que **vinieron** con Tarif su capitan; i diez años despues que los Alárabes **echaron** á los Godos del señorío de España, la **escogieron** por habitacion,	the city of Granada was settled by people from Damascus, who came with Tarif their leader, and ten years after the Arabs drove the Goths from power in Spain, they selected it for their residence.

— Mendoza, *Guerra de Granada*, Lisbon, 1627; f. 2, *b*.

c. In the ancient language, the past definite was often replaced by the old pluperfect in *ra* (**hablara, comiera,** from the Latin *fabularam, comederam*), now limited mostly to the subjunctive mood: —

Él **dixera** otra razon,	He gave a different message.

— Ballad "*Rosa fresca*."

Por ahí **fuera** á pasar,	He passed that way.

— Ballad "*Fonte frida*."

Las cartas echó en el fuego,	Into the fire he threw the notes,
Y al mensagero **matara**,	And slew the messenger.

— Ballad "*Paseábase el rey moro*."

699. Past Indefinite Tense.

he hablado,	*I have spoken.*
he comido,	*I have eaten.*
he vivido,	*I have lived.*
he estado hablando,	*I have been speaking.*
he estado comiendo,	*I have been eating.*
he estado viviendo,	*I have been living.*

a. Denotes what is absolutely past, but wholly undetermined as to the specific period: —

he escrito una carta,	I have written a letter.
no digas nada á nadie de lo que **hemos tratado,**	do not tell anybody anything about what we have talked.
han cumplido con su obligacion,	they have discharged their duty.
¿**habeis quedado** en no ir?	have you decided not to go?
VV. no **han dicho** nada,	you have said nothing.
España **ha producido** grandes hombres,	Spain has produced great men.

b. Indicates a determinate epoch in the past which has not entirely elapsed: —

hoy **hemos escrito** algunas cartas,	we have written some letters to-day.
mi hermano se marchó la semana pasada y **ha vuelto** hoy,	my brother went away last **week**, and has returned to-day.
este año **ha habido** mucha llūvia,	there has been a good deal of rain this year.
¿cuándo **ha visto** V. á fulano de tal?	when have you seen Mr. So and So?
le **he visto** este mes,	I have seen him this month.
no le **ví** el mes pasado,	I did not see him last month.

c. This tense is often used incorrectly at the present day in imitation of the French: —

Popular.	Correct.
he ido anoche al teatro.	anoche **fuí** al teatro.
ha venido ayer y **se ha alojado** en la fonda del Cisne.	**vino** ayer y **se alojó** en la fonda del Cisne.

d. The progressive form is used the same as the common one, except that it can only stand when the time during which an action or state lasted is mentioned or easily implied: —

¿qué **ha hecho** V. hoy?	what have you done to-day?
¿qué **ha estado** V. **haciendo** hoy?	what have you been doing to-day?
he estado escribiendo cartas,	I have been writing letters.

700. Pluperfect Tense.

había hablado,	I had spoken.
había comido,	I had eaten.
había vivido,	I had lived.
había estado hablando,	I had been speaking.
había estado comiendo,	I had been eating.
había estado viviendo,	I had been living.

a. Expresses an action or event that is absolutely completed, with reference to another which was simultaneous with or subsequent to it, expressed or implied: —

yo **había leido** ya un traslado del libro, ántes que saliese impreso,	I had already read a transcript of the book, before it came out in print.
él **había estado durmiendo** durante la conversacion,	he had been sleeping during the conversation.
le pregunté si **había oido** alguna cosa nueva,	I asked him if he had heard anything new.

701. Past Anterior.

(cuando) **hube hablado,**	(when) I had spoken.
(cuando) **hube comido,**	(when) I had eaten.
(cuando) **hube vivido,**	(when) I had lived.

a. Expresses the same as the pluperfect, but is always preceded by some conjunction of time, such as, **cuando,** *when;* **despues que,** *after;* **luego que, así que, tan pronto como,** *as soon as;* **no bien,** *no sooner;* **apénas,** *scarcely, hardly;* etc. :—

cuando **hube leido** el oficio, se lo devolví,	when I had read the (official) paper, I handed it back to him.
luego que **hubo escrito** la contestacion, la entregó al mozo,	after he had written the answer, he delivered it to the waiter.
tan pronto como **hubimos penetrado** en el anden, se puso en marcha el tren,	as soon as we had reached the platform of the station, the train began to move off.

702. A simple form of the pluperfect indicative is often met with in the exalted prose, or poetical, style, a form derived from the Latin original in *-aram*, *-eram*, etc., and which is now chiefly confined to the imperfect subjunctive in *-ra* :—

el pendon de Castilla ondeó luego en una de las torres (de la Alhambra) donde tantos siglos **tremolára** el estandarte del Profeta,	soon the pennon of Castile floated out over one of the towers (of the Alhambra) where, for so many centuries, the Prophet's standard *had waved.*

—Lafuente, *Hist. de España*, 1850.

divorciado del partido en cuyas aras lo **sacrificára** todo,	divorced from the party on whose altars he *had sacrificed* all.

— Emilio Castelar, *Ferdinand VII*, 1864.

abominado de la teocrácia á quien **sirviera**,	detested by the fanatics whom he *had served.* — *Ibid.*
Trayendo á nuestros pechos la dulzura	Restoring to our hearts the joys of peace
Que **perdieran** un tiempo aún no olvidado,	That they *had lost* in days not yet forgotten.

— *Sonnet to King Alfonso*, 1877.

703. Future Tense.

hablaré, *I shall speak.* | **comeré**, *I shall eat.* | **viviré**, *I shall live.*

a. Denotes future time: —

escribiré la carta mañana por la mañana,	I shall write the letter to-morrow morning.
¿qué **hará** V. en ese caso?	what will you do in that case?
la guerra **acabará** pronto,	the war will close soon.
habrá una cosecha abundante este año,	there will be an abundant harvest this year.
¿cuando **vendrá**? sabes?	when will he come, do you know?
será V. elegido diputado,	you will be elected to Congress.

b. It is employed in a potential sense in interrogative sentences that are undeniable in the estimation of the interrogator; also in queries: —

¿**habrá** desgracia mayor que la mia? [más ruin?	can there be a greater misfortune than mine? [light?
¿**podrá** manifestarse infamia	can baser villainy be brought to

c. Replaces the present tense, when something is affirmed of which there is a doubt. In such case, some adverb or phrase must be inserted like *perhaps*, *I suspect*, *I wonder;* and when speaking of time or age, *about*: —

vendrá para abonarme la cantidad que me debe,	he is coming, perhaps, to pay me the amount he owes me.
no sé á qué **vendrá**,	I do not know what he comes for.
¿cuántos años **tendrá**?	about how old is he?
tendrá unos veinte años,	he is somewhere about twenty years old.
¿qué hora **será**?	what time is it, I wonder?
serán las diez,	it must be about ten.

d. Denotes not so much future time as *will*, moral consent or refusal: —

haré todo cuanto V. quiera,	I will do all you desire.
no lo **haré** de ningun modo,	I will not do it by any means.

704. Idiomatic future forms are: —

a. **Haber de**, *to have to, to be to, to will, to be about to*, denoting mild duty, intention, design, with reference to the future: —

mañana **he de ir** á comer con un amigo mío,	to-morrow I am to dine with a friend of mine.
ella **ha de entregar** el lúnes por la mañana,	she is to make her returns Monday morning.
la aseguro á V. que no **hemos de ir**,	I assure you that we will not go.

b. **Haber de** also signifies possible possession, *to believe that one has, must have*: —

he de tener en casa un ejemplar del libro que V. busca,	I think I have at home a copy of the book you seek.

c. **Tener que**, *to have to, must*, denotes necessity, positive obligation: —

tenemos los pobres **que** trabajar para ganar el pan de cada dia,	we poor people have to toil to earn our daily bread.
¿qué **tiene** V. **que** hacer hoy?	what have you got to do to-day?
tenemos que hablar,	a word with you (*seriously*).

d. **Tener que** means also what remains to be said, done, or denotes expostulation: —

¿qué **tiene** V. **que** decir?	what have you to say?
él no **tiene** nada **que** ver con eso,	he has nothing to do with that.

e. **Tener de,** *to have to*, denotes provision: —

¿**tenemos** algo **de** comer? *or*	have we anything to eat?
¿**hay** algo **de** comer?	is there anything to eat?

f. **Ir á,** with an infinitive, *to be going to*: —

voy á visitarle,	I am going to pay him a visit.
va á ver lo que sale,	he is going to see what will result
van á oir misa,	they are going to attend mass.

705. Future Perfect.

habré hablado,	I shall have spoken.
habré comido,	I shall have eaten.
habré vivido,	I shall have lived.

a. This tense bears the same relation to the simple future that the pluperfect and past anterior do to the past definite: —

ya **habré terminado** la tarēa cuando llegue el verano,	I shall have finished my task when summer comes.
mañana á estas horas ya **habrá concluido** todo,	to-morrow, about this time, all will be over.

b. The same special rules belong to this tense as to the simple form (§ 703, *b*, *c*) to express a conjecture in the tone of conviction or confidence: —

¿se **habrá visto** cosa más enredada?	could anything be more involved?
¿qué vicio **habrá tenido** el chico?	what bad habit could the boy have had?
ya **habrás oido decir** eso muchas veces,	doubtless you have often heard that said.
no te **habrás expresado** claramente,	probably you have not expressed yourself clearly.
habrán recibido malas noticias,	they must have received bad news.

706. Conditional Present.

hablaría, *I should speak.* | **comería,** *I should eat.* | **viviría,** *I should live.*

a. Used chiefly in conditional sentences of which it naturally forms the *apodasis* or conclusion, while the

clause with **si**, *if*, forms the *protasis* or states the condition: —

leería todo el dia, si **tuviese** tiempo,	I should read all day, if I had time.
si no creía que me **hiciese** daño, **comería** áun más,	if I did not think it would hurt me, I should eat even more.
viviría mucho más tiempo, si se **cuidase** mejor,	he would live much longer, if he took better care of himself.

b. In the protasis the forms in *-se* and *-ra* are interchangeable: —

leería todo el dia, si **tuviera** (*or* **tuviese**) libros,	I should read all day, if I had books.

c. The clauses in the protasis and apodosis may freely exchange places: —

si **tuviese** (*or* **tuviera**) dinero, **compraría** la finca, [**haría**?	if I had money, I would purchase the property. [would you do?
si **estuviese** V. en mi lugar ¿qué	if you were in my place, what

d. The protasis may be understood or implied: —

yo no lo **haría** de modo alguno,	I would not do it by any means.
dijo que **vendría**,	he said that he would come.
él **consentiría** en ello, yo nó,	he would agree to it, I would not.
creyeron que **habría** una paz duradera,	they believed that there would be a lasting peace.

e. To express a wish or modest request: —

desearía ver las habitaciones de este cuarto.	I would like to see the rooms of this apartment.

REMARK. — In this sense, the subjunctive form in *-ra* with the verb **querer**, *to wish*, *to like*, is more common: —

quisiera ver lo que tiene V. en telas de algodon,	I should like to see what you have in cotton goods.

f. To indicate an approximate or uncertain statement in narrations: —

sería la una de la madrugada,	it was *about* one A.M.
serían las dos de la tarde,	it was *about* two P.M.
dicha señora **sería** muy hermosa,	the lady you mention **was** very beautiful, *I suppose.*

g. To express possibility or fitness: —

¿**sería** verdad eso?	could that be so?
¿**debería** de hacerlo yo?	ought I to do it, forsooth?

The Use of the Subjunctive Mode.

707. The subjunctive mode expresses necessity, doubt, or emotion, and is chiefly used in a clause dependent on a verb containing one of these ideas.

708. In independent and principal sentences the subjunctive is used: —

a. In the present tense to supply the imperative mode, affirmatively in the first and third persons, and negatively in all persons: —

sea yo,	*let me be.*	no sea yo,	*let me not be.*
(*sé tú*),	(be thou).	no seas (*tú*),	*do not be.*
sea él,	*let him be.*	no sea (*él*),	*let him not be.*
sea V.,	*be* (sing.).	no sea V.,	*do not be* (sing.).
seamos nosotros,	*let us be.*	no seamos,	*let us not be.*
(*sed vosotros*),	(be ye).	no seais,	*do not be.*
sean ellos,	*let them be.*	no sean,	*let them not be.*
sean VV.,	*be* (plur.).	no sean VV.,	*do not be* (plur.).
haga yo,	*let me do.*	no haga yo,	*let me not do.*
(*haz*),	(do thou).	no hagas,	*do not do.*
haga,	*let him do.*	no haga,	*let him not do.*
haga V.,	*do* (sing.).	no haga V.,	*do not do* (sing.).
hagamos,	*let us do.*	no hagamos,	*let us not do.*
(*haced*),	(do ye).	no hagais,	*do not do.*
hagan,	*let them do.*	no hagan,	*let them not do.*
hagan VV.,	*do* (plur.).	no hagan VV.,	*do not do* (plur.).

REMARK. — Thus it will be seen that the imperative has only one proper form in each number, and that in the affirmative diction. In all the other persons, and throughout the negative inflection, the subjunctive must be used. Hence, we cannot say, *no haz*, *no haced*; *no sé*, *no sed*; but only **no** *hagas*, **no** *hagais*; **no** *seas*, **no** *seais*: —

haz lo que *te* digo,	do what I tell thee.
no **hagas** lo que *te* prohibo,	do not do what I forbid thee.
haced lo que *os* digo,	do what I tell you.
no **hagais** lo que *os* prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.

And in polite address: —

haga V. lo que le digo,	do what I tell you (*sing.*).
no **haga** V. lo que le prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.
hagan VV. lo que les digo,	do what I tell you (*plur.*).
no **hagan** VV. lo que les prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.

b. To express a gentle command, exhortation, suggestion: —

séale la tierra leve,	may the ground be light over him.
alábente los cielos,	may the heavens praise thee.
hágame V. el favor,	pray do me the favor.
pidan lo que quieran,	let them ask for what they wish.
¡**viva** el rey!	long live the king!
sepan cuantos estas cartas vieren,	know all men by these presents (*let all know who shall see*, etc.).
pongamos fin á la plática,	let us end the discussion.
sepamos qué es esto,	let us know what this is.
ándeme yo caliente, y **ríase** la gente (*Góngora*, 1627),	let me be warm, and the people may scorn.

REMARK. — With this use of the subjunctive, *que* may be added — an ellipse to be explained by understanding some verb expressing a command or wish: —

que pase, *let him enter*.	**que** bāile, *let him dance*.
que salga, *let him come out*.	**que** no salga nadie, *let no one go out*.
que venga otro, *bring another*.	**que** se quite, *take him* (or *it*) *off*.

c. With indeterminate expressions involving indifference: —

venga lo que viniere,	come what may.
salga lo que saliere,	be the issue what it may.
sea la que fuere la contestacion,	be the answer what it may.
digan lo que quieran,	let them say what they please.
donde quiera que **vayan**,	wherever they go.

d. With correlatives that express alternative: —

que lo **sepa** ó no,	whether he knows it or not.
que **llueva** ó que no **llueva**,	whether it rains or not.
que **quieras** ó no **quieras**,	whether you will or no.
quisiese ó no **quisiese**,	whether he would or not.
ya **sea** por un motivo, ya **sea** por otro,	whether for one reason or for another.
alégrese ó no el pueblo,	whether the people rejoice or not.

e. In the present or imperfect with verbs denoting a wish: —

plegue á Dios no salga así,	God grant that it may not turn out so!
pluguiese á Dios me encontrára allí,	would God I had been there!
ojalá **hubiese** escuchado mis consejos,	would that he had listened to my counsels!
permita Dios que lo pongas por obra,	God grant that you may put it in practice!

709. The subjunctive mode is employed in dependent sentences connected with the principal clause by the conjunction **que**, *that*: —

a. When the principal clause contains a term that denies, doubts, or questions the assertion or possibility of the assertion contained in the dependent sentence: —

no **creo** que lo **haya** hecho,	I do not believe he did it.
dudo que lo **hayan** dicho,	I doubt whether they said so.
¿ **es verdad** que lo **hayan** intentado?	is it true that they attempted it?
no pudo ser que lo **negasen**,	they could not have denied it.
ni **puede** sostenerse que **fuera** más tiránico que sus contemporáneos,	and it cannot be maintained that he was more tyrannical than his contemporaries.
no se sabe que lo **hayan** variado,	it is not known that they changed it.

REMARK. — If the dependent verb refers to the future, the appropriate tense is employed: —

¿**cree** V. que **triunfarémos**?	do you think we shall triumph?

b. When the verb in the principal clause denotes hope, expectation, fear, apprehension: —

esperemos á que **salgan** todos,	let us wait for them all to go out.
temo que no **haya** recibido la carta,	I fear that he has not received the letter.

c. After verbs expressive of a command, direction, caution, wish, desire, entreaty, preference, concession, permission: —

mandó que se **hiciera**,	he ordered it to be done.
dispuso que el rey **asistiese** á la junta,	he took measures for the king to be present at the meeting.
quiere que nos **marchemos**,	he desires us to go away.
le supliqué que no se **fuese**,	I begged him not to go away.
mire V. que no **rompan** el plato,	see that they do not break the plate.
permítame V. que le **haga** una pregunta,	allow me to ask you a question.
admito que no lo **haya** dicho,	I grant that he did not say so.
prefiero que no **dudes**,	I prefer you should not doubt.

d. After terms denoting some strong emotion, such as joy, grief, regret, surprise, vexation: —

me alegraré que no **haya** sucedido desgracia alguna,	I shall rejoice if no accident occurred.
siento que no **hayámos** podido venir,	I regret that we were not able to come.
me admiro que no lo **confieses** con franqueza,	I am surprised that you do not frankly confess it.

e. After impersonal expressions, unless they imply positive certainty: —

conviene que lo **sepa**,	it is proper for him to know it.
es lástima que lo **niegue**,	it is a pity that he denies it.
es fácil que no **venga**,	it is probable that he will not come.

es justo que **cobremos** nuestros derechos,	it is just that we secure our rights.
es necesario que lo **haga** V. pronto,	you must do it soon (*it is necessary that you*, etc.).
era preciso que la intolerancia se **personificára** en alguno,	it was necessary that intolerance should take form in some one.
no es seguro que **estén** más obligados ahora que **estuviesen** en vida á satisfacer indiscretas preguntas,	it is not certain that they are more obliged now than they were in life to satisfy indiscreet inquiries.

710. The subjunctive is employed after certain conjunctions in sentences expressing possibility, uncertainty, and indefinite future time. Such are: —

ántes que, *before.*
á ménos que, *unless.*
á fin de que, *to the end that.*
aunque, *although.*
bien que, *although.*
como, *when, as.*
como si, } *as if.*
cual si, }
como quiera que, *notwithstanding.*
con tal que, *provided that.*
cuando, *when.*
dado que, *granted that.*
en caso de que, *in case that.*
hasta que, *until.*
hasta donde, *as far as.*
luego que, *as soon as.*
miéntras, *while.*
no sea que, *lest.*
ojalá, *would that.*
para que, *in order that.*
por — que, *however.*
siempre que, *whenever.*
sin que, *without.*
supuesto que, *supposing that.*

ántes que **escribiese** V. este libro, ni acaso **imaginára** escribirlo,	before you wrote this book, or perhaps had an idea of writing it.
aunque **pierda** la herencia, no consentiré,	although I lose the inheritance, I will not consent.
como si no **comprendiera,**	as if he did not understand.
con tal que lo **haga,**	provided he do it.
se lo diré cuando **pueda,**	I will tell him when I can.
¿que dirá tu amo cuando **vea** lo que has hecho?	what will your master say when he sees what you have done?
hasta que **venga,**	until I (*or* he) come.

luego que **hayan entregado** el dinero, venga V. á mi casa,	as soon as they have delivered the money, come to my house.
para que lo **crea**,	that he may believe it.
por sabio que **sea**,	however wise he be.
sin que lo **supiésemos**,	without our having known it.

711. The subjunctive is used in relative sentences, when the relative pronoun refers to a negative or restrictive idea, or to an interrogation involving a negative answer: —

no hay quien lo **crea**,	there is no one who believes it.
no había quien le **ganase** en mal genio,	there was no one who exceeded him in bad temper.
tampoco fué el único que en su siglo **emprendiese** guerras religiosas,	nor was he the only one who, in his time, engaged in religious wars.
no hay mal que cien años **dure**,	there is no ill that lasts forever.
sólo dos personas hay que **sepan** más de él que V.,	there are only two persons who know more of him than you.
¿hay alguno que **haga** ménos que él?	is there any one who does less than he?

a. The subjunctive is further used when the relative refers to persons, things, and ideas, that are unknown, or are mentioned in a general indefinite sense: —

si cayeras en manos de personas que te **supieran** manejar, ya trabajarías bien,	if you came into the hands of persons who knew how to manage you, you would work well.
aguardaba el paso de algun aldeano que le **diese** buenos informes,	he waited for some villager to pass by who might give him reliable information.
si existe álguien que **haya leido** todo lo que hemos escrito, habrá notado, *etc.*,	if there is any one who has read all that we have written, he has doubtless noted that, *etc.*
deudores serán de VV. cuantos **escriban** sobre Felipe II,	all who write on Philip II will be your debtors.
quien quiera que **seas**,	whoever you may be.
adonde quiera que **vaya**,	wherever he goes.
venga lo que **viniere**,	come what will (*or* may).

Correspondence of Tenses.

712. The present subjunctive corresponds to the present and future indicative: —

quiero que **venga,**	I wish him to come.
no **quiero** que se **vaya,**	I do not wish him to go.
es preciso que la historia **hable,**	history must speak (*it is necessary that history speak*).
le **rogaré** que se **abstenga,**	I will ask him to abstain.
será preciso que se **quede,**	it will be necessary for him to stay.

713. The imperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative: —

quería que **viniese** (*or* **viniera**),	I wished him to come.
no **quise** que se **fuese** (*or* se **fuera**),	I did not wish him to go.
fué preciso que **hablase,**	it was necessary for him to speak.
ha querido que se **entendiesen** (*or* se **entendieran**),	he desired that they should come to an understanding.
había exigido que no **volviesen** (*or* **volvieran**),	he had required that they should not return.

714. The past indefinite subjunctive corresponds to the present or future of the indicative: —

es fácil que se **haya ido,**	it is probable that he has gone.
no **creo** que **haya sobrado** nada,	I do not believe anything was left.

715. The pluperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative: —

no **pensé** que se **hubiese ido** tan pronto,	I did not suppose that he would have gone so soon.
fué preciso que se **hubiera enterado** cuanto ántes,	it was necessary for him to have informed himself at once.

716. The future and future perfect subjunctive are employed in sentences introduced by si, *if;* cuando, *when;*

miéntras, *while*, or by a relative pronoun or adverb, when reference is made to a future contingency: —

si **tuviere tiempo**, vendré,	if I should have time, I will come.
mientras **durare** la vida,	while life shall last.
cuando **hubiere** concluido lo que tiene que hacer, escribirá la carta,	when he has finished what he has to do, he will write the letter.
devolveré todo cuanto me **dieren**,	I shall return all they give me.

REMARK. — Instead of this tense, the present or past indefinite subjunctive may be employed: —

si **tenga** tiempo,	if I have time.
mientras **dure** la vida,	while life lasts.
todo cuanto me **den**,	all they give me.
cuando **haya concluido**,	when he has finished.

The Use of the Infinitive Mode.

717. The infinitive, as a verbal noun (represented in English by the ending *-ing*), may be inflected precisely like any substantive in the singular: —

hablar,	*to speak, speaking.*	**vivir**,	*to live, living.*
de hablar,	*of speaking.*	**de vivir**,	*of living.*
á hablar,	*to speaking.*	**á vivir**,	*to living.*
con hablar, *or* **hablando**,	*by speaking.*	**con vivir**, *or* **viviendo**,	*by living.*

hablar mucho es un vicio,	to talk much is a bad habit.
el arte de bien **vivir**,	the art of living correctly.
muy propenso á **mentir**,	much addicted to falsifying.
con hablar / **hablando** la gente se entiende,	by talking, people come to an understanding.
el apetito viene { **comiendo**, / **con comer**, }	appetite comes by eating.

718. Hence the infinitive stands after all prepositions: —

ántes de **levantarse,**	before getting up.
despues de **comer,**	after eating (*or* dinner).
sin **preguntar,**	without asking *or* inquiring.

REMARK. — The preposition **en,** *in*, is, however, usually accompanied by the gerund when it signifies (1) *after*, (2) *by*. In the latter case, we may substitute *con* with the infinitive, or the gerund may be used alone: —

en comiendo, salgo á dar un paseito,	after eating, I go out and take a short walk.
en entrando en el despacho es inaccesible á todos,	after he enters the office, he is inaccessible to all.
en pagándole se zanja la dificultad,	by paying him, you heal the difficulty.

719. The definite article is usually employed with the infinitive as subject or predicate: —

el saber es siempre útil,	knowledge is always useful.
el comer es indispensable á la vida,	eating is indispensable to life.
á Pedro toca **el gobernar,**	it is Peter's duty to govern.
sería curioso **el comparar** esta doctrina con la otra,	it would be curious to compare this doctrine with the other.
el mejor medio es **el probar** que hay un pensamiento propio filosófico en España,	the best way is to prove that Spain has a philosophic idea of her own.

but

gastar en un banquete la renta de un año es locura,	to expend on a banquet a year's income is folly.
aunque sea **repetir** lo que nadie ignora, los Españoles estamos atrasados,	although it be to repeat what no one is ignorant of, we Spaniards are behind the age.

720. The infinitive governs its case only when used substantively; otherwise, its apparent object is a true subject of the verbal idea: —

el dulce **lamentar** de dos pastores (= el dulce **lamento**),	the sweet lament of two shepherds.

oigo el **murmurar** de las fuentes (= oigo el **murmullo**),	I hear the playing of the fountains.
al **acabar** de la vida (= al **fin** de la vida),	at the close of life.
al **caer** del dia (= á la **caida** del [dia),	at the close of day.

but

al **alzarse** el telon,	when the curtain rises (*or* rose).
al **acabarse** la vida,	when life closes (*or* closed).
al **entrar** el estrangero,	when the foreigner entered.
al **asomarse** al balcon,	on looking out at the balcony.
al **caer** el dia,	when the day declined.

721. The infinitive is used in the dative with the article to replace a finite clause introduced by a conjunction of time, as *when, after, as;* or a preposition, as *in:* —

al **hablar** así,	in speaking thus.
al **tocar** á misa,	when the bell tolled for mass.
al **verle** yo tan distraido,	when I saw him thus inattentive.
al **cumplir** Simon los trece años perdió su último hermano,	when Simon was thirteen years old, he lost his last brother.

a. Without the article, the preposition *á*, with an infinitive, often replaces the protasis of a conditional sentence: —

á **saber** lo que resultaría (= si hubiese sabido),	if I had known what would come of it.
á no **confesarlo**, saldría peor (= si no lo confesase),	if he did not confess it, it would turn out worse.
á no **ser** yo el que lo pedí, no tendría inconveniente,	were it not I who asked for it, I should have no objection.

722. The infinitive is governed directly, or indirectly by a preposition, according to the regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends.

723. The infinitive depends directly on the verb when both have the same subject, except verbs of commanding, causing, hindering, or forbidding, which may take the infinitive *or* a subjunctive. Such verbs are: —

celebrar, *to be glad to.*	merecer, *to deserve to.*
conviene, *it is expedient to.*	necesitar, *to want to.*
deber, *to ought, be to.*	oir, *to hear.*
dejar, *to let, allow to.*	osar, *to dare, venture to.*
desear, *to desire, want to.*	pensar, *to intend to.*
determinar, *to resolve to.*	poder, *to be able to, can.*
esperar, *to hope, expect to.*	pretender, *to claim, try to.*
gustar, *to like to.*	procurar, *to try to.*
hacer, *to make, cause to.*	prohibir, *to forbid to.*
impedir, *to prevent from.*	querer, *to wish to.*
mandar, *to have, order.*	saber, *to know how to, can.*
más vale, *it is better to.*	temer, *to fear to.*

celebraría **verle** á V. allí,	I should be glad to see you **there.**
no conviene **hacerlo,**	it is not wise to do it.
debo **decirle** á V. que . . . ,	I must tell you that . . . .
no me deja **concluir,**	he will not let me finish.
deseo **hablar** con él,	I want to speak to him.
me gusta **comer** tarde,	I like to dine late.
¿qué me manda V. **hacer?**	what do you direct me to do?
piensa **partir** pronto,	he intends to go soon.
se prohibe **fijar** carteles,	it is forbidden to post notices.

724. The infinitive is governed by a preposition according to the signification or natural regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends: —

725. By the preposition *á:* —

a. With verbs of motion, and such as involve the idea of direction toward an end. Such are: —

aprender á, *to learn to.*	dar á, *to give to.*
aspirar á, *to aspire to.*	echar á, *to begin to.*
comenzar á, *to commence to.*	empezar á, *to begin to.*

enseñar á, *to teach to.*
enviar á, *to send to.*
ir á, *to go to, be going to.*
obligar á, *to compel to.*
pasar á, *to go, come to.*
salir á, *to go out to.*
venir á, *to come to.*
volver á, *to — again.*

Together with many reflexive verbs expressive of strong moral assertion, effort, or decision, such as:—

atreverse á, *to dare to.*
decidirse á, *to resolve to.*
esforzarse á, *to try to.*
negarse á, *to refuse to.*
ponerse á, *to begin to.*
resistirse á, *to resist.*

aprende **á** leer y **á** escribir,	he is learning to read and write.
me dió **á** entender,	he gave me to understand.
echóse **á** reir,	he began to laugh.
empieza **á** llover,	it begins to rain.
voy **á** verle pronto,	I am going to see him soon.
vamos **á** dar un pasēo,	let us go and take a walk.
viene **á** decirle eso que sabes,	he comes to tell you that you know of.
vuelve **á** salir,	he goes out again.
no nos volverá **á** ver,	he will not see us again.
se niega **á** aceptarlo,	he refuses to accept it.
no se atrevió **á** decirselo,	he did not dare tell it to him.

b. In certain elliptical phrases, such as:—

á saber; **á** decir la verdad,	namely; to speak truly.

726. By the preposition *de:*—

a. With nouns and adjectives which are followed by a genitive:—

tiene el atrevimiento **de** decirmelo á la cara,	he has the impudence to say it to my face.
no tengo costumbre **de** mentir,	I am not in the habit of telling falsehoods.
tiene ganas **de** comer,	he has a desire to eat.
no me da la gana **de** hacerlo,	I don't choose to do it.
hágame V. el favor **de** decirme eso,	do me the favor to tell me that
tengo vergüenza **de** pedirlo,	I am ashamed to ask it.

no tengo el gusto **de** conocer á V.,	I have not the pleasure of knowing you.
es difícil **de** conseguir,	it is difficult to attain.
soy deseoso **de** aprender,	I am desirous to learn.

b. With verbs represented by the following: —

acabar de, *to have just.*	desistir de, *to cease from.*
acordarse de, *to remember to.*	haber de, *to be about to.*
alegrarse de, *to be glad to.*	ocuparse de, *to busy one's self with.*
arrepentirse de, *to repent of.*	olvidarse, *to forget to.*
dejar de, *to fail to, leave off.*	tratar de, *to try to.*

acaba **de** salir,	he has just gone out.
me acuerdo **de** haber dicho,	I remember to have said.
se alegra **de** vernos,	he is glad to see us.
no deja **de** escribir,	he does not cease writing.
hemos **de** vivir,	we must live.
se me olvidó **de** decirlo,	I forgot to say so.
trataré **de** venderlos,	I shall try to sell them.

c. After the verb *to be,* used impersonally: —

es de desear que no venga,	it is desirable that he do not come.
es de esperar que sea pronto,	it is to be hoped that it will be soon.

727. By the preposition *en:* —

se empeñó **en** querer ir á verle,	he persisted in his desire to go and see him.
no tardará **en** venir,	he will not be long coming.

728. By the preposition *con,* or the gerund with or without *en:* —

con hablar (**en hablando, hablando**) así, creía sacar algun provecho,	by talking thus, he thought that he would derive some advantage.

729. By the preposition **para**, *in order to, to, for the purpose of, about to,* expressing purpose, result, use, situation: —

se abriga uno **para** no tener frio,	one wraps up so as not to be cold.
tiene bastante dinero **para** comprar la casa,	he has money enough to buy the house.
se come **para** vivir, no se vive	we eat to live, we do not live to eat.
el hombre nace **para** morir,	man is born to die.
quien tiene oídos **para** oir, óiga,	he who hath ears to hear, let him hear.
no sirve **para** aprender,	he is not fit to learn.
estoy **para** marcharme,	I am about to set out.

730. By the preposition **por**, *for the sake of, on account of, to,* expressing motive, result, reason, willingness, or anticipation: —

trabaja **por** confundir á su contrario,	he labors to silence his adversary.
habla sólo **por** hablar,	he only talks for the sake of talking.
no me lo dijo ántes, **por** no faltar á un compromiso,	he did not tell me before, so as not to break a promise.
me regañó **por** no haber hecho lo que él quería,	he scolded me for not having done as he wished me to do.
llevaba la cara embozada **por** no darse á conocer,	he kept his face muffled, so as not to be known.
estuve **por** escribirle,	I was willing to write him.
la casa está **por** acabar,	the house is yet to be finished.

731. The infinitive may stand in sudden exclamations, as an imperative, or as an interrogation of surprise: —

¡ **callar** ! ¡ **no correr** ! ¿ **negarlo yo** ?	hush! don't run! I deny it?

732. The transitive verbs **oir**, *to hear,* and **ver**, *to see,* are followed by the infinitive, and not by the gerund as in English: —

me vió **venir**,	he saw me coming.
le ví **acercarse**,	I saw him approaching.

REMARK. — With intransitive verbs, the gerund is used as in English: —

vino **corriendo**,	he came running.
se fué **murmurando**,	he went off grumbling.

The Gerund.

733. The gerund partakes of the nature of the verb from which it is derived, and has the same regimen. It is, therefore, invariable in gender and number: —

viéndole acercarse le saludé,	seeing him approach, I saluted him.
[**do** una promesa,	[promise.
no quiso decírmelo, **pretextan-**	he would not tell me, pleading a
los caballeros le recibieron con amables sonrisas, **reconociéndole** el mérito de haber conquistado el corazon de la dama,	the gentlemen received him with pleasant smiles, recognizing in him the merit of having won the heart of the lady.
su doncella entró en el comedor, y **acercándose** á su oido, le dijo secretamente algunas palabras,	her maid came into the dining-room, and, approaching her, she whispered in her ear privately a few words.
volviéndose á uno de los que servían la mesa, añadió,	turning to one of those who served the table, he added.

734. The gerund is freely used with certain verbs to form the idea of progression, of something going on in succession: —

los que **se iban reuniendo,**	those who were gathering.
se fueron presentando los convidados,	the guests came one after another.
estaban comiendo cuando vino,	they were eating when he came.

735. The gerund is often equivalent to the English present participle, or finite verb, introduced by *while, by, in:* —

pero la que vive en delicias, **viviendo** está muerta,	but she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth.
creyó engañarles **aparentando** estar dormido,	he thought to deceive them by feigning sleep.
[dad,	[charity.
haciendo esto muestra su cari-	in doing this, he displays his

736. The gerund may have a definite or indefinite subject: —

pudiendo más con él la fuerza de la sangre que el atractivo de la corona,	the force of blood having more power over him than the lure of a crown.
no **siendo** posible hacer otra cosa,	it not being possible to do anything else.
no **habiendo** tiempo para discutir la medida, se suspendió la sesion,	there not being time to discuss the measure, the session was suspended.

737 The gerund, with or without the preposition *en*, may have an indefinite personal subject, and is translated by *when, if one has, is*, etc.: —

en habiendo dinero en el bolsillo, se gasta sin miseria,	when one has money in his pocket, he spends it freely.

738. The gerund has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived: —

gozando de buena salud,	enjoying good health.
olvidándose de lo pasado,	forgetting the past.
me iba **aficionando** á estas cosas,	I came to grow fond of these things.
queriendo dar á conocer á su yerno,	desiring to make his son-in-law known.

The Use of the Past Participle.

739. The past participle of all verbs is invariable in the compound tenses formed by the auxiliary *haber:* —

los hombres han **comido**,	the men have eaten.
habíamos **vivido** allí,	we had lived there.

a. The verbs **llevar** and **tener**, when used as substitutes of *haber*, require the past participles that accompany them to agree in gender and number with their object: —

llevan **escritas** tres cartas,	they have three letters written.
las cartas que tengo **escritas**,	the letters that I have written.

b. In the tenses of the passive voice, the past participle of the verb conjugated passively is inflected, while those of *ser*, *estar*, and their substitutes, remain unchanged because dependent on *haber:*—

hemos sido **engañados**,	we have been deceived.
han quedado **satisfechos**,	they have remained satisfied.

740. Separated from the auxiliary, the past participle agrees, in gender and number, with the noun or pronoun qualified, like any adjective:—

á la hora **convenida**, ella se presentó **apoyada** en el brazo de su padre, **cubierta** con un vestido blanco,	at the hour agreed on, she came forward leaning on her father's arm, dressed in a white robe.
el gabinete **forrado** de raso blanco y **vestido** de guirnaldas de flores sirvió de capilla,	the sitting-room, lined with white satin and decked with garlands of flowers, served for a chapel.

741. The past participle may be used absolutely:—

firmado el contrato quedaba aún por legitimar la voluntad de los cónyuges,	the (civil) contract having been signed, the will of the pair yet remained to be legalized.
disuelta la asamblea se retiraron todos,	the assembly dissolved, all withdrew.
reunidas las Córtes se empezó á discutir el proyecto de ley,	the Cortes having come together again, they began to discuss the bill.

742. Relation of time in the absolute participial construction may be expressed by the preposition *despues de*, placed before it:—

despues de firmada la paz ambas partes se felicitaron,	after peace was signed, both parties congratulated each other.

despues de cerradas todas las puertas y ventanas se entregaron las llaves al portero de al lado,	after all the doors and windows were locked, the keys were delivered to the porter of the next house.

743. The past participle with the preposition **para**, *for*, is used to express capability or necessity after the verb *to be*, with a negative: —

no es asunto **para satisfecho** en corto número de renglones,	it is not a subject to be exhausted in a few short lines.
estas providencias no son **para propuestas**,	these measures are not to be proposed.
las artes de la política tampoco son tan **para vistas** por dentro como las de la guerra,	nor are the arts of state polity so transparent (easy to be scrutinized) as those of war.

744. Past participles may be used as nouns: —

el **convidado**, *the guest*.	los **convidados**, *the guests*.
los **desposados**, *the espoused*.	los **desgraciados**, *the unfortunate*.
muchos son los **llamados** y pocos los **escogidos**,	many are the called, and few the chosen.

745. The Latin future passive participle in *-ndus* is still preserved in a few substantives only: —

los **educandos**,	the pupils.
los **bautizandos**,	the candidates for baptism.
los libros **expurgandos**,	books to be expurgated.

REMARK. — In substitution, the Spaniards employ the verb *haber de* with the passive or reflexive: —

los libros que **han de ser expurgados**,	the books that are to be expurgated.
los asuntos que **han de deshacerse**,	the matters that are to be disposed of.
este negocio no **se ha de terminar** tan fácilmente como se cree,	this business will not be brought to a close so easily as they think.

746. The *present* participle, as such, has wholly disappeared from the Spanish, being replaced by the gerund. The few remaining forms are used as adjectives or substantives: —

amante de la patria,	fond of one's country.
un caballero **andante**,	a knight-errant.
un hijo **obediente**,	an obedient child.
un traslado **fehaciente**,	an authentic copy.
las Córtes **constituyentes**,	the constituent assembly.
los enseres **pertenecientes** al almacen,	the fixtures belonging to the warehouse.
los **participantes**; los **oyentes**; [los **creyentes**,	the participants; the hearers; [the believers.

Regimen of Verbs.

747. The object of a transitive verb regularly stands in the accusative case without a preposition, when it designates *things* or objects not endowed with life (*Impersonal Accusative*): —

edificó **la casa**,	he built the house.
alcanzaron **una victoria**,	they gained a victory.
Cárlos lee **los diarios**,	Charles reads the newspapers.
el hombre digno ama **la virtud** y aborrece **el vicio**,	the worthy man loves virtue and hates vice.

748. The object of a transitive verb regularly stands with the preposition *á*, when it designates *persons* or *animals* (*Personal Accusative*): —

Juan sigue **á su hermano**,	John follows his brother.
conozco **á este hombre**,	I know this man.
hemos visto **á los reyes**,	we have seen the king and queen.
debemos amar **á Dios** y **á nuestros** semejantes,	we ought to love God and our fellow-men.
el espada mata al toro,	the swordsman slays the bull.
el niño acaricia **al gato**,	the child fondles the cat.

¿**á quién** buscas?	whom do you seek?
se debe recompensar **á los** que nos sirven fielmente,	we ought to reward those who serve us faithfully.
los hombres le acogieron como **á un sér** afortunado,	the men congratulated him as a lucky person.

749. Hence the personal accusative is found: —

a. To indicate definite, determinate, known personality: —

busco **á un criado mio,**	I am seeking a servant of mine.
aguardo **á mis amigos,**	I am waiting for my friends.
fueron á llamar **á un médico muy conocido** por su habilidad,	they went to call a physician well known for his skill.

b. With pronouns in the redundant construction, and in antithesis: —

créeme **á mí,**	believe *me.*
os veré **á vosotros,**	I shall see you.
á mí de todo se **me** pegó,	a little of everything clung to me.
deja **á mí** triste por alegrar **á él,**	he leaves me sad to cheer him.
se miraron **uno á otro,**	they looked at each other.
se engañan **unos á otros,**	they deceive one another.

c. With words that explain a personal pronoun: —

nos abrazó **á todos,**	he embraced us all.
los vió **á todos,**	he saw them all.
nos acogieron muy bien **á mi hermana** y **á mí,**	they received my sister and me very well.

d. After a predicate adjective or past participle: —

la prosperidad hizo orgulloso **á mi amo,**	prosperity made my master proud.
vimos muerto **á nuestro bienhechor,**	we saw our benefactor lie dead.

e. When the object is the proper name of a person or animal, or of a place without the definite article: —

leo **á Cervántes,**	I read Cervantes.
conozco **á Sevilla**; — **á Cádiz,**	I know Seville; — Cadiz.
los Moros conquistaron **á España** en el siglo octavo,	the Moors conquered Spain in the eighth century.
sin esperar más respuesta picó **á Rocinante,**	without waiting for a reply, he put spurs to Rocinante.

but

Pizarro conquistó **el Perú,**	Pizarro conquered Peru.
he visitado **la Coruña,**	I have visited Corunna.

750. The personal accusative stands with the names of things: —

a. When they are considered as personified: —

defiende **á la patria,**	he defends his country.
llamó **á la muerte,**	he invoked death.
las aves saludan **á la aurora,**	the birds salute the dawn.
recompensan **al mérito,**	they reward merit.
temía **á su propia sombra,**	he feared his own shadow.

REMARK. — This principle is especially applied to animals, birds, and insects in fables: —

Éste **á la Hormiga** alaba, aquél **al Perro,**	This one praises the Ant, that one the Dog,
Quién **á la Abeja**, quién **al Papagayo,**	One the Bee, another the Parrot.

— *Fábulas de Iriarte*, Madrid, 1787, vol. i., p. 54.

b. To distinguish the object from the subject: —

el invierno sigue **al otoño,**	winter follows autumn.
la noche precede **al dia,**	night precedes day.
el verbo rige **al nombre**, y el nombre **al verbo,**	the verb governs the noun, and the noun the verb.

c. To distinguish the object of the verb from its predicate: —

llama carácter **á su capricho,**	he calls his caprice character.
trae unos anteojos que le hacen parecer riqueza **á la pobreza,**	he wears glasses that make poverty appear to him riches.

751. The impersonal accusative stands even with a personal object: —

a. When that object is indeterminate, unknown, or taken partitively: —

busco **un criado,**	I am looking for a servant.
fueron á buscar **un médico** que fuese experimentado,	they went to look for an experienced physician.
en mi vida he visto **hombre** que sea más orgulloso,	I have never seen anybody who is prouder.
hemos convidado **algunos amigos,**	we have invited a few friends.
conozco **señoras** más amables que ella,	I know ladies more amiable than she.
España ha producido **grandes capitanes,**	Spain has produced great captains.

b. When the object is qualified by a numeral: —

veo **cuatro personas,**	I see four persons.
el gobernador citó **veinte alcaldes,**	the governor summoned twenty alcaldes.

c. After the verb **tener,** when it means *to have, to possess:* —

tengo **un buen padre,**	I have a good father.
es preciso que el ejército tenga **oficiales,**	the army must have officers.

REMARK. — But when **tener** means *to hold a person fast,* or when it is put for *estar* in definite sentences, the personal accusative follows: —

¿**á quién** tengo? — tengo **á V.,**	whom have I? — I have you.
tengo **á mi madre** enferma,	my mother is ill.
tenemos **á nuestro hermano** en el extrangero,	our brother is abroad (*we have our brother abroad*).

but

tengo **una madre** muy indulgente,	I have a very indulgent mother.
tenemos **un hermano** en el extrangero,	we have a brother abroad.

d. After the verb **perder**, *to lose*, since **perder á** signifies *to ruin:* —

perdió **su único hijo**,	he lost his only son.
he perdido **mi madre**,	I have lost my mother.

REMARK. — Some modern writers, however, offend this rule: —

perdió **á su último hermano**,	he lost his last brother.

— José Selgas, *Escenas Fantásticas*, p. 80, ed. 1876.

e. After the verb **querer**, in the meaning *to wish, to want*, since **querer á** signifies *to love, to like:* —

yo quiero **un hombre honrado** que me sirva,	I want an honest man to serve me.
quiere muchísimo **á su hijo**,	he loves his child very much.

f. After words of naming, appointing: —

el rey nombró **los gobernadores**,	the king appointed the governors.
el papa elige **los cardenales**,	the pope elects the cardinals.

g. When the same verb governs an indirect object with *á*, or a personal pronoun without *á:* —

prefiero **el discreto** al valiente, **Cervántes** á Quevedo, **Cádiz** á Valencia,	I prefer the prudent (man) to the brave, Cervantes to Quevedo, Cadiz to Valencia.
envia **el jardinero** á la plaza,	he sends the gardener to the market.
presentaron **el señor** á la dama,	they presented the gentleman to [the lady.
ha sido forzoso dejar **el conde** en rehenes al enemigo,	it has been necessary to leave the count as a hostage with the foe.
me recomendó **el general**,	he recommended the general to me.
enviaron **el hijo** á su padre,	they sent the child to his father.
abandōnan **el hombre** á su desesperacion,	they deliver the man over to his despair.

For euphony, before the letter *á* very often, but not uniformly: —

busco **amigos**; — **algun amigo**,	I seek friends; — some friend.
¿conoce V. **á este** caballero? / ¿conoce V. **aquel** caballero?	do you know that gentleman?

752. Many transitive verbs admit two objects, — an indirect of the person and a direct of the thing: —

dí **al mozo una propina**,	I gave the lad a gratuity.
envió **á fulano una esquela**,	he sent so and so a note.
le presté **cinco duros**,	I lent him five dollars.
dijo **al juez la verdad**,	he told the judge the truth.

753. Verbs that involve the notion of taking away, winning, asking, paying, thanking, praising, take in Spanish the dative of the person and the accusative of the thing, while in English the object is governed by some preposition other than *to*: —

quitó al pobre todos sus ahorros,	he took from the poor man all his savings.
le **quitó** su hacienda,	he took from him his property.
se la **quitó**,	he took it from him.
robó al obrero su jornal,	he robbed the mechanic of his wages.
se lo **robó**,	he robbed him of them.
ganó á su contrincante la apuesta,	he won the wager from his opponent.
el **ganó** la apuesta,	he won the wager from him.
el pobre **pidió** al caballero una limosna,	the beggar asked the gentleman for an alms.
se la **pidió**,	he asked him for one.
pagó al sastre el gaban,	he paid the tailor for the coat.
le **pagó** al sastre,	he paid the tailor for it.
se lo **pagó**,	he paid him for it.
le **agradecí** su buena voluntad,	I thanked him for his good will.
se la **agradecí**,	I thanked him for it.
alabaron al capitan su valor,	they praised the captain for his courage.
se lo **alabaron**,	they praised him for it.
alabo á V. su aplicacion,	I praise you for your industry.
se la **alabo** á V.,	I praise you for it.
se lo **pido á** V. encarecidamente,	I earnestly beg you to.

REMARK. — **Merecer**, in the sense of *to receive as a reward of merit*, is similarly construed: —

merecer al rey un nombramiento á un alto cargo,	to receive from the king a high appointment.

754. Some verbs require the same construction with personal pronouns only: —

persuadió á su hijo que lo hiciese, *but*	he persuaded his son to do it, *but*
se lo persuadió,	he persuaded him to.
impidió que lo hiciésemos, *but*	he prevented us from doing so, *but*
nos lo impidió,	he prevented us from it.
preguntaron al muchacho si fué verdad, *but*	they asked the lad if it was true, *but*
se lo preguntaron,	they asked him about it.
se lo prohibo á V.,	I forbid you to.

REMARK. — "To give any one anything," in the sense of a *present*, is expressed by **regalar alguna cosa á álguien**; otherwise **dar** is used: —

me regaló un reloj nuevo,	he presented me with a new watch.
me dió un reloj nuevo,	he gave (handed) me a new watch.

755. In English, a verb often governs its object by means of a preposition, when, in Spanish, it is direct: —

to look *for* anything,	buscar alguna cosa, *or* algo.
to listen *to* advice,	escuchar los consejos.
to wait *for* the arrival of a train.	esperar la llegada de un tren.

756. Verbs which express the notion of perceiving, often take with the accusative of the thing a dative of the personal pronoun rendered into English by means of the preposition *in* or *from*: —

trae V. una cara que no **le** he visto jamás,	you wear a countenance that I never saw in you.

confieso que no **le** hallo ni chispa ni sentido,	I confess that I do not find any wit or sense in it.
cuando **me** oyó la respuesta se puso furioso,	when he heard the reply from me, he became very angry.

757. Many verbs signifying to rejoice, to boast, to be sorry, to pity, to remember, to forget, to trust, to distrust, to be ashamed, to laugh at, to want, to need, to deprive, to use, govern their object by means of the preposition **de**, *of*, *for*, *at*. Such verbs are:—

abusar de, *to abuse*.
acordarse de, *to remember*.
admirarse de, *to wonder at*.
alegrarse de, *to rejoice at*.
aprovecharse de, *to avail one's self of*, *to use*.
avergonzarse de, *to be ashamed of*.
burlarse de, *to laugh at*.
carecer de, *to want*, *to be without*.
compadecerse de, *to pity*.
condolerse de, *to pity*.
desconfiar de, *to distrust*
dudar de, *to doubt*.
fiarse de, *to trust*.
gozar de, *to enjoy*.
jactarse de, *to boast*.
lamentarse de, *to lament*.
mofarse de, *to scoff at*.
necesitar de, *to need*.
olvidarse de, *to forget*.
preciarse de, *to boast*.
prescindir de, *to do without*, *to leave out of the account*.
privarse de, *to deprive of*.
reirse de, *to laugh at*.
renegar de, *to abominate*.
servirse de, *to use*.
tener lástima de, *to pity*.
tener vergüenza de, *to be ashamed of*.
usar de, *to use*.
valerse de, *to avail one's self of*.
zafarse de, *to get rid of*.

se acuerda **de** su juventud,	he remembers his youth.
gozamos **de** buena salud,	we enjoy good health.
se olvidan **de** sus amigos,	they forget their friends.
usa **de** medios ilícitos,	he uses unlawful means.
se sirve **de** los talentos ajenos,	he avails himself of the talents of others.
no dudo **de** ello,	I do not doubt it.
prescindiendo **de** eso,	leaving that out of the account.
carecen **de** pan,	they are without bread.

APPENDIX TO PART SECOND.

Diminutives and Augmentatives.

758. These consist of various endings applied chiefly to substantives to express different modes of characterizing persons, things, and qualities, as being *small* or *large*, together with certain other subordinate circumstances, involving attractiveness, burlesque, irony, and aversion. In view of the nice distinctions and shades of feeling they often suggest, it is scarcely possible for the learner to employ them appropriately; and they are, in fact, for the most part, a silent element in the northern tongues, unless rendered by some circumlocution adapted to the context. They abound in domestic and popular language, and in humorous, poetical, and satirical writings, but seldom suit the grave style of history or serious compositions of any kind. Among the uneducated classes, they very commonly appear as a makeshift for a limited vocabulary, or to emphasize passionate utterances.

DIMINUTIVES.

759. The leading diminutives end in:—

a. **Ito, cito, ecito**; *fem.* **ita, cita, ecita,** applied to substantives, adjectives, and a few adverbs, to express smallness of size, quality, or degree, in connection with fondness, caresses, admiration, good humor, true sympathy, modest demand, respect (by servants), and irony stated without vituperation. Therefore this ending

cannot be used with words having in themselves an unlovely, repulsive signification, save in satire or ridicule. The translation may be expressed with substantives, by *little*, *pretty little*, *dear little;* with adjectives and adverbs, by *quite*, *very*, or all may be given by circumlocutions suited to the context:—

papaito; **madrecita**,	papa, do; come, mother.
mi **hermanito**; mi **hermanita**,	my little brother; — sister.
son **amiguitos**,	they are dear friends (of children).
mis **primitos** y **primitas**,	my little cousins.
la **cotorrita** tiene dos **patitas**,	the little parrot has two little feet.
¡ qué **casita** tan **guapita**!	what a pretty little house!
agradezco á V. su **regalito**,	I thank you for your nice gift.
¡ pobre **hijita** mia!	my poor child!
¿ me hace V. el favor de un **vasito** de agua fresca?	will you give me a glass of cool water?
voy, **señorito**; — **señorita**,	yes, sir; — ma'am (of service).
con que ¡ **cuidadito**!	so then, take care now!
es **jovencito** y buen mozo,	he is young and good-looking.
agua **fresquita** ¿ quien pide?	nice, cool water, who will buy?
¡ buñuelos **calentitos**!	fritters, nice and hot!
á este caballero no le gustan las **bromitas**,	this gentleman is not fond of jokes.
yo aseguro que no faltarían **azotitos**,	I'll warrant the stripes were not forgotten.
¡ **angelitos**! qué pronto os avezaban á los sacrificios de la carne humana!	angelic spirits! how quickly they habituated you to sacrifices of human flesh!
Alfonsito; **Manolito**,	little Alfonso; — Manuel.
Carlitos; **Merceditas**,	Charley; little Mercy.
Dolorcitas; **Juanita**,	little Dolores; Jennie.
Paquito; **Pepito**; **Periquito**,	Frank; Josy; Peter.
vive por ahí **cerquita**,	he lives near here.
se quedó algo **lejitos**,	he kept some distance off.
arrímate junto, **juntito**,	move up, close up.
tome V. un **poquito**,	take a little, pray.
andaba **pasito** á paso,	he was going very slowly.

b. **Illo, cillo, ecillo**; *fem.* **illa, cilla, ecilla,** applied likewise to substantives and adjectives, to express smallness of size, quantity, or degree, either stated indifferently without reference to fondness, etc., or in a tone of depreciation, roguishness, ridicule, with or without good humor, and pity for an unfortunate person. It may be translated by *little, somewhat, that* (in contempt), or as the context suggests:—

un **chiquillo** me guió,	a youngster directed me.
un **ladroncillo** es,	he is a little thief.
vaya V. á comprar un **panecillo,**	go and buy a loaf of bread.
estoy algo **malillo,**	I am somewhat ailing.
déme V. un **poquillo,**	give me a very little (a trifle).
écheme V. un **traguillo,**	pour me out a little (swallow).
tiene un **gustillo** desagradable,	it has a somewhat unpleasant taste.
hubo un **olorcillo** de ajos,	there was a slight odor of garlic.
habla con el **tonillo** de un Catalan,	he speaks with the (dialectic) accent of a Catalonian.
es un pobre **viejecillo,**	he is a poor old man.
una **mujercilla** que no tiene vergüenza,	a woman who has no sense of shame.
Julianillo el jorobado,	Julian, the hunchback.
Francesillo el gracioso,	Frank, the (court) jester.
Sebastianillo el enano,	Sebastian, the (court) dwarf.
el libro trae no pocos **cuentecillos,**	the book contains quite a number of short stories.
la Juliana es una **loquilla,**	Julia is a giddy girl.
como me quiere tanto el ama, teme que mi madre le robe ese cariño ¡**pobrecilla**!	as nurse loves me so much, she is afraid my mother will rob her of that affection, poor thing!

c. **Uelo, zuelo, ezuelo**; *fem.* **uela, zuela, ezuela,** applied to substantives and less frequently to adjectives, to express smallness in a depreciative sense, involving inferiority, lowness, ridicule, and disdain; and also in

a humorous, roguish, bantering style. Occasionally it replaces *illo* in its natural meaning of smallness without regard to other qualities: —

chicuelo; rapazuelo,	urchin; youngster.
mozuelo; pequeñuelo,	lad; little one.
cojuelo; tontuelo,	limping; silly person.
cazuela; tinajuela,	skillet; jar.
plazuela; callejuela,	little square; poor street.
pajuelas; pedazuelo,	matches; a petty morsel.
arroyuelo; riachuelo,	brooklet; streamlet.
hombrezuelo; mujerzuela,	little man; low woman.
autorzuelo; pilluelo,	poor author; little thief.
jovenzuelo; salonzuelo,	vile youth; little parlor.

REMARK. — If a polysyllabic stem ends in a vowel, the letter *h* or *g* is inserted with this ending: —

aldea, **aldehuela,** *or* **aldegüela,**	a wretched hamlet.
judío, **judihuelo,** *or* **judigüelo,**	a despised Jew.

d. **Ete, cete**; *fem.* **eta, ceta,** applied to substantives in a diminutive and depreciative sense: —

un **mocete**; un **pobrete,**	a small boy; a poor fellow.
un **librete**; un **galancete,**	a small book; a ladies' man.
una **aleta**; una **lengüeta,**	a little wing; — tongue.

e. **Ejo,** *fem.* **eja,** is applied most commonly to words ending in *l* or *n*, and denotes decided contempt; occasionally, however, it merely indicates smallness of size, quality, degree: —

animalejo,	any troublesome insect.
el **alguacilejo,**	that constable (in disdain).
un **librejo,**	a worthless book.
no cobro más que doce **realejos** diarios,	I only get a pittance of twelve reals a day.
como dijo el autor de cierto **papelejo,**	as the author of a certain scrawl once said.

doña Juana la **Beltraneja**,[1]	lady Jane, she of Beltran.
un **árbolejo**; una **canaleja**,	a small tree; a drinking-trough.

amarillejo, *yellowish*.

REMARK. — This ending is occasionally found with Arabic words hispanicized, to denote simple smallness or to distinguish the less from the greater: —

The little *square* by the Roman aqueduct at Segovia in Spain is called **El Azoguejo** from the Arabic *as-soq*, "the market," "square," and the Spanish diminutive ending. **Almadenejo** means "the lesser mine," to distinguish it from **Almaden**, Arab. *al-ma'din*, "the mine."

760. Other diminutives are formed by means of the endings **ico**, **in**, **ino**, and **iño**, all of which are local or dialectic, to wit: —

a. **Ico**, **cico**, **ecico**; *fem*. **ica**, **cica**, **ecica**, usually given as the synonym of *ito*, was originally a local variation proceeding from Aragon, and domesticated in the Castiles, to add a vein of sprightly humor impossible to characterize. It should not, therefore, be used indiscriminately for *ito*, but be held in reserve to season a choice diminutive wittily and warily: —

mocico; **jovencico**,	little lad; little youngster.
avecico; **perrico**,	little bird; little dog.
Juanico; **Alfonsico**;[2] **Perico**,	Johnny; Alfonso; Peter.
el Emperador y **Felipico**,[3]	the Emperor and little Philip.

---

[1] The princess doña Juana, daughter of the queen doña Juana, wife of Henry IV (1462), by the courtier don Beltran de la Cueva, was popularly called *par mépris* **la Beltraneja**, and because of her notorious illegitimacy, was set aside from the succession, at Henry's death, for the famous Isabella of Castile (1474).

[2] For example, when the present king of Spain succeeded to the throne in 1875, the Madrid people often spoke of him as **Alfonsico**, with a distinct mixture of irony and resignation; "Alfonsito" would have been a grave political error, because of the *adhesion* it implies.

[3] Actually said of Charles V and Philip, his son, about 1535, by the court-*jester*, Francesillo de Zúñiga, in his *Burlesque Chronicle*.

REMARK. — The Aragonese still use **ico** in the natural sense. Even in the old local ballad which first appeared in print in the *Cancionero General* of Valencia, 1511, we find the proper use: —

Fonte frida,[1] fonte frida,	Fountain cool, fountain cool,
Fonte frida y con amor,	Fountain cool and winsome, too,
Do todas las **avecicas**	Where the little birdlings all
Van tomar[2] consolacion,	Gather 'round their mates to woo,
Sino es la **tortolica**	Save the little turtle-dove
Qu' está viuda y con dolor,	That is widowed of its love.

b. **In**, *fem.* **ina**, peculiar to the *Bable* or Asturian dialect; **ino**, *fem.* **ina**, common in the province of Estremadura; and **iño**, *fem.* **iña**, in the dialect of Galicia, are all more or less used in Castilian to denote smallness merely: —

un niño **chiquitin**, una niña **chiquitina**,	a wee little child.
calcetin; **calcetines**,	sock; socks.
peluca; **peluquin**,	wig; little wig.
baldosa; **baldosin**,	flooring-tile; fine flooring-tile.
bolsa; **bolsin**,	exchange; evening exchange.
padrino; **madrina**,	godfather; godmother.
paloma; **palomino**,	dove; pigeon.
recuérdome que era muy aficionado á los **langostinos**,[3]	I remember that he was very fond of shrimps.

cuerpo, **corpiño**, *body of a dress.*

Form.

761. All these endings are attached to the *stem* of a word found by rejecting the terminal vowel, unless *accented*, even in diphthongs: —

abeja, **abejita**, *little bee.*	cuchara, **cucharita**, *teaspoon.*
pájaro, **pajarete**, *mean bird.*	libro, **librillo**, *little book.*
mozo, **mozuelo**, *young lad.*	**jovenzuelo**, *a youngster.*

rubio, a, **rubito**, **a**, *of light complexion.*

---

[1] In Castilian, *Fuente fria.* [2] A Gallicism for *van á tomar.*
[3] A sense not found in the Spanish-English dictionaries; Fr. *écrevisses.*

762. The final radicals *c*, *g* (*gu*), *z*, become respectively *qu*, *gu* (*gü*), *c*, when the ending is introduced by one of the vowels *e* or *i*: —

frac, **fraqu-ecito**, *dress-coat.*
fresco, **fresquito**, *quite cool.*
amigo, **amiguillo**, *little friend.*
ciego, **cieguezuelo**, *blind boy.*
lengua, **lengü-ecita**, *little tongue.*
pez, **pececillo**, *little fish.*
cruz, **crucecita**, *little cross.*
pedazo, **pedacillo**, *little piece.*

a. With regard to radical diphthongs that are movable (*ie*, *ue*), usage generally requires them to be retained at the present day, except in primitives of more than two syllables: —

huevo, **huev-ecito**, *little egg.*
caliente, **calentito**, *nice and hot.*
nieto, **niet-ecillo**, *little grandson.*
valiente, **valenton**, *a swaggerer.*

Still we say: puerta, **portezuela**, *door* (*of a carriage*).

763. The second forms of the diminutives, namely, **cito** (**cico**), **cillo**, **zuelo**, **cete**, are required with words of more than one syllable ending in *n* or *r*: —

salon-cillo, *a small parlor.*
gratificacioncita, *small gratuity.*
ladroncillo, *little pilferer.*
jovencete, *a youth* (*contempt*).
amor-cillo, *slight affection.*
autorcico, *boy-author.*
mujerzuela, *silly woman.*
Dolorcitas, *little Dolores.*

Jardin makes **jardinito** and **jardincito**, *small garden.*

764. The third forms of the diminutives, namely, **ecito** (**ecico**), **ecillo**, **ezuelo**, are to be used: —

a. With monosyllables: —

sol-ecillo, *little sun.*
flor-ecita, *little flower.*
pan-ecillo, *loaf of bread.*
fraqu-ezuelo, *dress-coat.*
red-ecilla, *net* (*for the hair*).
nuez, **nuececica**, *little walnut.*
cruz, **crucecita**, *little cross.*
pez, **pececillo**, *little fish.*

Pié makes **piececito**, *a charming little foot*; and mano, *hand*, **manita** or **manecita**.

b. With words ending in *e* or *y*: —

fraile, **frail-ecico**, *little friar.*
ave, **avecilla**, *little bird.*
alegre, **alegrecito**, *jolly.*
amable, **amablecillo**, *kind.*
viaje, **viaj-ecito**, *short trip.*
rey, **reyezuelo**, *petty sovereign.*
grande, **grandecito**, *rather tall.*
pobre, **pobrezuelo**, *sadly poor.*

But proper names in *e* are excepted: —

Pepe, **Pepito**, *Joseph.*
Felipe, **Felipico**, *Philip.*

c. With words ending in *a* or *o*, only when they have a diphthong in the stem: —

piedra, **piedrecilla**, *little stone.*
cuerpo, **cuerpezuelo**, *little body.*
ciego, **cieguecillo**, *blind.*
nuevo, **nuevecico**, *new.*
pleito, **pleitecillo**, *law-suit.*
viento, **vientecito**, *slight breeze.*
quieto, **quietecillo**, *still.*
viejo, **viejezuelo**, *old.*

Except abuelo, a, **abuelito, a**, *grandfather*, *-mother*, and perhaps others.

AUGMENTATIVES.

765. The leading augmentatives are: —

a. **On**, *fem.* **ona**, denoting large size, grotesqueness, and in general an extraordinary degree of what is contained in the primitive. Feminine nouns usually become masculine in assuming this ending, unless natural gender is indicated: —

calavera, **calaveron**, *rascal.*
ala, **alon**, *wing (of a fowl, served).*
cuchara, **cucharon**, *ladle.*
jarra, **jarron**, *large vase.*
barba, **barbon**, *thick beard.*
migaja, **migajon**, *large crumb.*
mujer-ona, *big woman.*
cigarro, **cigarron**, *big cigar.*
encuentro, **encontron**, *shock.*
pícaro, **picaron**, *great rogue.*
señor, **señoron**, *great gentleman.*
tunante, **tunanton**, *scoundrel.*
autor, **autoron**, *big author.*
valiente, **valenton**, *a brave.*

tan de **sopeton**, *so suddenly*, *unexpectedly.*

b. **Azo**, *fem.* **aza**, has a similar meaning applied according to the gender of the primitive: —

boca, **bocaza**, *big mouth.*
hereje, **herejazo**, *great heretic.*

REMARK 1. — The ending **azo** invariable, is oftenest used to represent a blow or discharge of something indicated in the primitive: —

abanico, **abanicazo,**	a blow with a fan.
baston, **bastonazo,**	a blow with a cane.
bombo, **bombazo,**	a beating of drums.
porra, **porrazo,**	a cudgelling.
navaja, **navajazo,**	a thrust with the clasp-knife.
cañon, **cañonazo,**	report of a cannon, cannon-shot.
fusil, **fusilazo,**	a rifle-shot.

REMARK 2. — The ending **ada** has a similar meaning; often a thrust with a sharp weapon: —

una **lanzada** (lanza),	thrust with a lance.
una **puñalada** (puñal),	a stab with the short dirk.
una **estocada** (estoque),	thrust with a long, thin sword.
una **andanada,**	a broadside.
dar **manotadas,**	to throw up the hands as in falling.
una **bufonada,**	a piece of buffoonery.
una **campanada,**	stroke of a bell.

c. **Ote,** *fem.* **ota,** has a depreciative sense sometimes, and others only the augmentative: —

amigo, **amigote,** *old friend.*	hereje, **herejote,** *great heretic.*
un **librote** de á folio,	an old folio volume.
rico, **ricote, ricota,**	rich and pretentious.
grandote, feote, feota,	pompous, ugly old person.

d. **Acho** and **ucho** have the more definite sense of disdain, contempt: —

el **populacho,** *the masses.* | **animalucho,** *an insect.*

una **casucha,** *a poor house.*

766. Combinations of diminutives and augmentatives are very frequent to lend an accumulative force to words. Such are: —

a. **Ito** with **ito** and **in** : —

chico, *small;* chiquito, **chiquitito, chiquitin.**
los piés **chiquirrititos,** *little mites of feet.*

b. **Illo** with **on** : —

grande, *large;* **grandillon,** *rather biggish.*

c. **Ete** with **on** : —

mozo, *lad;* mocete, **moceton,** *quite a tall lad.*
pobre, *poor;* pobrete, **pobreton,** *a poor old fellow.*

d. **Ejo** with **on** : —

calle, *street;* calleja, **callejon,** *a lane, alley.*

e. **Acho** with **uelo** : —

rio, *river;* riacho, **riachuelo,** *rivulet.*

f. **Acho** with **on** : —

bueno, *good;* bonacho, **bonachon,** *easy-going,* "*clever.*"

g. **On** with **azo** : —

pícaro, *rogue;* picaron, **picaronazo,** *piece of knavery.*
encuentro, *meeting;* encontron, **encontronazo,** *crash.*

767. Occasional forms are : —

nube; **nubarron,**	cloud; threatening cloud.
bobo; **bobarron,**	stupid; great dunce.
bobalías; **bobalicon,**	dolt; great blockhead.
lámpara; **lampion,**	lamp; large lantern.
nariz; **narigon,**	nose; big nose; big-nosed.
raiz; **raigon,**	root; snag.
vivo; **vivaracho,**	lively; sprightly.
mamarracho,	grotesque ornament, botch.
ave; **avechucho,**	bird; bird of ill-omen.
pillo; **pillastro,**	rogue; great rogue.
gente; **gentuza,**	people; rabble.
migaja (pop. *mieja*),	crumb, grain.
latin, latinajo,	Latin; Latin quotation (*humor-* [*ous*).

768. Diminutive and augmentative endings often express independent ideas: —

señora, (*married*) *lady*;	señorita, *young lady*.
paño, *cloth*;	pañuelo, *handkerchief*.
pan, *bread*;	panecillo, *loaf of bread*.
manta, *blanket*, *wrap*;	mantilla, *Spanish veil*.
azúcar, *sugar*;	azucarillo (*a confection*).
calzas, *knee-breeches*;	calzoncillos, *drawers*.
calle, *street*;	callejon, *lane*.

769. Many words have endings that are only apparently diminutive and augmentative: —

varon, *a man*, *male*.	conejo, *rabbit*.
tornillo, *screw*.	guedeja, *lock of hair*.
sencillo, *simple*, *plain*.	madeja, *skein*.
pantorrilla, *calf of the leg*.	oveja, *sheep*.
vajilla(vasilia), *plate* (*collect.*).	anzuelo, *fish-hook*.
ladrillo, *brick*.	cazuela, *skillet* (*earthen*).
bosquejo, *sketch*.	billete, *ticket*.
cotejo, *collation of a book*.	bigotes, *mustachios*.
azulejo, *Dutch tile*.	escondrijo, *lurking-place*.

escondite, *hiding-place*.

SECTION FOURTH.

DRILL-BOOK.

Pronunciation.

[The accentuated syllable that should not bear the graphic accent is here noted by a long mark placed over the vowel that has the principal stress; thus, *papēl*, but *dnimo*.]

Simple Vowels.

Ama, ala, amára, amīgo, amistād (31), almenāra, ánima, andēn, abalōrios, amapōla. Era, época, epístola, escāla, escalēra, mandadēro, embarcadēro, sombrero, sombrerēro, es, está, escuēla, eslabōn, alfilēr, elemento, elefānte, ébano, inglés, cordobés. Libro, fila, tira, timbre, tinta, cortīna, triste, visīta (40), baladí, papelīto, tilīn, bailarīn, motīn. Olōr, opāco, reló, autōr, mediadōr, corredōr, con (never *kŏn*), conmīgo, contento, confiādo, consonānte, narigōn, pasiōn. Pluma, uso, ustēd, gusto, busto, susto, busca, bulto, duda, burla, gula, nulo, único, ambigú, abuso, adulaciōn (28).

Diphthongs.

Āire, airōso (40), bāile, caigo, traigo, fraile, vaivēn, maitīnes. Āuto, aula, bautīsmo, āun (*even*), caudāl, caudalōso, raudāl (39), autōr, fautōr, auditōrio. Aureo, áurea, empíreo, línea. Pēine, vēinte, treinta, afeite, deleite, aceite (28), reino, reinādo, ley, rey. Fēudo, neutro, deudo, leudo, Euro, Eurōpa. Fēria, āmplio, āmplia, līmpio, līmpia, nimio, nimia, indio, india, vicio, ciēncia, servicio, paciēncia, codīcia, albrīcias.

Hiēlo, griēta, nieto, viene, consiente, doliente, teniente, biēn, tambiēn, siēnes, bienes, siempre, tiēntan, siēnten, viēntos. Cīudadāno, vīudo; cōima, ōigo, estóico, heróico. Cuāndo, cuanto, guārdia, agua, estátua, contínua. Fuēgo, duelo, vuelo, suelo, fuero, agüēro, nuevo, muero, trueno, grueso. Cuīdadōso, ruidōso, arruinado, huiréis; ambíguo, tortuōso, virtuoso.

Improper Diphthongs.

Cāe, trāe, caīda, traīdo, caí; baūl, ataūd *or* atahūd, aūn (*yet, still*); galantēa, alancēa, hebrēa, marēa; crēe, lēe, alancēe, galantēe; reí, creīmos, creīdo, leīdo; torēo, hebrēo, licēo, galantēo; galería, alegría, tropelía, tontería, hería, comíamos, vivían; rie, avíe; rio, varío; oīdo, oīd; huīda, imbuīdo; continúa, falúa.

Consonants.

Biēnes, viēnes, bota, voto, bebe, vive, bata, vate, tubo, tuvo, bacía, vacía, balīdo, valīdo, barōn, varōn, hombre, nombre, bribōn. Casa, caldo, caridād; queso, quema, querella, palenque, alcornōque, albaricōque; quiēn, quiso, quieto, química, alquīla, tranquīlo; cosīta, coro, corōna; curioso, cubo, alcuza; escuálido, cuantioso, cuasi; cuestiōn, cuela, cuero, Cuenca; cuita, cuidādo; cuōta, inícuo. Muchacho, leche, Elche, noche; cuchillo, chico, marchito; ocho, ducho, chorro, dicho, ricachōn, cachorro; chucho, higo-chumbo, chulo, chusma.

Gato, galgo, ganga; guerra, sigue, albergue, droguería, guedēja, Águeda; guia, guiōn, guitarra, erguido, águila, guisāntes, seguía, borceguí; hidalgo, gozo, hago, sirgo, higo, consīgo; gula, gusto, argūyo, regulār. Guapo, guarīda, āgua, frāgua, averīgua; frāgüe, desāgüe, averīgüe, antigüedād; argüir; antiguo, averīguo, santīguo. Hallazgo, ahora, habēis, halagüeño, tahūr, desahūcio, haba, héroe, hilo, horadado, hule, huso. Jāula, alhāja, baraja, jalēo; mujēr, generāl, ajeno, rige, aflige, gesto, genio, ingenio; giro, gitano, dijīste, registro; tasajo, atajo, trabajo, influjo, trujo; juzgo, enjuto, jura; Juān, enjuāgue; juego, majuelo, tejuelo, juēz; juicio.

Halla, batalla, llama, llanto; calle, valle, Ballēcas, calleja; allí, cepillīto; huello, murmullo, grulla, orgullo; llūvia, velludo. Niña, riña, seña, viña, engaña; enseñe, engañe; reñīr, ceñīr, teñido; señōr, engaño, año, baño, daño; sañudo, ñudo. Vara, toro, moro; hablār, comēr, decīr, llegār, placēr, dolōr; arte, tarde, hurto, guārdia; rota, rueda, ruego, rasgo. rindo; chorro, torre, burra, ahorrār; enredo, es regulār, irregulār, corro. Santo, eso, pasa, pasado, lloroso, odioso, Toboso, cosa, musa. Yema, yedra, yeso, yugo, tuyo, suyo, argūyo. Raza, taza, caza, haz, felīz, deslīz; hice, cena, dice, alanceār; cita, civīl, ciudad, lícito; mozo, gozo, zozobra; panzūdo, zumbār, azūl, azucēna.

Faccioso, colecciōn, diccionārio, accionista. Desdicha, dardo, humilde, muerdo, ardiēndo; dedo, hablado, arbolēda, comida, soldado, embudo, greda; maldād, caridād, verdād, hablād, comēd, ustēd, mercēd, red, ved, acudīd, Madrīd, sacudīd, ardīd, virtūd, ataūd, almūd; odre, pudrīr, vendrá, tendrá, albedrío. Inmenso, inmortāl, inmarcesīble. Sexo, exacto, máxime, próximo, exhortār, exultār. Naranja, lisonja, gengibre.

Geographical Names.

Álava, Albacēte, Alcalá, Alcántara, Alcázar, Almería, Álora, Alsásua, Aranjuēz, Arévalo, Ávila. Badajōz, Barcelona, Baztān, Beasoāin, Būrgos. Castillējos, Cēuta, Ciudādreāl, Cuenca. Darincharinēa. Elizondo, Escoriāl. Fuenterrabía. Gijōn, Granada, Granja, Guadalajāra, Guadalaviār, Guadalhōrce, Guadalquivīr, Guipúzcoa. Hellīn. Irūn, Jabalquinto, Jaēn, Játiva, Jerēz. Medellīn, Menjíbar, Mérida, Montilla, Mūrcia. Pamplona. Quintanapalla. Santandēr, Santipōnce, Sevilla, Socuéllamos. Tánjer, Teruēl, Trujillo. Valencia, Valladolīd, Villalba, Vitōria, Vizcāya. Zaragōza.

Proper Adjectives.

Asturiāno, Valenciāno, Murciāno, Guipuzcoāno, Toledano, Sevillano, Jerezano, Gaditano, Vallisoletano, Zaragozano, Castellano; Alicantīno, Granadīno, Vizcaīno, Alcalaīno, Bilbaīno; Madrilēño, Estremeño, Malagueño; Matritense, Conquense, Tudense, Vascuence; Catalān, Alemān; Gallēgo, Manchēgo; Alavés, Aragonés, Leonés, Cartaginés, Cordobés, Tudés, Francés, Inglés, Irlandés, Escocés; Navarro; Españōl, Andalūz, Flamenco, Maragāto.

Family Names.

Álvaro, Álvarez, Arderíus, Benítez, Bermúdez, Carvajāl, Cervántes, Díaz, Díez, Domínguez, Eguílaz, Estébanez, Fernández, García, Garcés, Gómez, González, Gutiérrez, Hervás, Ibáñez, Íñigo, Íñiguez, Jiménez, Loáisa, Núñez, Pérez, Ramírez, Rodríguez, Sánchez, Sanchíz, Téllez, Velásquez.

FIRST SERIES.

Essentials of Form and Inflection.

[The words will be found in the vocabulary at the end of the book. Words in parentheses are to be expressed in Spanish. Hyphens connect English terms which are to be given in Spanish by one word. The small figures at the top of the line indicate the order of the words in Spanish. Words to be left untranslated are placed between brackets.]

Exercise First.

Learn and Recite §§ 79, 81, 82, 84, 85, 101–104, 107–110.

1. The friend of the king, *or* the king's friend. 2. The queen's room. 3. The captain's ships. 4. The boy's pens. 5. The estates of the gentlemen, *or* the gentlemen's estates. 6. The ladies' presents. 7. The leaves of the trees. 8. The palaces of the king-and-queen (106). 9. The houses of the prince-and-princess. 10. The master-and-mistress of the servants.

11. A tree of the garden. 12. A door of the house. 13. The verdict of a judge. 14. The counsels of a mother. 15. The water of the sea. 16. The child's hunger. 17. The stir of a town. 18. The girl's needle. 19. The birds of the air (Span. *sky*). 20. The flight of the eagle.

21. The joy of the house. 22. The judge speaks to the prisoner. 23. The captain gives (to) the sailor the command of a vessel. 24. The lady lends a book to the girl. 25. A gentleman gave money to the errand-boys. 26. The queen gave the jewels to the ladies. 27. The souls of (the) men. 28. The laws of the commonwealth. 29. The crosses of the generals. 30. The servants of the judges.

31. (The) trees have leaves. 32. (The) vessels have sails. 33. Charles has money. 34. Agnes has sisters. 35. Lewis' father has houses and lands. 36. A town has streets. 37. A house has doors and windows. 38. A man has friends and enemies. 39. (The) nations have government and laws. 40. (The) wild boars live in the mountains. 41. The ministers wear crosses. 42. (The) partridges and quails live in the woods.

Exercise Second.

Learn and Recite §§ 112–118.

1. The rose is a beautiful flower. 2. (The) roses are beautiful flowers. 3. The garden has high[2] walls.[1] 4. (The) benevolent[2] ladies[1] are always beautiful. 5. The water is (*está*) cool; it-comes from a living[2] spring.[1] 6. My friend lives in a white[2] house.[1] 7. The Spanish language is rich and harmonious. 8. The [ladies] of-Cadiz are beautiful. 9. The boys and girls have roguish[2] eyes.[1] 10. The streets of the city are broad.

11. The German[2] literature[1] is modern, the Castilian is ancient. 12. (The) wise[2] men[1] are good companions. 13. The French[2] rail-ways[1] are (*están*) well made. 14. (The) Spanish[2] laws[1] are very ancient. 15. (The) Andalusian[2] customs[1] are very graceful and picturesque. 16. The houses in Spain are generally low, but spacious. 17. Madrid has the characteristics of a French[2] town.[1] 18. The men wear tall[2] hats,[1] and the young-men caps of curious[2] shape.[1]

19. You will-find English[2] and French[3] goods[1] in the Spanish[2] shops.[1] 20. A good memory is necessary in-order-to learn a language. 21. The Andalusian[2] wit-and-humor[1] is known everywhere. 22. The young-man directed treacherous[2] glances[1] toward his opponent. 23. The highland-women of Spain serve as (*de*) nurses in the capital. 24. They wear tall[2] head-dresses[1] and picturesque[2] costumes[1] with much jewelry and bright[2] colors.[1] 25. Charles gave (to) his sister a new[2] book[1] illustrated with many engravings.

Exercise Third.

Learn and Recite §§ 119–122.

1. An easy[2] lesson.[1] 2. Spain has many religious[2] festivals,[1] and few national [ones]. 3. (The) parents are faithful[2] friends.[1] 4. We spent many happy[2] hours[1] at (*en*) his house. 5. (The) rainy days are dull, but useful. 6. There-are noble[2] men[1] and vile[2] men.[1] 7. A common[2] interest[1] unites[2] them.[1] 8. Agnes gave (to) her sister a blue[2] ribbon.[1] 9. (The) young-men are capable of doing (to do) many things which are impossible to the old. 10. The customs of-Morocco are very different from those (*las*)

of-Europe. 11. All his remarks were courteous. 12. Spain is a wine-growing[2] country.[1]

13. (The) Spanish[2] villages[1] generally[2] have[1] one broad[2] street.[1] 14. A large[2] house[1] has many rooms of different sizes. 15. A palace has public[2] and private[3] apartments.[1] 16. The sweet[2] orange[1] is for Mary, and the sour[2] lemon[1] is for John. 17. The gentlemen understand many different languages. 18. The official[2] buildings[1] of a capital where[1] the government[3] resides[2] are usually large and magnificent. 19. The Catalonian[2] manufacturers[1] furnish all Spain with (*de*) common[2] fabrics.[1] 20. All (the) wars are serious, and are contrary to the spirit of (the) Christianity.

Exercise Fourth.

Learn and Recite §§ 123–127.

1. A good man always has good friends. 2. Lewis wants a good pen, the-one that (*la que*) he has is poor. 3. (The) good books are good companions, and much more convenient than (the) living [ones]. 4. One bad[2] boy[1] can do much harm. 5. This[5] has[3] been[4] [a] bad[1] year[2] for the farmers. 6. One bad thought may engender a bad habit. 7. A poor book is [a] poor companion. 8. The bad[2] boys[1] cherish bad designs. 9. The last moment of (the) life. 10. The last day of the fair. 11. The first month of-the year. 12. My friend lives in the first white[2] house[1] on the right. 13. In the three first centuries the Latin[2] language[1] was spoken (*fem.*) over all Spain. 14. The campaign began in the third month of-the third year of the emperor's reign.

15. The third man. 16. The third week. 17. The first and third row. 18. One book read with care is-worth more than many read (*m. pl.*) carelessly. 19. One day a friend[2] came[1] to our house. 20. One week has seven days. 21. Some day we-shall-go to Spain. 22. Some time after he-read the newspaper. 23. I-saw the (§ 76) man some weeks before. 24. Some oranges are sour. 25. No occasion is better than the present (*fem.*). 26. No day is free from cares. 27. No friends are so faithful as those (the) of our own household. 28. A great danger threatened[2] him.[1] 29. In a great house there-are many servants. 30. A great man has many friends. 31. A great general is often [a] guarantee of (the) peace.

32. The blow may fall any day. 33. Better is no book than any book. 34. The father gave (to) his son [one] hundred dollars. 35. I-saw [one] hundred soldiers drawn-up in the public-square. 36. [One] hundred and one is [an] odd[2] number.[1]

Exercise Fifth.

Learn and Recite §§ 128–131.

1. He-brings an important piece-of-news. 2. He-is an influential man. 3. The parable of-the prodigal son. 4. The poem of (the) Paradise Lost. 5. The young-man's threatening looks. 6. The measures of (the) foreign governments. 7. The iron-clad ships of the French and English (§ 655). 8. Madrid society (the society of-Madrid) is gay in (the) winter. 9. He-speaks the Spanish language. 10. Cabrera was [a] Carlist chieftain. 11. Espartero was the principal general of the Constitutional party.

12. The definite decision of-the government. 13. The innocent lambs. 14. (The) entangling alliances. 15. The producing classes. 16. The active and passive service, that is, the employed and pensioned officers. 17. The second and third chapters. 18. (The) books first and fifth. 19. He-gives good advice (*pl.*). 20. He-undergoes a just[2] punishment.[1] 21. He-writes with a bad pen. 22. He-leads (*lleva*) a bad life. 23. In (the) ancient times the selectmen represented (*representaban*) the (*al*) third estate, that is to say (*it-is to say*), the (*al*) people. 24. He-has a great defect, which (*que*) is almost a vice. 25. My father has a large house. 26. The doctor lives in the new street. 27. The poor man has the sympathies of all (the) charitable persons. 28. He-placed several volumes on the table. 29. I-found that poem in a volume of miscellaneous papers. 30. The messenger brought reliable news (*pl.*).

Exercise Sixth.

Learn and Recite §§ 132–139.

1. The building is as large as a palace. 2. The window is as high as the ceiling. 3. The toys are as amusing as the books. 4. The pens are as poor as the paper and the ink. 5. The women are as tall as the men. 6. The house is as white as (the) snow. 7. John is as small as his brother. 8. Agnes is as gentle as a lamb.

9. The merchant is as rich as the banker. 10. The paper is[2] not[1] so fine as the envelopes. 11. The house is not so large as the palace. 12. The streets of Toledo are not so broad as those (the) of Madrid.

13. Paul has as-much courage as Peter. 14. Mary has as-much diligence as her sister. 15. The boys have as-many projects as the men. 16. The tables have as-many legs as the chairs. 17. Julia has as-many pens as her friend Louisa. 18. The merchant has[2] not[1] so-much money as the banker. 19. The horse has not so-much patience as the ox. 20. John has not so-many friends as Peter. 21. The farmer has not so-many houses as the judge. 22. The cat is not so useful as the dog.

23. The horse is more useful than the ox. 24. (The) gold and (the) silver are more precious (684) than (the) iron or (the) lead. 25. The houses of-the king are more spacious than those (the) of (the) citizens. 26. The merchants are richer than the scholars. 27. The wise are happier than the ignorant. 28. The tables are taller than the chairs. 29. John is less amiable than his sister. 30. The laborer has fewer books than the mechanic. 31. The farmer has less money than the shop-keeper, but *he-is* more contented than the-latter (éste). 32. We-have more than (§ 137, *b*) [one] hundred acquaintances in this town. 33. The royal palace is larger than any (125) of the houses in (of) the capital. 34. It-is difficult to say which is (*sea*) better, (the) riches or (the) wisdom; both are-important to the state and to (the) society.

Exercise Seventh.

Learn and Recite §§ 140–148.

1. The count's palace is the largest[2] building[1] in (147) the city. 2. This is the widest[2] street[1] in the capital. 3. He-gave the wisest[2] counsel[1] of all. 4. He-is the best friend (that) I have. 5. A dulled conscience is our worst enemy. 6. He-took the smallest[2] coin[1] that *I* had (*tenía*). 7. The wisest [men] err sometimes. 8. The loveliest[2] women[1] are[2] not[1] always the most beautiful. 9. The best schools in (the) town are the public [ones]. 10. The most entertaining[2] books[1] for (the) children are those (the) which have pictures. 11. He-gave[2] me[1] [some] of his poorest (*peores*) pens. 12. The fleece of the lamb was of the whitest[2] color.[1]

13. The justest judgments are always the wisest. 14. The shortest[2] road[1] is[2] not[1] always the best. 15. (The) Spanish proverbs are full of the profoundest[2] truths.[1] 16. The earliest collection is of-the marquis of Santillana. 17. The Broad[2] Street[1] of St. Bernard is one of the longest *in* the Spanish capital. 18. The street of Alcalá is the most beautiful *in* Madrid. 19. The Gate of the Sun is the most spacious[2] square[1] *in* that town. 20. The[1] shortest[6] street,[2] or[3] rather[4] lane,[5] is that (the) of Seville. 21. The city of Cadiz is the most ancient *in* Europe. 22. Seen (*fem.*) from the sea, it-appears [to be] a mass of [the] whitest clouds (*superl. abs.*).

Exercise Eighth.

Learn and Recite §§ 149–159.

1. The day is very fine. 2. The night was (*estuvo*) very dark. 3. He-is a most[2] congenial[3] person[1] (with *muy*). 4. His arrival was most-timely (in-*ísimo*). 5. The benches are very-low (or *very low*). 6. The review *was* most-brilliant. 7. We-have very-many friends in this town. 8. There-is very-much fruit this year. 9. The houses of Cadiz are very-white. 10. The Phœnicians were a very-ancient people (151). 11. This is a most-beautiful bird. 12. The boy is exceedingly diligent. 13. The ring is of [the] finest[2] gold[1] (*absol.*). 14. The lecture was (*estuvo*) very-well-attended.

15. He-is a very-learned[2] man.[1] 16. His manners were very-mild. 17. Some of the streets of London are very-long. 18. His conduct was (*fué*) most-shocking. 19. The occasion was most-happy. 20. Last-night occurred a most-shocking[2] attempt[1] against the king's life. 21. This afternoon the attendance at the Córtes *was* very-slim. 22. The way is very-long and the night very dark. 23. The countess is a very-amiable lady. 24. Our neighbor's father-and-mother are very-old. 25. The envelopes are very-poor. 26. The question is [a] very-difficult [one]. 27. The news is quite certain.

28. The dog is a very-faithful[2] friend.[1] 29. It-was a very-devout action (reg. of *piadoso*). 30. The inside room is more quiet than the front [one]. 31. This gentleman is my most intimate friend. 32. He-is quite young, but he-has considerable experience. 33. He

has a very[2] pretty[3] *hotel*[1] on the "Castellana."* 34. He-is very [much of a] gentleman.

Exercise Ninth.

Learn and Recite §§ 160-165.

1. Two men and three boys. 2. Four books and five pencils. 3. Seven churches and six schools. 4. Nine windows and eight doors. 5. Ten oranges and twelve pears. 6. Eighteen ships and three-hundred men. 7. Fifteen trees and thirteen statues. 8. Twenty horses and fifty sheep. 9. Five-hundred houses and twelve thousand residents. 10. Ninety-nine cents and nine mills.

11. Eight and six are fourteen. 12. A year has twelve months. 13. A month has thirty or thirty-one days. 14. A year has three-hundred [and] sixty-five days. 15. A Spanish real is-worth about five cents, and a Cuban [one] ten cents. 16. There-are nineteen ships and twenty-six steamers in the port. 17. A set of twelve chairs, two sofas, and three or four easy-chairs form a *silleria*. 18. The permanent[2] army[1] of Spain in time of peace consists of more *than* seventy-five thousand men. 19. They-have fifty thousand men in the Basque provinces since the peace of 1876. 20. The year (of) 1492 was [a] very notable [one]. 21. The capture of Constantinople in the year (of) 1453 was coetaneous with the invention of (the) printing in Europe.

Exercise Tenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 166, 168–170.

1. The first day of the week. 2. The second month of the year. 3. The third Saturday of the month. 4. Three is the fourth part of twelve. 5. The seventh exercise is easier than the eighth. 6. The first lessons of a new language are more difficult than the last. 7. The second half of the nineteenth[2] century.[1] 8. The twenty-third[2] chapter[1] of the book. 9. The thirtieth[2] volume[1] of the history of Spain.

10. The Arabs entered (into) Spain in the eighth century. 11. Alfonso the Tenth was a wise and enlightened king. 12. A

* The name of a fashionable drive in Madrid, the extension of the *Prado* and *Recoletos*.

Spanish real is the twentieth part of a dollar. 13. He-spends one (the) half of his time in the streets. 14. He-lost three fourths (the three quarter parts) of his income. 15. Nine tenths of them were favorable to the project. 16. He-gave (to) his son one fifteenth (the fifteenth part) of his receipts. 17. (The) four fifths of the soldiers were raw-recruits.

18. The servant bought a quarter of flour, a quarter of wine, a little beef, and [some] lettuce for the salad. 19. The farmer gave (to) the parish-priest his tithe of wheat. 20. Last-night the conscripts disturbed the neighborhood with their shouts and songs. 21. At the introduction of printing into Spain at the close (*á últimos*) of the fifteenth[2] century,[1] all (the) books were printed in folio or in quarto. 22. (The) ancient[2] Spanish[3] books[1] in 8vo are usually of the size of our books in 16mo, or smaller still.

Exercise Eleventh.

Learn and Recite §§ 171–175.

1. Five and three are* eight and ten are eighteen, and seven are twenty-five. 2. Three times nine are twenty-seven. 3. Four times eight are thirty-two. 4. Twelve times twelve [are a] hundred and forty-four. 5. Twice thirteen are twenty-six and nine are thirty-five. 6. A day and [a] half. 7. An hour and [a] quarter. 8. He-gave one (the) half of his goods to the poor. 9. He-worked half [a] day. 10. He-will-wait half [an] hour.

11. I-spent a couple of days in the country. 12. He-bought half [a] dozen (of) oranges. 13. He sold a dozen and [a] half (of) boxes of raisins. 14. He-has a score of acquaintances. 15. He-lived there a score-and-a-half of years. 16. He spoke once or twice (two). 17. He-plays sometimes. 18. (The) children cry many times *or* often. 19. (The) thoughtful[2] men[1] jest seldom. 20. Some (*unas*) times he-wrote, other [times] he-read.

21. He-plays every day. 22. He-goes to the country twice a (*al*) year. 23. He-writes every month. 24. He-visits (to) his parents every two months. 25. He attends (to) the church every week. 26. He studies (at) every moment; he-is very diligent. 27. Every three months I-go to (the) town.

---

* *Are* is usually omitted in ordinary calculations.

28. $6 + 3 + 9 - 8 = 10$. 29. $\frac{5}{8}$ and $\frac{3}{15}$ are how-many? 30. In a couple of hours he-will-be here. 31. I have visited the palace of the Alhambra a score of times. 32. Sometimes he-comes in (*por*) the morning, and others in (*por*) the afternoon. 33. Every day I write three or four letters. 34. Every time that I-see[2] him[1] he-pleases[2] me[1] less.

Exercise Twelfth.

Learn and Recite p. 90; *Read* pp. 91–93; and *Learn* Pres. Ind. of § 536, p. 254.

tengo, *or* yo tengo	*I have.*	¿tengo yo? *or* ¿tengo?	*have I?*
V. tiene, *or* tiene V.	*you have.*	¿tiene V.? *or* ¿V. tiene?	*have you?*
no tengo, *or* yo no tengo	*I have not,* or *I have no.*	¿no tengo yo? *or* ¿no tengo?	*have I not?* or *have I no?*
V. no tiene, *or* no tiene V.	*you have not,* or *you have no.*	¿no tiene V.? *or* ¿V. no tiene?	*have you not?* or *have you no?*

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

1. I have a book and a pencil. 2. Thou hast more knives than I. 3. He has many houses, and she has many [lady] friends. 4. You have fewer oranges than I. 5. I have better presents than you. 6. We boys (189, *a*) have more time than you girls. 7. Agnes' sisters have prettier dresses than she. 8. They have also bracelets and necklaces. 9. Mary and Jane have rings; we have no ornaments. 10. Charles and Peter have no rings. 11. John has new[2] shoes[1] and a new[2] hat.[1] 12. Ye (*2d pl.*) have a good father and a good mother. 13. Children, have ye no toys? 14. Peter and Manuel have a top and a drum; but they haven't [any] hoops.

15. We have good friends; they have no friends. 16. Have you no needles, Julia? 17. What have we? 18. You have kind[2] parents and relatives.[1] 19. Has[2] the poor boy[3] no[1] kite[4]? 20. Have[1] the boys[3] [any] friends[2]? 21. What have you (*pl.*)? 22. We have a ball and a hoop. 23. Who has my brother's slate? 24. We have his slate. 25. You have my sister's paper and pens.

26. Have I a pen? 27. You have not [an] inkstand. 28. Have you a sister? 29. We have cousins, but we have not [an] uncle and [an] aunt (§ 106). 30. Have we no paper? 31. Have[2] the children[3] no[1] toys[4]? 32. Have they [any] letters? 33. Hast thou a pencil and a rule? 34. Here is (have you) a pencil, but I have no rule.

Exercise Thirteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 184–186, 205, and Pres. Ind. of § 362, p. 171.

le hablo, *or* yo le hablo	*I speak to* { *him.* *her.*	¿lo hallo yo? ¿lo hallo?	*do I find it?*
V. le habla le habla V.	*you speak to* { *him.* *her.*	¿lo halla V.? ¿V. lo halla?	*do you find it?*
no le hablo, *or* yo no le hablo	*I do not speak to* { *him.* *her.*	¿no lo hallo yo? ¿no lo hallo?	*do I not find it?*
V. no le habla no le habla V.	*you do not speak to* { *him.* *her.*	¿no lo halla V.? ¿V. no lo halla?	*do you not find it?*

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

Like **hablar**, conjugate: **buscar**, *to look for, to seek;* **hallar**, *to find;* **alabar**, *to praise;* **engañar**, *to deceive.*

1. I-am-looking-for something (379). 2. What are-you-looking-for? 3. I-am-looking-for a needle, but I do not find it (*fem.*). 4. Do you not find it? 5. You deceive yourself (398), you have it in your (the) hand. 6. Does he speak to thee? 7. He does not speak to me. 8. You deceive him. 9. *I* do not deceive *him; he* deceives *me* (*pleon.*, 185). 10. We praise them because they are (*son*) diligent. 11. Do they praise us? 12. Do they praise *us?* 13. Do *they*[3] praise[2] us[1]? 14. You deceive yourself. 15. You deceive yourselves. 16. They find what (*lo que*) they-are-looking-for. 17. Do you find what [you] are-looking-for (218)? 18. We do not find what we-are-looking-for.

19. The boys deceive themselves (176, *a*). 20. Do the boys[3] deceive[2] themselves[1]? 21. Does he not speak to us? 22. [He] speaks *to them*, not[3] to[1] us.[2] 23. Why does he not speak to us? 24. Because we do not praise him. 25. Does *he* praise us? 26. He does not praise us, he deceives us. 27. Have you the boy's top?

28. I haven't it, his brother has it. 29. Who has Jane's bracelet? 30. Her sister has it. 31. She is-looking-for it everywhere. 32. Her sister deceives her. 33. Do (the) brothers-and-sisters[3] deceive[2] each-other[1]? 34. They praise each-other, but they do not deceive each-other.

Exercise Fourteenth.

Read pp. 96–105; *Learn and Recite* §§ 217–224, and Pres. Ind. of §§ 363, 364.

Like **comer**, conjugate: **aprender**, *to learn;* **le-er**, *to read;* **temer**, *to fear, to be afraid of.*

Like **vivir**, conjugate: **escribir**, *to write;* **cumplir con**, *to fulfil, to discharge* (a duty, *etc.*); **permitir**, *to allow, permit.*

1. Are you learning a new language? 2. What are you reading? 3. Are you not afraid to talk to him (*con él*).* 4. I do not fear him. 5. He is reading the newspaper. 6. Where do you live? 7. Are you writing a letter? 8. At what o'clock do you dine? 9. [We] usually[1] dine[2] late. 10. We discharge (*con*) our obligations as well as (the) time[3] and (the) strength[4] permit[2] (*it to-us*[1]). 11. Do you allow it? 12. I do not allow it. 13. We have a house in the country, and we live there during the summer.

14. In the winter they live in the city, because the weather does not permit (to) them to live in the country. 15. I am writing a letter to my cousin who (*que*) lives at (in) Rome. 16. The children do not allow us to write; they are learning to (*á*) read with their blocks of wood. 17. If you discharge your duties faithfully up-to the measure of your capacity, you will have (*tendrá*) your reward.

18. We do not live (in-order) to eat, but (*sino*) we eat in-order-to live. 19. We are reading in a most amusing book. 20. You are writing with a pencil, and I am writing with a pen. 21. My brother writes more than (*de*) fifteen letters a (*al*) day. 22. The weather does not allow us to go-out. 23. The good do not fear their fellow-men (§ 76). 24. He does not allow me to write with his pen.

---

* **Hablar** followed by the dative signifies *to address* a person, *to speak* to him; *to talk with* a person, involving conversation, is **hablar** *con* **una persona.**

Exercise Fifteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 233–238, and Pres. Ind. of §§ 539, 543.

1. He gives it to me. 2. He says it to him. 3. He writes them (*fem.* and *m.*) to us. 4. They permit him to (it to him). 5. I tell you; I tell it to you; I tell it to you (*pleon.*). 6. I give you; I give it to you; I give it to you (*pleon.*). 7. John has three oranges and he-gives[3] them[2] all[4] to-me.[1] 8. The children give us their play-things; they give them to us. 9. Agnes has a story, and she is reading it to us.

10. The old-people (*ancianos*) have a letter from their children, and a lady is reading it to them. 11. The boys and girls are looking-for their toys, but their parents do not allow them to (it to them). 12. If I find them, I [shall] give them to you. 13. They tell it to them. 14. They give them to them. 15. I do not say so (it) to him. 16. We do not say so to them.

Exercise Sixteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 243–254, and the past definite of **hablar, comer,** and **vivir** (pp. 171, 175, 178).

1. My father spoke to him. 2. My brothers found a treasure. 3. Thy friend deceived us. 4. His servants feared his anger. 5. Your friends praised the artist (§ 76). 6. Their pens were (*fueron*) poor. 7. He did not learn his exercises. 8. They did not look-for their money. 9. Did you not fear (the) punishment? 10. He fulfilled his duties.

11. They allowed us to see our (§ 76) friends. 12. We did not write our letters. 13. You did not learn your lessons. 14. Did I not praise (§ 76) my teachers? 15. They deceived their friends. 16. Didst thou find thy knife, my son? 17. A friend of mine found it, and gave (*dió*) it to me. 18. Did you write the letter to your uncle? 19. John did not allow me to (it to me). 20. Did you speak to me? 21. Who allowed them to go-out? 22. We did not deceive you. 23. Where did they dine last-night? 24. We lived in his house many years.

Exercise Seventeenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 254–258, and the past indefinite indic. of **hablar, comer,** and **vivir** (pp. 173, 176, 180).

The past participle of **escribir** is *escrito* (§ 561).

1. Have you found your book? 2. I have not found mine, but I have found my sister's (*the* of). 3. My friend and yours. 4. Thy house and mine. 5. His pictures and ours. 6. Their parents and mine. 7. My sister and thine. 8. Our cousins and yours. 9. Your houses and ours. 10. Their hats and mine.

11. I have spoken to my friend, but not to yours. 12. Thou hast not deceived (§ 76) thy friend, but (*sino*) mine. 13. He has not found my slate, but his-own. 14. We have written letters to our parents and to his. 15. You have looked-for your paper, and not [for] ours. 16. They have feared my anger, and not thine. 17. I have read their letters and yours.

Exercise Eighteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 259–269, and the imperative of the three conjugations.

SINGULAR.

háblale (familiar) háblele V. (polite) } *speak to him.*	no le hables (fam.) no le hable V. (pol.) } *do not speak to him.*

PLURAL.

hablémosle, *let us speak to him.* hablādle (fam.) háblenle VV. (pol.) } *speak to him.*	no le hablemos, *let us not speak to him.* no le hableis (fam.) no le hablen VV. (pol.) } *do not speak to him.*

SINGULAR.

cómelo (fam.) cómalo V. (pol.) } *eat it.*	no lo comas (fam.) no lo coma V. (pol.) } *do not eat it.*

PLURAL.

comámoslo, *let us eat it.* comēdlo (fam.) cómanlo VV. (pol.) } *eat it.*	no lo comamos, *let us not eat it.* no lo comais (fam.) no lo coman VV. (pol.) } *do not eat it.*

The third conjugation take *-īd* instead of *-ēd*, otherwise the same as the second, — **vivīd, vivan VV.**, *etc.*

1. Speak to this man (fam. and pol.). 2. Speak to him. 3. Permit (to) this lady. 4. Permit (to) her. 5. Praise these boys (§ 76). 6. Praise them. 7. Read this letter; read it. 8. Read these letters; read them. 9. Fear this punishment; fear it. 10. Fear these penalties; fear them.

11. Do not speak to that man; do not speak to him. 12. Do not praise that girl; do not praise her. 13. Do not deceive (§ 76) these gentlemen; do not deceive them. 14. Do not learn those lessons; do not learn them. 15. Do not write that letter so badly. 16. Do not write it so badly. 17. Do not look-for (§ 371) those books; do not look-for them.

18. Let us speak to these gentlemen. 19. Let us not deceive these children. 20. Let us not fear them. 21. Let us praise them. 22. Let us not live in this house. 23. Let us fear God (§ 76), and keep his commandments. 24. Let us not deceive our (§ 76) parents, because they are (*son*) our best friends. 25. Let us live in peace with all (the) men. 26. Let us not live (in-order-) to eat, but (*sino*) let us eat (in-order-) to live.

Exercise Nineteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 271–276, and the present indicative of **ser** and **estar** (pp. 190, 193).

ser is absolute being; **estar**, accidental being or state.

1. This is the boy who lives in my house. 2. These are the persons who deceive (§ 76) their friends. 3. The book which I have read *is* on the table. 4. The inkstands which I have bought are not good. 5. The papers of which I spoke *are* in the table-drawer. 6. The ladies whom I seek *are* not here. 7. The friends with whom I live wrote me a long[2] letter.[1] 8. The boys to whom I read the exercise are diligent.

9. The days on (in) which he writes are (the) Tuesdays and Fridays. 10. The books of which he speaks are[2] unknown to-me.[1] 11. The rule with which he makes the lines belongs to (is of) my brother. 12. The exercises that we write are more difficult to-day than those (the) of yesterday. 13. You are my friend. 14. *Are* you tired? 15. Where *is* the inkstand? 16. Do you know (*sabe V.*)

where[1] my pens *are*[2]? 17. I have not seen them. 18. I am the person (whom) you deceived. 19. We are the artists whom they praised. 20. Thou art the boy to whom I spoke yesterday.

Exercise Twentieth.

Learn and Recite §§ 277–282, and the past def. of **estar** and **ser.**

1. The table near which he *was*. 2. The balcony from which he spoke to-me. 3. The charge with which he honored me. 4. The judge before whom he *stood*. 5. The books about which they deceived us. 6. The conditions on (*bajo*) which they wrote. 7. The limits beyond which he did not wish (*quiso*) to go. 8. The measures against which we spoke. 9. The individuals among whom we *were*. 10. The city toward which he-was-going (*iba*). 11. The roofs upon which the birds[2] alighted.[1]

12. He says what he thinks. 13. He writes what he wishes. 14. I praise what pleases me. 15. They find what they seek. 16. They fulfil what they promise. 17. They read what they find. 18. We eat what we like (pleases us). 19. We praise what we read. 20. We know what we write. 21. He finds all that he looks-for. 22. He praises all that *I* do (*hago*). 23. He does not fulfil all that he promises. 24. He does not praise all that you do (*hace*). 25. He allows me to do all that I like (*quiero*).

Exercise Twenty-First.

Learn and Recite §§ 284–287, and the imperfect indicative of **estar, ser, hablar, comer,** and **vivir.**

1. That is the gentleman in whose house *I* was-living. 2. The young-man whose father *is* ill was-looking-for a physician. 3. This is the teacher (*á*) whose scholars we-were-praising so-much. 4. *He* is the-one-who was-writing when we-came-in. 5. *She* is the-one who found what we-were-looking-for. 6. You are the one who deceived us about what we-were-asking. 7. They are the ones who were-reading while we were-speaking to them.

8. He who seeks finds, and he who asks receives. 9. Those who study, learn. 10. They do not praise him who deceives (*Al que engaña no le alaban*). 11. They do not always believe him who

praises. 12. Him who fears they do not honor (him). 13. Him who discharges his duties they honor. 14. He who wrote the letter which we have received lives in London. 15. They who deserve rewards are those who have written[1] their exercises well.[2] 16. She who deceived her sister is worthy of blame.

Exercise Twenty-Second.

Learn and Recite §§ 288–292, and the future indicative of **hablar, comer, vivir, estar,** and **ser.**

1. Who is-looking-for a book? 2. Whose pen is this? 3. Whose toys are these that *are* [lying] on the floor? 4. Whom will-you-deceive? 5. What will he fear? 6. Whom will-they-praise? 7. What shall I learn? 8. What wilt-thou-write? 9. What shall-we-find? 10. To what [purpose] will-they-write? 11. To whom shall I speak? 12. What will-it-be?

13. What house is that? 14. What is the number of this house? 15. What day of the week is-it? 16. What is the object of the visit? 17. What measures have you taken? 18. What are the lessons that he-is-learning? 19. Which of these houses is yours? 20. With which of these pens will you write the letter? 21. What day will you dine with us? 22. How proud they are! 23. What a misfortune [it is]! 24. Where will you live in Paris? 25. They will praise what pleases (to) them. 26. Thou wilt arrive to-morrow night (*m. por la n.*). 27. When shall we dine? 28. I do not know when it will be.

Exercise Twenty-Third.

Learn and Recite §§ 293–308, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **hablar.**

1. The true master praises another's work, but not his-own. 2. The thief seeks the treasures of others. 3. The unjust [man] speaks freely of others' lives, and does not consider his own. 4. Somebody is calling us; do you not hear a voice? 5. I hear

(*siento*) steps; some-one is-coming (*viene*). 6. Somebody will praise the master (§ 76) whose works deserve it (*merezcan*). 7. Has[1] anybody[3] found[2] what I lost? 8. Somebody wrote him a letter which gave him (a) great offense.

9. Some-one of our acquaintances spoke ill of him. 10. Some of these trees do not grow. 11. Are you looking for anything? 12. Is-there (*hay*) anything more troublesome than to listen-to the twaddle of the vain? 13. Every day has its duties. 14. Every country has its language and its customs. 15. Every year we go to the baths. 16. The Spaniards go to the drive every day. 17. I-met[2] so-and-so[3] yesterday,[1] and he-told (*dijo*) me that you were-looking-for [a] house. 18. When he had (*hubo*) spoken he sat down. 19. He would not speak to me if I were not (*estuviese*) with influential friends. 20. They spoke of the grand dinner at (*en*) [the] palace.

Exercise Twenty-Fourth.

Recite §§ 309–321, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **hablar**.

1. He told me nothing. 2. I had not eaten anything. 3. He would not learn anything. 4. He-who knows[2] nothing[1] fears[2] nothing.[1] 5. He has found nothing. 6. Nobody has written more than the great dramatic author, Lope de Vega. 7. He praises no one. 8. No one will deceive him. 9. He was-looking-for no one. 10. [Let] no one deceive you (*subj.*). 11. No one would find it (*cond.*) even if he-should-search (*subj.*) all the year.

12. In no house do-they-do (*hacen*) this. 13. None of these things moves me. 14. None of these things move me. 15. None of the trees grows more than this [one]. 16. He has deceived none of them. 17. They have looked-for [a] house, but have found none. 18. We have not received any news from our friends. 19. No house in (of) the city is as large and beautiful as the royal[2] palace.[1] 20. None of these ladies is as amiable as the marchioness. 21. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any (*neg.*) of these pens. 22. No paper is so good as (the) hand-laid paper.

Exercise Twenty-Fifth.

Recite §§ 323–335, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **comer.**

1. Have[2] you no[1] time? 2. The poor people have (has) no home. 3. We eat no meat [on] (the) Fridays. 4. They have no friends. 5. Others toil in-order-that I may-eat (*subj.*). 6. I shall write the letter another day. 7. That (*eso*) is another thing. 8. The other day I dined with a friend. 9. In Spain some dine at (*á las*) two in (of) the afternoon, and others at (*á las*) six. 10. Do you want these books or the others? 11. I will take these and you may (*puede*) have the rest.

12. Some went (*fueron*) to the country, others to the baths, and the rest staid home (*refl.*). 13. I shall dine with any one who invites (*subj.*) me. 14. Give me (*déme V.*) any book. 15. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any pen. 16. I-am-looking-for any house that is (*sea*) comfortable and convenient. 17. Such-a thing might (*podría*) happen to any [one]. 18. Such men are-not-accustomed (*no suelen*) to *be* idle. 19. The history of such-a period is full of interest. 20. Such books are very useful to (*para*) the young (youth).

Exercise Twenty-Sixth.

Recite §§ 336–349, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **comer.**

1. I have been-reading all (the) day. 2. We had been-watching all night. 3. He has been (*estado*) in the National[2] Library[1] all the morning. 4. Have you[2] ever[4] travelled[1] over all Andalusia? 5. I had been-waiting-for him all that afternoon. 6. All (the) days are alike (*iguales*) to (*para*) him (*or* dat. pron.). 7. All classes praise him. 8. The whole battalion entered into the fight. 9. This is that Light that lightens every man who comes into (*á*) this world. 10. We see the same [thing] everywhere. 11. They arrested them all (§ 76). 12 He had eaten it all. 13. They had read it all before.

14. Every one who learns Spanish must (*ha de*) begin with (*por*) the grammar. 15. All those who do (*hacen*) such things receive their reward. 16. All that we learned was profitable to us (during)

all [our] (the) life. 17. All that the best men approve is good. 18. In the school the teacher gave (some[1]) very[3] severe[4] lessons.[2] 19. Having dined he went to the gardens with some friends. 20. We have two houses, one (of) stone, and the other (of) wood. 21. He was looking-for a number of good paintings with which he wished to adorn the walls of his drawing-room.

Exercise Twenty-Seventh.

Recite the conjugation of the entire verbs **vivir, haber** (p. 162), and §§ 354–355.

1. Living in (*de*) this way we spent little money. 2. Having written a[1] very[3] long[4] letter,[2] he went-out to take (*á dar*) a walk in the gardens. 3. (In-order) to have friends, it-is necessary to be friendly. 5. (The) to have lived soberly in our youth is a pleasant reflection for our old-age. 6. We-used-to-live (p. 346, *c*) in the country, but now we reside in (the) town. 7. In-order that we may discharge (with) all our obligations, it-is necessary to have principles of honor. 8. He was-fearing that I should write to his parents. 9. He does not wish *me to live* (*that I may live*) in the capital, surrounded by (*del*) pageant and luxury, until my moral forces and my judgment are (*subj.*) more[2] developed.[1] 10. I-feared (*imperf.*) that he would not find what he-was-looking-for. 11. I wrote him in-order that he might permit me to-do what I-wished.

12. There-are days in which one cares (not) neither to read nor to write. 13. There-were more than three hundred persons at the dinner. 14. There-will-be no school to-morrow. 15. There is no one who does not know (*sepa*) what is just. 16. There-has been much rain this year. 17. There have been occasions of great interest and profit during this season. 18. In the Castiles there are no trees, and therefore there are no birds. 19. There would have been much less danger, if every one had remained (*hubiese permanecido*) in his place (*sitio*). 20. Will there be [a] war, or will there be none (§ 197)? 21. There were (*sing.*) people whom I did not know (*imperf.*). 22. There was nobody in the sitting-room. 23. There would be no remedy if a fire[2] should-break-out.[1] 24. There was a moment of the deepest silence, and then[1] the conversation[3] went-on.[2]

Exercise Twenty-Eighth.

El Barómetro.

COMEDIA EN UN ACTO

La Condesa.[1] ¡Dios mio[2]! ¡Dios mio! esto[3] es insoportable. Hace[4] tres meses y medio[5] que llegué[6] á esta quinta, y ni un solo dia ha dejado[7] de llover. Yo[8] no tengo[9] resignacion para[10] sufrir este tiempo, que me aburre, me desespēra y me mata. Vamos á[11] ver si el barómetro me da alguna esperanza. ¡Nada[12]! Ayer marcaba[13] llūvia, y hoy indica tempestad. ¡Esto[3] es horroroso! Pues bien, voy[11] á acabar de una vez[14] con[15] el cómplice de esta llūvia eterna. (Descuelga[16] el barómetro y le arroja al suelo,[17] haciéndole pedazos[18] con estrépito.) Ya[19] no me mortificará más con sus presagios. (*Váse.*[20])

In this passage the following verbs are *regular:* 1st conj., **acabar, arrojar, dejar, desesperar, matar**; 2d conj., none; 3d conj., **sufrir, aburrir** (used in the 3d pers. sing. and plur. only; otherwise in the reflexive form, *aburrirse*). The following make *orthographic changes:* **indicar, marcar, mortificar, llegar** (§ 371). The following are *irregular:* 1st conj., **dar** (§ 543), **descolgar** (like *rogar*, §§ 483, 371); 2d conj., **hacer** (§ 530), **llover** (§ 418, impers.), **ser** (§ 385), **tener** (§ 536), **ver** (§ 548); 3d conj., **ir** (§ 552), **irse** (§ 552, *a*). All these verbs must be learned or reviewed before the lesson is passed.

1. The countess *is* in her summer-house in the south of Spain, in that ancient province that is called (calls itself) Andalusia. 2. It has rained incessantly during all the time that she has *been* there, and she has become-impatient at (*de*) so much bad weather. 3. In the capital of Spain, where she lives, it scarcely ever rains (*no ll. casi nunca*). 4. Seeking some victim of her anger, she hits on the

---

[1] 97, *d.* [2] 249 and *a.* [3] 266. [4] 426, *b.* [5] 172. [6] 371 and *b.* [7] 415 and 726, *b.* [8] 187, *a.* [9] 322. [10] 729. [11] 552 and 725, *a:* **vamos á ver** is much more energetic than **veāmos**, which a calm person would use, *let us see.* [12] 313. [13] 697, *a.* [14] **De una vez**, adverbial phrase, "of one time," *at once, once for all.* [15] **Con**, *with*, is the regimen of **acabar**, *to finish with* (*con*), we say, "to put an end to." [16] From **descolgar**: *descuelgo, gas, ga*, like **rogar**, § 483. [17] *On the floor*, lit. *to the floor.* [18] **Hacer pedazos**, with the direct obj., lit. *to make a thing pieces*, i.e. *to break it in pieces.* [19] 607. [20] 552, *a*; 206.

barometer, which does not cease to point to [a] storm. 5. She takes it down from the nail on (*de*) which it-was-hanging (*pendía*), and she throws it violently on-the floor. 6. Thus[2] triumphant[1] over (*de*) her foe, and leaving the field strewn with the evidences of the fray, she retires from the scene.

Exercise Twenty-Ninth.

ESCENA SEGUNDA.

Anselmo, criado; *Victorina*, criada.

Vict. ¿Qué ruīdo es este? ¡Jesús[1]! El barómetro hecho añicos[2]!

Ans. ¡Qué lástima[3]! Despuēs que le[5] costó mil quinientos reales[4] al[5] señor[6] conde, ha tenido el pobre chisme un fin muy desgraciado. Todavía me acuerdo[7] de la tarde que fuí con el amo[8] á la tienda del óptico[9] de la calle de la Montera, y . . .

Vict. Vámos,[10] no empiece[11] usted ya con los discursos de siempre,[12] y recoja[13] usted esos pedazos ántes que vuelva[14] la señora. (Lee un periódico.)

Ans. Mejor sería que usted me ayudára,[15] para[16] acabar más pronto. ¿No oye[17] usted? (¡Se hace[18] la sorda y sigue[19] leyendo[20] sin hacer[21] caso!) ¿Trae alguna noticia interesante ese[22] periódico?

Vict. Muy interesante. Han preso[23] á Vargas.[24]

Ans. ¡Eso[25] es imposible, imposible!

Vict. ¿Imposible? Īiga[26] usted: "Al fin se ha conseguido[27] capturar al célebre bandido, que por espacio de un año ha sido el azote de los pueblos de Andalucía."

---

[1] 658, *d*, *Rem.* [2] **añicos**, stronger than **pedazos**, and popular; **hecho a.**, *broken into a thousand fragments.* [3] 291, *a.* [4] i.e. $75. [5] 215. [6] **señor** and **señora** are used with titles, and words denoting relatives, to indicate *respect;* omit in English. [7] From **acordarse**, 474, 396, 757. [8] **el amo**, for **mi amo**, as being sufficiently explicit in common language. [9] **á casa de**, *to so and so's* (house); **á la tienda de**, *to so and so's* (shop, store); translate *to the optician's in Montera Street.* [10] 659, *a*, imperat. of **ir**, lit. *let us go*, here used as an exclam. like the French *allons, voyons*, "come now!" [11] From **empezar**, 371, 469, 367, *a*, *b*. [12] *Speeches of always = the old story.* [13] 375. [14] **volver**, 491, 710. [15] 713, 709, *e*. [16] 729. [17] From **oir**. [18] **hacerse la s.**, *to pretend not to hear* (*to be deaf*). [19] From **seguir**. [20] From **leer**. [21] 718; **h. caso**, *to take notice, to pay attention.* [22] 263. [23] 569, 410. [24] 748. [25] 266. [26] From **oir**, 553. [27] 410.

Ans. Y ¿dónde han atrapado á ese tunante?

Vict. En Mairēna.

Ans. ¡Caramba! y qué cerca estaba de[28] nosotros.

Vict. Á media lēgua[29] de esta casa. No he acabado de[30] leer todavía. Oiga usted: "Várgas es un hombre muy original, y podemos dar algunos pormenores de su persona. Su mirada es terrible, pero llena de inteligencia; su boca perfecta, aunque contraida por una sonrisa irónica; de frente sombría, adornada de una magnífica cabellera negra. Con los hombres es implacable, pero tan galante con las señoras que jamás las despoja de sus sortijas sin besar[31] caballerosamente la mano." Como que[32] es hijo de una buena familia, segun dicen.

Ans. ¡Ya! Y le ha quedado esa costumbre de cuando gastaba levita.[33]

Conjugate the *regular* verbs: 1st conj., **atrapar, ayudar, besar, capturar, despojar, gastar, quedar**; 2d conj., **leer** (549, *b*), **prender** (569), **recoger** (375). Conjugate the *irregular* verbs: 1st conj., **acordarse** (474), **costar** (473), **empezar** (469, 371), **estar** (382); 2d conj., **poder** (532), **traer** (537), **volver** (491); 3d conj., **decir** (539), **oir** (553), **seguir** and **conseguir** (516).

1. Do you hear a noise? 2. It-is the barometer falling (that falls). 3. It has been broken into (*se ha hecho*) fragments. 4. How much did it cost our (to the) master? 5. He purchased it at the optician's (*en la t.*, etc.). 6. Do you know the optician? 7. I have often[2] *been*[1] in his shop. 8. I have bought[1] opera-glasses there.[2] 9. His shop *is* near the Gate of the Sun, [a] famous square in (of) Madrid. 10. Do you not remember it? 11. I think I do (that yes). 12. Will you pick-up the pieces? 13. I will (yes), if you will help me (*fut.*). 14. The lady will come-back soon. 15. What are you doing (do you)? 16. I am reading the newspaper. 17. What news is there? 18. They have caught a famous marauder. 19. Who (*cuál*)? 20. A highway-robber who has been the terror of this region.

---

[28] 627. [29] 629, *f.* [30] *Finished reading*, 726, *b.* [31] "Without saluting them politely;" ancient Spanish salutation was by *kissing the hand* of the person saluted: see also § 253, *a.* [32] **como que**, an ellipse for ¿**cómo no**? **puesto que**, *why not? since*, etc. [33] **levita**, the gentleman's afternoon or Prince Albert coat; hence **gastar l.**, *to be dressed like a gentleman* (to wear a levita), *to be a respectable citizen.*

Exercise Thirtieth.

ESCENA TERCERA.

La Condesa. Mayo, llūvia; Junio, lluvia; Julio, grandes lluvias, y Agosto, tempestades. (Ve á los criados.) ¿Qué haceis[1] aquí?

Ans. Señora, estábamos recogiendo[2] los restos mortales del barómetro que fué.[3] (Váse.)

La Cond. (á Vict.) ¿Qué papel es ese que tienes en la mano?

Vict. Es un periódico de Sevilla, con una noticia que de seguro la[4] agradará.

La Cond. ¿Qué noticia?

Vict. La de que[5] el famoso bandido Vargas ha sido preso al fin.

La Cond. ¡Oh! ¡cuánto me alegro[6]! Te aseguro que su recuerdo[7] me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Todavía le veo en mis sueños.

Vict. Y además dice el periódico que desde Sevilla lo llevarán á Madrid con una cadena de hierro muy gruesa para que no se escape.[8]

La Cond. No tendría yo[9] necesidad de cadena para que me lleváran allá.

Conjugate or review the following verbs: 1st conj. (*regular*), **agradar, asegurar, llevar, pasar**; (*refl.*, 399), **alegrarse, escaparse**; (*prog.*, 380, 382), **estar recogiendo**; (*pass.*, 386), **ser preso**; 2d conj. (*irreg.*), **hacer, tener, ver**; 3d conj., **decir**.

1. It has rained the whole month of May. 2. What *are* the servants doing (*progress.*)? 3. They *are* busy at (*en*) (the) work. They are working. 4. The news pleases me. 5. Does the news please you? 6. I do not wish anybody (§ 317) to be (*subj.*) unfortunate. 7. You cannot be (*no se puede ser*) kind to some people (certain people). 8. Do you remember him? 9. I do not remember him. 10. I have a vívid recollection (*recuerdo*) of what took-

---

[1] 180 (*d*), 182. [2] 380. [3] **que fué**, *that was*, i.e. *the late barometer;* so: **el ministro que fué**, (if *dead*) *the late minister;* **el m. que ha sido** (if *alive*, but out of office), *the late m.* [4] 220. [5] **La de que** is an ellipse = **la noticia de**, *the news of, namely* (**que**) *the*, etc. We would say simply: *that the famous*, etc. [6] *How I rejoice = how glad I am!* [7] Lit. *his memory = the thought of him.* [8] 710. [9] 365, 190.

place that night. 11. What does the paper say further? 12. Read it, madam. 13. You read (*famil.*) it for me (*léemelo tú*). 14. Are you glad? 15. I am very glad (I rejoice much). 16. What are you glad of (of what)? 17. That he has been arrested and carried-off (*de que ha sido*, etc.). 18. *He* is-going (*not* prog.) where *I* should-like (*quisiera*) to go. 19. Where would you like to go? 20. Home; I do not like[3] the country any more (*ya*[1] *no*[2]). 21. When it rains the town is more agreeable than the country. 22. To (*para*) me it-is the (*lo*) same.

Exercise Thirty-First.

ESCENA CUARTA.

La Condesa. (sola. Sin dejar su asiento mira á la campiña á través de los cristales de las ventanas.) Nada, no escampa. Esto es peor que el diluvio universal, que no duró más que cuarenta dias, y ahora hace[1] ciento que llueve sin descanso en este pais que dicen es un rincon del cielo. ¡Me gusta el tal rinconcito[2]! Y yo que creía reunir aquí una tertulia de más de[3] treinta personas, me veo sola. Lo único[4] que me consuela es, que hoy llegará la familia del marqués de la Peña, que es numerosa y de excelente humor sobre todo, especialmente la buena marquesa, que me ha pedido permiso[5] para traer á su sobrino Cárlos, con[6] quien tiene el proyecto de casarme. Difícil me parece que lo consiga.[7] He sido tan dichosa en mi matrimonio, que la segunda prueba no será nunca como la primera. (Dan[8] las doce.) ¡Las doce! Ya debe estar el tren de Sevilla en la estacion inmediata. ¡Si no hubiese llegado! No quiero pensarlo. ¡Si pasaré todavía un mes en esta soledad! ¡Imposible! Prefiero morirme.[9]

Conjugate the following verbs: (*Regular*), **casarse**, **durar**, **gustar**, **mirar**; **creer** (549, *b*), **deber**, **verse** (548); **reunir**; (*Irreg.*), **consolar** (476), **pensar** (457); **parecer** (374, *a*), **querer** (534); **decir** (539), **morir** (509), **pedir** (512), **preferir** (500).

---

[1] 696, *e*. [2] 759, *a*; lit. "I like such a little nook, indeed," said in irony; we would say, *a pretty nook, indeed, this!* [3] 137, *b*. [4] 83. [5] 753. [6] Regimen of **casarse**; we say, *to whom*. [7] *That she will succeed in it;* subj. after **difícil** with impers. verb. [8] 678, *Rem.* [9] 395.

IDIOMS.

1. **Gustarle á uno,** *to like* (lit. *to please any one*).

me gusta el libro,	I like the book.
me gustan los libros,	I like (the) books.
la casa que me gusta,	the house that I like.
las casas que nos gustan,	the houses that we like.
no me gusta — gustan,	I do not like it — them.
¿le gusta á V.?	do you like it?
¿no le gusta á V.? [aquello?	don't you like it? [(thing).
¿qué le gusta á V. más, esto ó	what do you like better, this or that
á mi amigo le gusta charlar,	my friend likes to talk.

2. **Casarse con álguien,** *to marry somebody.*

¿con quién se casa?	whom does he (she) marry.
se casa con su primo,	she marries her cousin.
se casó ya,	he has already got married.

3. **Pedirle á uno alguna cosa,** *to ask any one for anything.*

le pido á V. permiso para,	I ask your permission to . . .
qué me pide V.?	what do you ask me for?
no me pidió nada,	he did not ask me for anything.
pide al caballero dinero,	he asks the gentleman for money.

1. Without getting-up the lady looks out of (*se asoma á la*) the window. 2. The countess does not like the rain. 3. All the country round-about is impassable on account of the bad weather. 4. The weather will never clear-up. 5. The friend of the countess wants to marry her to (*con*) a gentleman whose name is (who calls himself) Charles. 6. She does not wish to marry the (*por*) second time. 7. He has asked me for my (the) hand. 8. We expect some friends by (*con*) the Seville train. 9. The train has already[2] left[1] the station of Mairena, and presently it-will-arrive at this [one]. 10. The train carries two engines, because the weather *is* so bad. 11. What-if (*si*) our friends should not arrive! 12. They would have to (*que*) pass the night in the cars. 13. They might (*podrían*) return to Seville.

Exercise Thirty-Second.

ESCENA QUINTA.

La Condesa. ¿Ha llegado el tren de Sevilla?

Anselmo. No, señora Condesa, las águas han destrozado la via, y por un milagro han podido salvarse los viajeros. No se sabe[1] cuándo podrá[2] estar expedito el camino.

La Cond Haz[3] que enganchen[4] en seguida.

Ans. Pero ¿qué piensa V. hacer, señora?

La Cond. Irme con Victorina y contigo á Sevilla, aunque sea[5] nadando, y desde allí á Madrid.

Ans. ¿Á Madrid á nado?

La Cond Sí, á Madrid; ¿y eso te espanta? Vamos ¿qué esperas? Corre.

Ans. Pero, señora, si[6] no se puede[7] dar un paso,[8] ni á pié ni en coche, por la campiña, y además la casa de Madrid está en obra, aprovechando el verano, y luego tienen que arreglarla los pintores y los tapiceros. De modo que hasta dentro de un mes lo ménos[9] . .

La Cond. Tienes razon,[10] véte,[11] no quiero ver á nadie. (Váse el criado.)

ESCENA SEXTA.

La Cond. (sola). Es decir,[12] que me veo[13] obligada á permanecer aquí como un prisionero. Dicen que los prisioneros[14] se resignan; me resignaré. Voy á leer. (Toma un libro y lee.) "EL LAGO." ¡Jesús! me horroriza todo lo que[15] es agua. (Arroja el libro y se levanta.) ¿En qué me ocuparé, cielo santo? Voy á dibujar. Sí, el dibujo es una gran distraccion, y divierte al mismo tiempo.

---

[1] 409. [2] *can be cleared*, lit. "will be able to be cleared." See 532, *a*. [3] 530; **hacer** is causal, signifying that *another* is to carry out the action expressed by the principal verb. We generally omit it: "*Solomon built him an house*"; Span., "*Salomon* **hizo edificar** *una casa*," *caused* a house to be built. [4] 709, *c*. [5] 710. [6] 601. [7] 408. [8] **dar**, *to give*, has many other meanings, here *to take*; so, **dar un paseo**, *to take a walk*. [9] 83 and 610. [10] **tener razon**, *to have reason* = *to be right*. [11] Imperative of **irse**. See 552, *a*. [12] **eso** understood, but *never* expressed in this phrase: *that is to say, that means*. [13] 389, *a*. [14] 664. [15] 343.

Copiaré la iglesia de ese pueblo inmediato, y el campanario gótico que tambien se distingue desde aquí. (Toma un álbum, y se coloca frente á la ventana en actitud de dibujar; pero en seguida vuelve á llover[16] con furia.) ¡Otro aguacero! Ya no veo[17] ni el campanario, ni la iglesia, ni las casas, ni el horizonte, ni nada. Todo[18] ha desaparecido detrás de esa catarata. ¡Qué espectáculo tan[19] horrible! Ni un sér viviente se ve[20] en el camino. Pero ¡calla! me parece que aquel es un viajero. Sí, no hay duda. Ha ido á ampararse debajo de un árbol. ¿Porqué no se refugiará en mi casa? Si supiese[21] cómo me fastídio de estar sola. ¡Oh, qué idēa! Quizás venga[22] de Madrid. Traerá noticias, y frescas; eso es indudable. (Tira del[23] cordon de la campanilla.)

Conjugate the following verbs: **enganchar, refugiarse; horrorizar** (§ 371, *c*), **colocar** (§ 371, *a*); **desaparecer** (§ 374, *a*), **permanecer** (*id.*); **saber** (§ 535), **poder** (§ 532); **distinguir** (§ 376, *a*); **divertir** (502), **venir** (§ 541).

IDIOMS.

1. **Acabar de** (infin.), *to finish* (pres. part.), or *to have just* (past part.).

acaba de escribir la carta,	he finishes *writing* the letter. he has just *written* the letter.
acabábamos de salir, acabámos de salir,	we had just *gone* out.
acabo de recibir una carta,	I have just *received* a letter.

2. **Volver á** (infin.), *to* (second verb) *again.*

vuelve á salir,	he goes out again.
no le he vuelto á ver,	I have not seen him again.
cuando vuelven VV. á escribirles, dénles muchas memorias de mi parte,	when you (*pl.*) write them again, give them my kindest regards.
acababa V. de escribir la carta, y ahora la vuelve á escribir de nuevo,	you had just written the letter, and now you are writing it over again.

1. The train has just arrived, and it will not go-out again to-day.
2. I-shall-learn this lesson so well that[1] it-will[4] not[2] be necessary[5]

---

[16] 608; 725, *a.* [17] 607. [18] 341, *a.* [19] 291, *Rem.* [20] 408. [21] From *saber.* [22] 710. [23] **Tirar** means *to throw away:* **tirar de,** *to pull at.*

for-me[3] (to-me) to learn it again (*volverla á ap.*). 3. The lady persists in returning (*infin.*) to the city. 4. The carriage cannot go (*andar*) over the country on account of the inundation. 5. A gentleman has just come-in who says that the roads *are* impassable. 6. It-is necessary to resign one's self to one's (the) fate, and to have patience. 7. A Spanish-woman out-of-patience goes and comes, jumps-up and sits-down, skips-about again, and runs (*corre que corre*) over (*por*) the[2] whole[1] house. 8. An English [woman] or an American [woman] in like circumstances sits-down calmly and busies herself with (*en*) something useful (*of profit*).

Exercise Thirty-Third.

ESCENA SÉPTIMA.

La Condesa. (al criado.) ¿Ves á un viajero debajo de aquel árbol tan corpulento?

Anselmo. Sí, señora.

La Cond. Corre á él[1] y díle[2] que venga.[3]

Ans. La señora Condesa le conoce sin duda.

La Cond. Corre, te digo. (Váse.) ¡Ah! es atrevido, es temerario lo que acabo de hacer, pero lo primero es vivir, y yo no puedo vivir de esta manera. Sin embargo, abrir las puertas de mi casa á un hombre que no conozco, es más que rareza, es una verdadera locura — es . . . ¡Victorina-a-a! ¡Victorina-a-a!

ESCENA OCTAVA.

La Cond. (á la doncella.) Llama en seguida á Anselmo, que[4] venga al momento.

Victorina. Es imposible, señora, ya va[5] muy léjos.

La Cond. No importa, vé á buscarle.[6]

Vict. Pero, señora ¿cómo voy á hacerlo? Mire usted, ya vuelve.

La Cond. ¿Solo quizás? . . . ¡Qué miro! Viene con el otro. ¡Qué es lo que he hecho! ¡Ah! Ya estoy arrepentida. Oigo que suben.[7]

---

[1] 210. [2] 212, from *decir*. [3] 709, *c*. [4] 708, *b*, *Rem*. [5] Substitute for *estar*, 389, *a*. [6] **ir á buscar**, *to go after a. o.* [7] *I hear them coming up-stairs;* **los** is understood.

Vict. (aparte.) ¿Quién será[8]? . . . La señora no está satisfecha con nada. Continúa la tormenta; me voy ántes que empiecen[9] los truenos.

Conjugate the verbs **llamar, correr, abrir** (§ 561); **conocer** (§ 374, *c*), **oir** (§ 553). **Continuar** is regular, but notice accent: *continúo, continúas; continúe, continúes*, etc.

IDIOMS.

Tener razon (*reason*),	to be right.
no tener razon,	not to be right, to be wrong.
tener vergüenza (*shame*),	to be ashamed.
" **miedo** (*fear*),	" afraid.
" **sueño** (*sleep*),	" sleepy.
" **hambre** (*hunger*),	" hungry.
" **sed** (*thirst*),	" thirsty.
" **frio** (*cold*),	" cold.
" **calor** (*warmth*),	" warm.
tiene razon, no tiene razon,	he is right, he is wrong.
¿tengo yo razon, ó no?	am I right or wrong.
no tenemos miedo de nadie,	we are afraid of no one.
tendrán hambre y frio,	they will be hungry and cold.
el que bebiere del agua que yo le daré, no volverá á tener sed jamás.	he who drinketh of the water that I shall give him will never thirst again.

1. The traveller stood under a large[2] tree[1] to (*para*) shelter himself from the rain. 2. The lady, who found in (the) society her only resource, saw him and sent for him. 3. (The) reflection, which always comes late to the impatient, suggested to-her her folly, when the step that she-had taken (*given*) could not be recalled (*no se podía revocar*). 4. In her selfish vanity she rejects blindly the humiliating reproof of a servant couched in these words: "Madam knows the gentleman, of course." 5. She has more confidence in (the) man than respect for herself (*sí misma*). 6. The great qualities that once shone-forth (*imperf.*) in the nations of the South have survived only in the impetus of the senses.

---

[8] 703, *c*. [9] 710.

Exercise Thirty-Fourth.

ESCENA NONA.

La Condesa. Caballero . . . dispense V. si le[1] he hecho entrar casi á la fuerza, pero . . . pero . . . (¿Qué le digo[2] á este hombre[3]?) Pero anoche hubo[4] una tempestad horrorosa; el viento soplaba con furor, y como se han roto[5] todos los cristales de la casa, y el tiempo está tan malo, hay necesidad absoluta de[6] volverlos á poner.

El Desconocido. De modo que V. me ha tomado por un vidriero. (Pues me gusta la ocurrencia.)

La Cond. Sí, eso es, por un vidriero . . . (No sé lo que digo.) Ya comprenderá V. que á cierta distancia . . .[7] creí que . . . Ahora veo que me he equivocado.[8]

Descon. En efecto, un poco, señora, porque soy militar.[9]

La Cond. ¡Ah! Conque usted . . .

Descon. Siento de todo corazon no ser vidriero[9] en estos momentos.

La Cond. En verdad, caballero, que estoy confusa y avergonzada de mi error. Quisiera darle[10] una satisfaccion completa, y no sé . . .

Descon. Ninguna reparacion me debe V., señora. Lo único que le[10] suplico es, que tenga[11] la bondad de[6] prestarme un paráguas para ir á la estacion, y en ese caso, yo seré el que la dé[12] un millon de gracias.[13]

La Cond. (Acaba de entrar, y ya piensa irse.) ¡Cómo! ¿No esperará V siquiera[14] que pase[15] este aguacero? Es imposible transitar por esos[16] caminos llenos de barro.

Descon. Cuando se han pasado[5] cuatro meses en los campos de África, el andar[17] media hora sobre la tierra un poco húmeda de Andalucía, es bien poca cosa. Por tanto, si tuviera[18] V. la bondad de prestarme un paráguas . . .

La Cond. ¡Ah! Conque ¿V. ha estado[19] en África? ¡Brillante campaña! *

Descon. Un poquito penosa.

La Cond. ¿V. sirvió[20] en infantería? Es un arma que me gusta mucho.

---

[1] 219. [2] 696, *c.* [3] 215. [4] 354. [5] 408 and 571. [6] 724; 726, *a.* [7] 629, *f.* [8] 397. [9] 669, *a.* [10] 219, 220. [11] 709, *c.* [12] From **dar**, 711. [13] 163. [14] 605. [15] 709, *b.* [16] 265. [17] 719. [18] 708, *b.* [19] 391, *b.* [20] 513.

* General O'Donnell's unjustifiable war against Morocco in 1859–60.

Descon. No, señora.

La Cond. Entónces sería[21] en caballería. Todavía me gusta más.

Descon. He servido en ingenieros, señora.

La Cond. ¡En ingenieros! Á mí me[22] agradan infinito los ingenieros.

Descon. Señora ¿tendría V.[23] la bondad de mandar que me trajesen[24] un paráguas?

La Cond. (Vuelta al tema del paráguas.) De modo que ha tenido V. la gloria de encontrarse[25] en la famosa batalla de que tanto se habló . . .[26]

Descon. ¿En la batalla del cuatro de febrero,[27] ó en la[28] de Vad-Ras?

La Cond. Eso es,[29] en la de Vad-Ras.

Descon. Sí, señora, he tenido esa honra. — Aunque el paráguas sea[30] malo, no importa.[31]

The student cannot review the conjugations too frequently. It is the basis of thoroughness in the handling of the spoken language. Henceforward, however, he need give only the first person singular of each tense, conjugating any specially irregular or peculiar parts of the verb. Give the outline, then, of the following, conjugating the necessary tenses of those in *italics:* **entrar, mandar, importar** (§ 415); *suplicar,* (§ 371), *andar* (§ 528), *dar* (§ 543), *encontrar* (§ 477), *pensar* (§ 457); **comprender,** *creer* (§ 549, *b*), **deber, haber** (§ 354); *hacer* (§ 530), *querer* (§ 534), **romper** (§ 571), *saber* (§ 535); **tener** (§ 536), *traer* (§ 537), *ver* (§ 548); *decir* (§ 539), *ir* and *irse* (§ 552), *sentir* (§ 499), *servir* (§ 513).

(*Imperative — polite form.*)

1. Excuse me, madam. 2. Excuse me, ladies. 3. Come in (*sing.* and *pl.*). 4. Go-out (*sing.* and *pl.*). 5. Come-up. 6. Go-down. 7. Come-out. 8. Go-in. 9. Don't come-in. 10. Don't go-out. 11. Don't come-up. 12. Don't go-down. 13. Don't come-out. 14. Don't go-in. 15. Do it (*hágalo V.*). 16. Don't do it (*no lo h. V.*). 17. Try it; don't try it. 18. Ask-for it; don't ask-for it. 19. Give it to-me; don't give it to-him. 20. Look-for it; don't look-for it. 21. Forgive him; don't forgive him. 22. Hang it up;

---

[21] 706, *f.* [22] 214. [23] 706, *e.* [24] 709, *c*; 713. [25] 389, *a.* [26] 409. [27] 675, date of the battle of Tetuan. [28] 267. [29] *That's it.* [30] 710. [31] 415.

don't hang it up. 23. Come-near; don't come-near. 24. Go-away; don't go (away). 25. Do him the favor; don't do him the favor. 26. Have the goodness to . . . ; don't refuse to . . . 27. Turn-around; don't turn-around.

Tema Trigésimo-Quinto.

ESCENA NONA — CONTINUACION.

La Condesa. (llamando al criado.) ¡Anselmo! ¡Anselmo! (aparece.) Ya que este caballero quiere absolutamente ponerse en camino, vé á buscar un paráguas, y tráelo al instante. (Que no haya[1] ni un solo paráguas en la casa ¿entiendes?) (Váse el criado.) Pero siéntese V., caballero.

Descon. Señora, tengo prisa por marcharme, y agradezco[2] la invitacion de V. Me esperan algunos amigos en la estacion, y ademas, prolongando[3] mi presencia en esta casa, temo[4] ser indiscreto, cuando[5] no me es posible ni áun componer los cristales que se han roto.

La Cond. Puede V. estar tranquilo, porque el tren no sale hasta dentro de[6] tres horas. Conque decía V. que en África . . . Y ¿fué V. herido[7] en campaña?

Descon. Sí, señora, dos veces, y muy gravemente por cierto, miéntras tratábamos de establecer una paralela.

La Cond. Conque ¿V. ha tratado de establecer una paralela? No sabe V. lo que[8] yo he deseado siempre saber lo que es una paralela.

Descon. Voy á satisfacer entónces la curiosidad de V. miéntras traen el paráguas.

La Cond. Pero siéntese V., yo se lo[9] ruego.

Descon. Gracias. La paralela, señora, consiste en una linea de ataque y de defensa trazada sobre el terreno que ocupan los sitiadores, con objeto de avanzar por zanjas ó caminos cubiertos hácia la plaza ó el punto sitiado.

La Cond. Comprendo perfectamente.

Descon. Esas zanjas se construyen en tres líneas unidas entre sí

---

[1] 708, *b*, *Rem.* [2] **agradecer** (§ 374, *a*). [3] 735. [4] 723, "that I shall be." [5] *since.* [6] **hasta dentro de** = *before*, *in*, with a negative verb. [7] 390. [8] 282, *a*. [9] 754.

por otras en forma de zig-zags. La profundidad de cada zanja es la de un metro, y su longitud varía desde uno hasta tres metros próximamente. Hay seis modos de construirlas: de zapa sencilla, de zapa volante, llena, medio-llena, doble y semi-doble. ¿Comprende V.?

La Cond. ¡Vaya[10] si comprendo! Es muy interesante todo eso. Decía V. que hay cincuenta y seis maneras de construir las zanjas...

Descon. ¡Cincuenta y seis! ¡Ave María Purísima[11]! seis, señora, seis.

La Cond. Es verdad, perdone V., me he equivocado. Como nosotras no tenemos obligacion de saber esos trabajos de zapa...

Descon. ¡Pues ya lo creo! Como que los hacemos nosotros.[12] Vamos ahora á[13] definir claramente lo que es zapa sencilla.

La Cond. Vamos á ver.

Descon. Se llama zapa sencilla... (Sale[14] el criado.)

Conjugate **desear**, **variar**; *avanzar* (§ 371, *c*); *rogar* (§ 483), *sentarse* (§ 459); *agradecer* (§ 374); *entender* (§ 471), *componer* (§ 533); *construir* (§ 522), *salir* (§ 554); *ser herido* (§ 386).

IDIOM.

tratar de (inf.), *to try to* (inf.).

tratemos de averiguarlo,	let us try to ferret it out.
trataré de encontrarle,	I shall try to find him.

1. I wish you [a] good journey. 2. He has changed his (*de*) opinion. 3. The ship changed her (*de*) course. 4. He-came-forward boldly. 5. Let him come-forward. 6. I came-forward to (*á*) salute him. 7. I begged him to (*it to-him*). 8. He begged us to. 9. I beg you not to go-out (*subj.*). 10. He begged me not to go-out. 11. We beg you to sit-down (*que se siente*). 12. I thank you for it (*it to you*). 13. I shall be infinitely obliged to you for it. 14. He does not understand me. 15. Don't you understand me?

16. Nobody understands him; he speaks badly. 17. He who makes shoes is called [a] shoemaker; he who mends them is called [a] cobbler. 18. He who draws up plans of houses or property is

---

[10] 659, *a*, "Of course I do." [11] 658, *d*, *Rem.* [12] "Oh! of course, since *we* are the ones to construct them"; **zapa** has the two meanings here. [13] "Now let us explain"... [14] **Salir**, in plays, means "to enter."

called a draughtsman. 19. He is trying to construct a tramway from (*desde*) his village to the city. 20. When do you start for Seville? 21. The train will leave in (within) two hours. 22. Will you leave by the mail-train or by the accommodation? 23. There-are excursion-trains almost every day during the bathing-season.

Tema Trigésimo-Sexto.

ESCENA DÉCIMA.

Anselmo. (á su ama.) Señora, he revuelto toda la casa, y no he podido encontrar más que esto. (Saca de la funda el armazon de un paráguas viejo y muy grande y le abre.)

La Condesa. (al Desconocido.) Ya ve V., caballero, que no le falta más que la tela.[1] Creímos que haría[2] buen tiempo y no hemos pensado en traer paráguas (*plur.*) de Madrid.

Ans. Y además, será inútil dentro de pocos minutos. La lluvia ha cesado, y cualquiera diría que el sol va á salir.

La Cond. (corriendo hácia la ventana.) ¿Será[3] posible? Va á salir el sol. ¡Qué alegría! Hará buen tiempo y vendrán los amigos que espero con tanta ansiedad.[4] Anselmo, sube al momento á la azotēa y cada cinco minutos baja á decirme cuál[5] es el estado del cielo.

Ans. (Pues, señor,[6] vamos arriba á desempeñar las funciones del barómetro que se hizo pedazos esta mañana.) (Váse.)

Conjugate **bajar,** *sacar* (§ 371); *revolver* (§ 491); *venir* (§ 541).

IDIOMS.

Hacer, *to be* (of the temperature and weather).

hace buen (mal) tiempo,	it is good (bad) weather.
¿qué tal tiempo hará mañana?	what kind of weather will it be tomorrow?
hacía mucho frio, calor,	it was very cold, warm.
hizo un tiempo muy templado,	it was quite moderate weather.

---

[1] lit. *it does not lack to it more than the cloth*, i.e. "it lacks only the cover." [2] *It would be.* [3] 703, *b.* [4] 624. [5] 292. [6] Addressed to himself in good humor.

1. What kind [of] weather is-it-going to be (*va á h.*) to-morrow? 2. The sun set (has set) clear; I fancy (that) it will be fair weather. 3. It-was very cold that night, do you remember? 4. It-has not been very hot this summer. 5. It-is hotter in Madrid than in Boston, but one does not feel it (*no se siente*) so-much there, because the atmosphere is very dry in the centre of Spain. 6. One never perspires there, and they (*se*) do not wear[1] straw-hats or (*nor*) white clothes much.[2] 7. Spaniards only want good government and (the) material[2] prosperity.[1]

Tema Trigésimo-Séptimo.

ESCENA UNDÉCIMA.

Desconocido. Como decíamos, la zapa sencilla . . .

La Condesa. Caballero, V. me permitirá que le diga[1] que es una imprudencia por mi parte detenerle más tiempo, y que estoy abusando de[2] su amabilidad.

Descon. Al contrario, señora.

La Cond. Sé bien lo que es un viaje. Falta el tiempo para todo; los momentos son preciosos.

Descon. Pero ¿no me ha dicho V., hace un momento, que tengo tres horas disponibles? Ahora soy yo el que pide[3] á V. el favor de no abandonar tan pronto esta casa.

La Cond. Si es así . . . caballero . . . (de mal humor.)

Descon. Vuelvo á mi narracion. La zapa sencilla . . .

La Cond. ¡Dios mio! ¡Dios mio!

Descon. ¿Se pone V. mala[4]?

La Cond. No, no es nada.

Descon. En la zapa sencilla sólo se emplean gaviones y faginas, que consisten . . .

ESCENA DUODÉCIMA.

Anselmo. ¡Señora Condesa, señora Condesa!

La Cond. ¿Qué ocurre?

Ans. El sol que apareció un instante se ha retirado bruscamente. El cielo está cubierto de unos nubarrones[5] negros que asustan . . . y oiga V., señora, la lluvia cae á torrentes.

La Cond. ¡Horrible contrariedad! La marquesa y su familia no podrán venir, y voy á continuar sola en este infierno.

---

[1] 709, *c.* [2] 757. [3] 694, *a.* [4] Idiom: *are you ill?* [5] 767.

Ans. (Se ha puesto furiosa. Me voy á escape, porque como ahora soy yo el barómetro, no tendría nada de extraño[6] que hiciera conmigo[7] lo que hizo con mi antecesor).

Conjugate *aparecer* (§ 374) and *caer* (§ 544).

IDIOM.

Ponerse, *to place* or *put one's self;* (of dress) *to put on;* (of the sun) *to set;* (of physical or moral state) *to get, to become, to be.*

1. He has been wounded by (*de*) a ball (§ 765, *Rem.* I.). 2. We have been wounded in our self-respect. 3. The sun appears through (*por entre*) the clouds. 4. The sun sets, had set, went-down. 5. A friend put himself between the two combatants. 6. When the sun[2] goes-down[1] among clouds it is [a] sign that (*de que*) the following day will be overcast or stormy. 7. They know (*conocer*) the signs of the sky, but they do not discern the signs of the times. 8. He put on *his* (frock-)coat and went-out to (*á*) make some calls. 9. (The) excursion tickets are called in Spain tickets of out and back (go and return). 10. The machine or engine that draws the train is called there "locomotora," and in (the) Spanish America "locomotiva" from-the English. 11. He-has got well (good) again. 12. If he should go to Malaga he would get well (good). 13. I should become very angry if he said that *to-me.* 14. He is ill; he is getting* better.

Tema Trigésimo-Octavo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-TÉRCIA.

La Condesa (al desconocido, con dulzura). Cuando V. guste,[1] mi querido amigo, puede continuar esa deliciosa descripcion de los trabajos de zapa.

Descon. Al momento, señora. Toda vez que V. lo desea, pasarémos á la zapa volante.

La Cond. Ya escucho. (Y es buen mozo.)

Descon. La zapa volante se comienza á practicar casi siempre de noche, y se hace salir[2] de la trinchera un destacamento de trabajadores; cada uno lleva una pala, una espiocha y un fusil.

La Cond. Una pala, una espiocha y un fu . . .

---

[6] "It would not be at all strange if" (*que*). [7] 203; **con** here = to. * *he goes getting better*, se va poniendo m. [1] 710. [2] Literally: *a detachment is made to come forth;* we say: *they take from the* trinchera *a detachment of.*

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA.

Anselmo. ¡Victoria! ¡Victoria! El sol ha triunfado de la lluvia, y el cielo, casi despejado, presenta un aspecto magnífico.

La Cond. ¡Oh! qué alegría! Vé á prepararlo todo, Anselmo. para recibir á mis amigos, que vendrán hoy fijamente en el primer tren. (Al Desconocido.) Caballero, retener á V. un momento más en esta quinta sería un abuso, una inconveniencia. Y ántes de marchar reciba V. un millon de gracias por la paciencia y la amabilidad con que me ha hecho compañía por espacio de una hora. Crea V. que jamás olvidaré su conducta.

Descon. Adios, señora Condesa, y gracias por la hospitalidad que he encontrado en su casa de V.

La Cond. Y yo ruego á V., caballero, que olvide la manera especial y violenta que he tenido de hacerle entrar en ella.

Descon. Dichosa violencia, señora, que me ha permitido conocerla.

La Cond. Tampoco olvidaré que V. me ha hecho pasar una de las horas más deliciosas que he disfrutado en tres meses.

Descon. Esa hora pasada cerca de V. va á hacer muy largas las[3] que faltan para que salga el tren. Adios, Señora.

La Cond. ¿Quiere V. seguir mi consejo? Ese tiempo lo puede V.[4] emplear en visitar los alrededores, que son deliciosos. Ahora no hay peligro ninguno de caer en manos de los bandidos y ser degollado por el famoso Vargas.

Indicate all the verbs that are in the subjunctive mode,—*guste, olvide, salga,*—and apply the principle regulating each. Give the imperative in the *familiar* form, and change it into the imperative with the *polite* form. Give all those in the *polite* form, and change them to the *familiar* form, affirmative and negative, with and without a pronoun. As: *haz, házlo, no hagas, no lo hagas; haga V., hágalo V., no haga V., no lo haga V.*

1. The treaty of the United States with Spain was signed at (*en*) St. Lawrence, that is, at the Escorial, near Madrid, by the famous Manuel Godoy, called [the] Prince of the Peace, and Thomas Pinckney on (*de*) [the] part of the United States, the twenty-seventh of October,* (of) one thousand seven hundred [and] ninety-five. 2. The

---

[3] *Will make those that remain before the train starts very long.* [4] The object comes first for *emphasis*, and is repeated in a pronoun substitute (*lo*) superfluous in English. Unemphatic is: *Puede V. emp. ese tiempo en.* * 675.

king, Charles [the] Fourth,* ratified it at the palace of Aranjuēz, April 25, 1796, and George (*Jorge*) Washington ratified the same by-the (*de*) advice and with the consent of the Senate, at (*en*) Philadelphia, March 7, 1796, Timothy[5] Pickering[6] being[1] then[2] Secretary of State.[4] 3. The Treaty, with all its documents, was then[2] printed[1] (*se imprimió*) at Madrid in a small 4to volume of fifty pages, with this title: Treaty | of Friendship, Limits and Navigation | concluded | between the King our Lord | and the United States of America: | Signed at (*en*) St. Lawrence the Royal | October 27th † (of) 1795. | By (*de*) order of the King. | Madrid, in the Royal Press, | year of 1796. 4. This volume is (*está*) in two columns, the one for the Spanish text and the other for the English, with the powers (*poderes*) and ratifications at-the end, running across the page (*á renglon seguido*), and with two engraved plans of passports or sailing patents (*patentes de mar*). The draft of the treaty is said to have been made (was made, as it is said,) by the celebrated Count de Aranda, one of Spain's ablest statesmen.

Tema Trigésimo-Nono.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.

Desconocido. ¿Vargas?

La Condesa. Sí, un bandido que ha sido el terror de este pais, y que me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Sólo con nombrarle me echo á[1] temblar como una azogada.[2]

Descon. (Voy á vengarme de tí.) En efecto, ahora recuerdo que ayer arrestaron á ese célebre bandido y que hoy le he visto en el camino de hierro.

La Cond. Gracias á Dios que nos vemos libres de ese hombre.

Descon. No tan libres como V. cree.

La Cond. ¡Cómo! Pues ¿qué ha sucedido?

Descon. Hombre de una destreza y de una fuerza increibles, ha logrado romper los hierros que le aprisionaban; ha herido á cuatro guardias que le custodiaban, y echó á correr por esos[3] campos sin que fuera[4] posible darle alcance.

---

* 674. † *á veinte y siete de O.* [1] **echarse á,** *to begin;* "at the bare mention of his name I begin to." [2] An *azogado* (from **azogue,** *quicksilver*) is one who has destroyed his nervous system by labor in the quicksilver mines. We say, "to tremble like a leaf." [3] 265, translate "the open fields." [4] 710.

La Cond. ¡Eso es horrible! Van á empezar otra vez los robos y los crímenes, y yo vuelvo á mis noches de insomnio y de angustia. Dicen que ese hombre es un mónstruo de fealdad.

Descon. Se exagēra mucho, señora.

La Cond. ¿V. lo conoce? Ahora recuerdo que acaba V. de decir que esta mañana . . .

Descon. No es tan feo como se asegura. Figúrese V. el color de mis cabellos.

La Cond. ¿Es posible?

Descon. Frente igual á la mia.

La Cond. ¿De véras?

Descon. La nariz, la boca y la barba de una semejanza perfecta.

La Cond. Pero ¡eso es raro! ¿Y su estatura? (inquieta.)

Descon. Como la mia; ni más alta ni más baja.

La Cond. Y ¿qué edad representa?

Descon. La misma que yo.

La Cond. ¡Dios mio! Empiezo á sospechar. (El jóven cierra por dentro todas las puertas y se guarda[5] las llaves en el bolsillo.) ¿Qué está V. haciendo, caballero?

Descon. Señora, el famoso bandido que tanto la aterra, soy yo.

La Cond. ¡Socor . . . ![6]

Descon. No dé V. un solo grito si quiere V. conservar la vida.

La Cond. ¡Estoy perdida!

Descon. V. misma me ha hecho entrar en su casa y por fuerza.

La Cond. ¿Qué quiere V.? ¿Dinero? Le daré todo el que me pida.

Descon. ¿Por quién me toma V.? por un vidriero al principio, y ahora por un cambiante de monedas!

La Cond. ¡Quién lo creyéra! Un hombre que me parecía de modales tan distinguidos!

1. The stranger made her tremble, feigning himself [to be] the robber of whom[1] the morning[4] paper[3] spoke.[2] 2. It would seem to be a very ungallant vengeance to take on a lady,* but we must remember that her behavior toward a stranger had been quite extraordinary. 3. The lady began to cry (to the) help, but the

---

[5] **guardar**, *to keep*, also *to lay aside*, as a book; here *to put* (away). For the *se*, see §§ 231 and 253. [6] ¡**Socorro**! *help!* * It seems little gallant to avenge one's self thus of a lady, but one must, etc.

pretended robber, seeing the gravity of the situation, sought to (*procurar*) moderate the terror of his victim [by] giving her an account of his life. 4. Knowing the character of (the) ladies, he sought to excite her sympathy even in [the] midst of the danger that seemed to surround her. 5. While[2] the narration[4] went-on,[3] however,[1] the lady found means to (*para*) notify the servants of her position. 6. The-latter[3] having[1] come[2] to (*en*) her aid, the stranger was obliged to acknowledge that he was acting a farce. 7. The declaration of his attachment to the lady under the circumstances does not add to the interest of the play in our opinion. 8. It is, however, very popular in [a] certain class of Spanish theatres, which are called summer or café theatres (631, *b*).

Tema Cuadragésimo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.

Descon. Es que[1] yo no soy bandido por instinto, sino por un rapto de amorosa desesperacion.

La Cond. (Un poco más tranquila.) ¡Es posible!

Descon. Sí, señora Condesa. No he hecho más que vengarme. El amor únicamente es lo que me convirtió[2] en un hombre criminal.

La Cond. (Para ganar tiempo.) Debe ser esa una historia romántica y terrible á la vez.

Descon. Sí, señora, romántica y terrible.

La Cond. Tengo miedo de estar sola con V., y sin embargo quisiera saberla.

Descon. Yo adoraba con delirio en mi pais á la hija de un rico labrador. (La Condesa se sienta junto á la mesa y escribe sin ser vista algunas palabras en un pedazo de papel, miéntras sigue la relacion.)

La Cond. Que sería hermosa sin duda.

Descon. Hermosa como un ángel de la gloria. Diría que era la más bella de todas las mujeres, si no hubiera tenido la fortuna de conocer á V.

La Cond. (Esto es lo que se llama un bandido bien educado. Yo había oido decir que había algunos muy finos, pero no en el campo).

---

[1] 188, *Rem.* [2] **convertir**, 502.

Descon. Nos amábamos con frenesí. Pues bien, señora, aquella niña, á quien yo creía un modelo de pureza, me proporcionó el más cruel de los desengaños.

(La Condesa se había aproximado todo lo posible á la puerta, y, fingiendo que se le cayó el pañuelo, pasó por la rendija el papel donde había escrito.)

ESCENA DÉCIMA-QUINTA.

Anselmo. (por fuera.) Señora, señora ¿llamaba V.?

Descon. (á la Cond.) Puede V. decir lo que le plazca.[3] Ya sabe V. que estoy armado.

La Cond. (al criado, con voz conmovida.) Anselmo ¿ha llegado el tren?

Ans. Sí, señora.

La Cond. ¿Y la familia que esperaba?

Ans. No ha venido. El tren llegó con dos horas de retraso á causa del mal estado de los caminos. La tormenta ha descargado sobre el rio y ha convertido en un lago la campiña.

Descon. (aparte.) ¡Demonio! Yo me marcho. Además, voy vengado, y el susto ha sido de primera clase. (A la Condesa.) Señora, con permiso de V., me retiro, y ahora estoy seguro que no me detendrá más tiempo á su lado. Pero ¿qué ruido es ese? (Dan fuertes golpes en la puerta.)

Ans. (desde fuera.) Señora, valor, aquí estamos para librarla de ese infame bandido. Somos seis hombres y traemos cada uno nuestra escopeta.

La Cond. (al Descon.) Ese ruido significa que mis criados van á acabar con V., dentro de pocos momentos, si se atreve á dar un solo paso.

Descon. (aparte.) Pues me he metido en buen zipizape. No hay más remedio que confesar la verdad y salir de este atolladero. (Alto, á la Condesa) Sepa V., señora Condesa, que todo ha sido una farsa. V. me tomó como recurso contra la lluvia y contra el fastidio; yo lo comprendí, y quise darla un susto fingiéndome ese bandido que tanto la aterra.

La Cond. ¡Cómo!

Descon. Sí; pertenezco á una de las familias más nobles de

[3] 545.

Andalucía, y soy sobrino de la marquesa de la Peña, que hoy debía salir de Sevilla para ir á la quinta de la Condesa de Alvarado, con quien tiene el proyecto de casarme.

La Cond. Conque V. . . . (La puerta cede al fin á los golpes, y entra Anselmo con cinco criados, todos armados de escopetas.)

1. There are rail-ways over all Spain. 2. One goes from the French frontier on the north to Cadiz in the extreme south. 3. This road gives-off lateral branches that lead to Lisbon and Oporto in Portugal, and on the other hand to Malaga, Carthagena, and Valencia along (*por*) the eastern coast. 4. Besides, there are roads from Madrid to Barcelona via (*por vía de*) Saragossa, and to the north-west as-far-as-to Bilbáo and Santander. 5. These are the great lines; there are many short [ones] which connect important places with the capital. 6. The Spanish language is spoken to-day by more people than any other language in western Europe, except the English. 7. In a few years the demands of commerce will make it the[1] only[2] absolutely[5] indispensable[6] foreign[4] language[3] in (*de*) this country. 8. It is spoken over the whole of Central and South America (*por toda la A. del Centro y del Sur*), but with [a] certain local type like that which (*al que*) distinguishes the Anglo-American from the Englishman. 9. Still the educated of both countries may be said* to have a common speech and type. 10. Many distinguished Mexicans, Chilians, *et cetera*, have contributed by (*con*) their writings to (the) Spanish literature, and have become (*hacerse*) members of the various Academies of the mother-country.

Tema Cuadragésimo-Primo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-SEXTA.

Anselmo. (al Desconocido.) Dáte preso,[1] tunante, ahora las vas á pagar[2] todas juntas.

La Cond. ¡Eh, detenéos[3]! Y tú, Anselmo, respecta la persona de este caballero como si fuese la mia propia.

Ans. Pero, entónces ¿qué significa el papel que me dió V. por debajo[4] de la puerta?

---

* *Still, it may be said that the educated of both countries have*, etc.

[1] Lit., *give yourself up as a prisoner;* that is, "you are my prisoner." [2] Often render **ir á** by the future of the following verb: "you'll pay now for the whole score." [3] 209, 404. [4] 649, *Rem.*

La Cond. Calla; luego lo sabrás todo.

Descon. Conque ¿V. dió aviso sin que[5] yo lo notara?

La Cond. Creo que V. en mi lugar hubiera hecho lo mismo. El lance no ha sido para ménos.[6] Pero despues he procurado enmendar mi error.

Descon. ¡Oh, sí! mil gracias. Mi nombre es Cárlos Velazquez, y ofrezco á V. mi mano y mi corazon que sabrá amarla siempre.

Ans. (aparte.) Me parece que esto va á acabar en tragēdia, es decir, en boda.

La Cond. Pero ¿y esa señora con quien desēa casarle[7] la marquesa de la Peña?

Cárlos. Renuncio á ella para siempre.

La Cond. Entónces, caballero, siento no poder dar á V. mi mano, porque V. mismo acaba de negarse á ello.[8]

Cárlos. ¡Yo negarme[9]! . . . No comprendo.

La Cond. Está V. en casa de la Condesa de Alvarado.

Cárlos. (con alegría.) ¡Será posible! ¡Ah! soy feliz, y voy á obedecer ciegamente las órdenes de mi tia.

Ans. (¡Caramba! esto va por la posta.[10] Es preciso ponerse bien con este hombre.) Caballero, V. dispense si hace poco[11] me tomé la libertad de poner[12] la mano . . .

Cárlos. Estás perdonado.

ESCENA ÚLTIMA.

Victorina. ¿Está ya preso?

Anselmo. Sí, preso, y para toda su vida el infeliz.

La Condesa. (al público.)

En la pasada lluvia
Tendí mis redes,
Y pesqué‿este‿ingeniero
Que‿ofrezco‿á‿ustedes.
Ya‿importa‿un bledo[13]

---

[5] Lit., *without that I should note it*, i.e., "without my observing it." [6] *The occasion demanded it;* lit., "the critical occasion was not for less." [7] **le** = *you.* [8] **ello** refers to the *idea*, — not to the mere word **mano**, which is fem. [9] 731. [10] **ir por la posta**, *to go "by express,"* as we say. [11] **hace poco**, *just now, a little while ago.* [12] *to lay my hands* (on you). [13] **Bledo**: Low Lat. *bledum*, Germ. *Blatt*, Fr. *blé: a grain, a whit.* A negative is understood with the verb: "I don't care a whit now, whether" (*que*).

Que‿el barómetro marque
Bueno‿ó mal tiempo.
Ayer, al verme sola.
  Aquí moría . .
Y‿hoy puede[14] que me‿estorbe
  La compañía.
Sí . . . yo soy franca,
Y con franqueza pido
  Una palmada.[15]

1. He shuts the door; shut the door (*fam.* and *pol.*). 2. He opens the door; open the door. 3. He goes up stairs; go up stairs (*la escalera*). 4. He goes down stairs; go down stairs. 5. He leaves him; leave him; don't leave him. 6. He calls them; call them; don't call them. 7. Do not speak to me. 8. Let no one come in (*que nadie pase* or *entre*). 9. Let no one see me. 10. Let there be no one at the door. 11. Let it not be so. 12. Let us go (*vamos*); let us go up; let us go down. 13. Let us not listen to him. 14. Let us give (to)-the poor[2] [man] something.[1] 15. Let us not give him anything (nothing). 16. Pardon, brother! 17. May (*que*) God relieve you. 18. Farewell, cavalier (*Go with God, cavalier*). 19. To (*para*) deny an alms in Spain, they say to the beggar: "Pardon, brother," or "God protect you" (*Dios le ampare*), or both (things). 20. The beggar answers cheerfully, "Go, your worships, with God; another time it will be" (*otra vez será*).

---

[14] *puede que*, popular for **puede ser que**, impersonal. [15] The usual ending of Spanish plays, the "*vos plaudite*" of the ancients. Observe that in poetry similar vowels meeting one another are absorbed in pronunciation; vowels that are not similar are diphthongized, or even uttered in triphthongs.

SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

A.

Á, to, at, in, within, at—off.
Abalōrios, M. PL., glass beads.
Abandonār, to forsake, to leave.
Abrīr, to open, § 561.
Absolūtamente, absolutely; *quiere a.*, is determined to.
Absolūto, a, absolute.
Aburrīr, to weary, to wear out.
Abusār, to abuse, foll. by *de*, § 757.
Abūso, M., abuse, outrage.
Acabār, to bring to an end, to finish, to close; to get through; *a. con*, to put an end to, to make an end of; *a. de*, to finish (doing something); to have just, p. 422.
Accionīsta, M., shareholder.
Acēite, M., (olive) oil.
Acordārse, to remember, foll. by *de*, § 474.
Actitūd, F., attitude; *en a. de*, in a position for.
Acto, M., act.
Acudīd—*acudir*.
Acudīr, to apply (*á*, to).
Acuērdo(me)—*acordarse*.
Además, besides, furthermore.
Adiōs, good bye.
Adorār, to be in love with, to adore.
Adornādo, a, adorned (*de*, with).
Adulaciōn, F., flattery.
Afēite, M., cosmetic.
Afīige—*afligir*.
Afligīdo, a, sorrowful.
Afligīr, to grieve.
Agōsto, M., August.
Agradār, to please, to like; used same as *gustar*, p. 420.
Agradecēr, to thank, §§ 374, 754.
Agradēzco—*agradecer*.
Āgua, F., water; *las ā—s*, rain; inundation.
Aguacēro, M., shower.
Águeda, F., Agathe or Agatha.
Agüēro, M., augury, omen.
Águila, F., eagle, § 81.
Ahōra, now, at present.
Ahorrār, to lay up, to save.
Āire, M., air, atmosphere.
Airōso, a, successful, triumphant.
Ajēno, a, another's, of others; foreign (*de*, to).
Ala, F., wing; rim, § 81.
Alancēa—*alancear*.
Alanceār, to dart, to spear.
Alancēe—*alancear*.
Alavés, a, Alavese, of Álava.
Albaricōque, M., apricot.
Albedrío, M., will (*arbitrium*).
Albērgue, M., refuge.
Albrīcias, F. PL., present for bringing good news.
Álbum, M., album, sketching-book.
Alcalaīno, a, of Alcalá.
Alcānce, M., range; *dar a.*, to come up to, to reach.
Alcornōque, M., cork-tree.

Alcūza, F., cruet, oil-jar.
Alegrārse, to rejoice, to be glad (*de*, at, of).
Alegría, F., joy, delight; *¡qué a.!* how glad I am!
Alemān, a, German.
Alfilēr, M., pin; (two and three penny) nail, (four and six cent) nail.
Algūno, a, some, any; PL., some, a few.
Alhāja, F., jewel.
Alicantīno, a, of Alicante.
Almenāra, F., beacon.
Almūd, M., measure.
Alquīla, F., sign (which indicates that a hack is not engaged).
Alrededōr, adv., around; *a. de*, prep., around; *los a — es*, M. PL., the environs, outskirts.
Alto, a, high, tall.
Allá, thither, there (motion).
Allí, there (rest).
Ama, F., lady or mistress of a house (with respect of the servants); nurse, § 81.
Amabilidād, F., kindness.
Amapōla, F., poppy.
Amār, to love.
Amāra, from *amar*.
Ambigū, M., rotunda.
Ambíguo, a, ambiguous.
Amīga, F., friend (lady).
Amīgo, M., friend.
Amistād, F., friendship.
Amo, M., the gentleman or master of a house.
Amōr, M., love.
Amorōso, a, pertaining to love, on account of love.
Amparārse, to seek shelter.
Āmplio, a, full, ample.
Andalucía, F., Andalusia (southern Spain).
Andalūz, a, Andalusian.
Andār, to go, to walk (indefinite); *el a.*, the going, walking, § 528.
Andēn, M., platform, inside of a railway station.
Ángel, M., angel; *a. de la gloria*, an angel in paradise.
Angūstia, F., anguish, suffering.
Ánima, F., (disembodied) soul, § 81.
Anōche, last night.
Ansiedād, F., anxiety; *con tanta a.*, so anxiously.
Antecesōr, M., predecessor.
Ántes, adv., before, formerly; *a. de*, prep., before; *a. que*, conj., before (with subj.).
Antigüedād, F., antiquity.
Antīguo, a, old, ancient.
Añícos, M. PL., fragments; *hecho a.*, broken into fragments.
Año, M., year.
Aparecēr, to appear, to present one's self, § 374.
Aprisionār, to bind, to hold captive.
Aprovechār, to take advantage of, to avail one's self of.
Aproximārse, to approach, to draw near.
Aquēl, la, lo, that, that one, yonder.
Aquí, here.
Aragonés, a, Aragonese.
Ārbol, M., tree.
Arbolēda, F., row of trees; trees (coll.).
Ardēr, to burn.
Ardīd, M., cunning.
Ardiēndo, aglow, burning.
Argüīr, to argue, § 526.

Argüyo — *argüir.*
Arma, F., arm, weapon; branch of military service, § 81.
Armādo, a, armed.
Armazōn, M., frame, skeleton (without the cover).
Arte, M. and F., art, §§ 81, 94, *b.*
Arreglār, to arrange, to "fix," to put in order.
Arrepentīdo, a, repentant.
Arrestār, to arrest.
Arrība, up, above, up-stairs.
Arrojār, to throw, to throw away or down.
Arruinādo, a, in ruins.
Asegurār, to assure, to assert; *se asegūra,* it is asserted.
Asiēnto, M., seat, chair.
Aspēcto, M., appearance.
Asturiāno, a, Asturian.
Asustār, to frighten, to scare; to be dreadful.
Atājo, M., short-cut (of roads).
Atāque, M., attack.
Ataūd, M., casket, coffin.
Aterrār, to terrify, to frighten; reg. *aterro, aterras,* etc.
Atolladēro, M., bog, slough, mire; scrape, difficulty.
Atrapār, to catch.
Atrevērse, to dare, to presume, foll. by *d.*
Atrevīdo, a, bold; *es a.,* it is a piece of effrontery.
Auditōrio, M., audience.
Āula, F., public hall; university; court.
Āun, even.
Aūn, yet, still.
Āunque, although.
Aureo, a, golden.
Auto, M., judicial indictment; order for commitment; trial.
Autōr, M., author.
Avanzār, to advance, to come forward.
Ave María Purísima! bless me!
Avergonzādo, a, abashed, ashamed.
Averīgua — *averiguar.*
Averiguār, to find out.
Averīgüe — *averiguar.*
Averīguo — *averiguar.*
Aviār, to arrange, to put in order, to prepare.
Avíe — *aviar.*
Avīso, M., notice; *dar a.,* to notify, to give an alarm.
Ayēr, yesterday.
Ayudār, to aid, to help.
Azogādo, a, (a man or woman whose nervous system has been destroyed by work in a quicksilver mine); *temblar como un a.,* to tremble like a leaf.
Azōte, M., scourge, terror.
Azotēa, F., flat roof of southern houses, the terrace.
Azucēna, F., white lily.
Azūl, blue.

B.

Bacía, F., barber's basin.
Bailarīn, a, dancer, ballet girl.
Bāile, M., dance; ball.
Bajār, to go down, to come down (*d* with infinitive).
Bajo, a, low, short.
Baladí, of no value.
Balīdo, M., bleating of sheep.
Bandīdo, M., robber, marauder.
Baño, M., bath.
Barāja, F., pack of cards.

Barba, F., chin.
Barómetro, M., barometer.
Barōn, M., baron.
Barro, M., clay, mud; *lleno de b.*, muddy.
Bata, F., morning-gown.
Batālla, F., battle, engagement.
Baūl, M., trunk, box.
Bautīsmo, M., baptism.
Bēbe — *beber.*
Bebēr, to drink.
Bello, a, fair, beautiful.
Besār, to kiss; *besarle á uno la mano,* to salute any one.
Biēn, adv., well, very.
Biēn, M., good, blessing; PL., goods, property.
Bilbaīno, a, of Bilbao.
Bledo, M., a blade of corn; *me importa un b.*, I don't care a straw.
Boca, F., mouth, lips.
Boda, F., marriage, wedding.
Bolsīllo, M., pocket.
Bondād, F., goodness, kindness; *tener la b. de,* to be so good as to.
Bonīto, a, pretty.
Borceguí, M., buskin.
Bota, F., wine-bag.
Bribōn, M., rascal.
Brillānte, brilliant, magnificent.
Brūscamente, suddenly.
Buēno, a, good, well.
Bulto, M., bundle, package, lay-figure.
Burla, F., mockery, jest.
Burra, F., she-ass.
Busca, F., search, guest.
Buscār, to look for, to seek, to search; *ir á b.*, to go after or for; *enviar á b.*, to send for.
Busto, M., bust.

C.

Caballería, F., cavalry.
Caballēro, M., gentleman; (in direct address) sir.
Caballerōsamente, adv., politely, like a well bred gentleman.
Cabellēra, F., head of hair.
Cabēllos, M. PL., the hair of the head.
Cachōrro, M., whelp, cub.
Cada, each, every.
Cadēna, F., chain; *c. de hierro,* iron chain.
Cāe — *caer.*
Caēr, to fall, § 544.
Caērse, to fall down; *se le cae el pañuelo,* her handkerchief falls, she has let her handkerchief fall.
Caí — *caer.*
Caīda, F., fall.
Cāigo — *caer.*
Caldo, M., broth.
Calla! hush! be still! hold! stop!
Callār, to keep silent.
Calle, F., street.
Callēja, F., lane.
Cambiānte, M., changer; *c. de monedas,* money changer.
Camīno, M., road, way; *ponerse en c.*, to set out, to go.
Campanārio, M., church tower, belfry, spire.
Campanīlla, F., door-bell, service bell.
Campāña, F., campaign.
Campīña, F., country (around a city or village).
Campo, M., field; *esos campos,* the open fields.
Capturār, to take captive, to catch.
Carāmba, zounds!

Caridād, F., charity, love.
Cárlos, Charles.
Cartaginés, a, Carthaginian.
Casa, F., house.
Casār, to marry any one (to, *con*).
Casārse, to marry, to get married.
Cāsi, almost.
Caso, M., case; *hacer c. de,* to take notice, to pay attention (*de,* to).
Castellāno, a, Castilian.
Catalān, a, Catalonian.
Catarāta, F., cataract, deluge.
Caudāl, M., capital.
Caudalōso, a, swift-flowing (of a river); of abundant means.
Cāusa, F., cause; *á c. de,* on account of.
Caza, F., shooting; game.
Cedēr, to give way, to yield.
Célebre, celebrated, famous.
Cena, F., supper.
Ceñīr, to gird on.
Cepillīto, M., little brush (dim. of *cepillo*).
Cerca, adv., near; *c. de,* prep., near, close to, by.
Cerrār, to shut, to shut up; to lock (with a key).
Cesār, to cease, to stop; *la llūvia ha cesado,* it has stopped raining.
Ciēlo, M., sky, heaven.
Ciēn — *ciento.*
Ciēncia, F., science, knowledge.
Ciento, one hundred (before noun *cien*).
Cierto, a, sure, certain; a certain; *á c — a distancia,* at a certain distance, some distance off; *por c — o,* surely, indeed.
Cierra — *cerrar.*
Cincuēnta, fifty.
Cita, F., summons, engagement, citation.
Ciudād, F., town, city.
Ciudadāno, M., citizen.
Civīl, civil.
Clāramente, clearly.
Claro, a, clear, light; *es c.,* of course.
Clase, F., class; *de primera c.,* a first-class one.
Coche, M., carriage, car; *en c.,* by carriage.
Codīcia, F., greed, covetousness.
Cōima, F., hag.
Colār, to strain; to slip through, to slip in, § 476.
Colecciōn, F., collection.
Colocār, to set, to place; *c. bien,* to adjust properly.
Colocārse, to place one's self, to take one's place, § 371.
Colōr, M., color.
Comēd — *comer.*
Comēdia, F., a play.
Comenzār, to begin, foll. by *á* with an infinitive, § 469.
Comēr, to eat, to dine.
Comíamos — *comer.*
Comīda, F., dinner, meal.
Comiēnza — *comenzar.*
Como, as, since, like.
Cómo, how? how!
Compañía, F., company; *hacerle á uno c.,* to keep one company.
Complēto, a, complete, full.
Cómplice, M., accomplice.
Componēr, to repair, to mend, § 553.
Comprendēr, to understand.
Con, with.
Conde, M., earl.
Condēsa, F., countess.

Condūcta, F., behavior.
Confesār, to confess, to acknowledge, § 461.
Confiādo, a, trusting, relying.
Confūso, a, confused, confounded.
Conmīgo, with me [*mecum*].
Conmovīdo, a, pitiful.
Conocēr, to be acquainted with, to become acquainted with, to know, to make one's acquaintance, § 374.
Conōzco — *conocer.*
Cōnque or **con que,** so then.
Conquēnse, of Cuenca.
Conseguīdo, a, succeeded in; *se ha c.*, they have s. in (w. inf.).
Conseguīr, to attain, to succeed in, § 516.
Consējo, M., counsel, advice.
Consentīr, to consent, § 499.
Conservār, to preserve.
Consiēnte — *consentir.*
Consīga — *conseguir.*
Consīgo — *conseguir.*
Consīgo, with him (her, them, you) [*secum*].
Consistīr, to consist (*en*, of).
Consolār, to comfort, § 476.
Consonānte, F., consonant.
Construīr, to construct; to dig (a trench); *se construyen*, are constructed, § 522.
Construyen — *construir.*
Consuēla — *consolar.*
Contento, a, satisfied, pleased.
Contīgo, with thee, with you [*tecum*].
Continúa — *continuar.*
Continuaciōn, F., continuation, continued, of a story.
Continuār, to continue, to go on.
Contínuo, a, continuous.
Contraīdo, a, contracted, drawn up, distorted.
Contrariedād, F., disappointment, unfortunate circumstance.
Contrārio, a, contrary; *al c.*, on the contrary.
Convertīr, to convert, to transform, § 502.
Convirtió — *convertir.*
Copiār (**cōpio, as, a**), to copy.
Corazōn, M., heart, valor; *de todo c.*, with all one's heart; (with verb *sentir*) deeply.
Cordobēs, a, Cordovese, of Córdova.
Cordōn, M., cord; *c. de la campanilla*, bell-pull.
Coro, M., choir.
Corōna, F., crown.
Corpulento, a, immense, of a large trunk (as a cork-tree).
Corredōr, M., runner, agent.
Corrēr, to run, to be quick.
Corriēndo — *correr.*
Corro, M., group, knot.
Córtes, F. PL., the Spanish Parliament.
Cortīna, F., curtain.
Cosa, F., thing; *no es c. de*, there is no question of.
Cosīta, F., little thing, trifle.
Costār, to cost, § 473.
Costūmbre, F., custom, habit.
Crēe — *creer.*
Creēr, to believe, to think, to suppose; to be assured, to rest assured, § 549, *b.*
Creí — *creer.*
Creía — *creer.*
Creīdo, a, believed.
Creīmos — *creer.*
Creyēra — *creer.*

Criāda, F., maid, servant.
Criādo, M., servant.
Crímen, M., crime.
Crimināl, adj., criminal; *hombre c.*, criminal.
Cristāl, M., window-pane, pane of glass.
Cruēl, cruel.
Cuál, which? what?
Cualquiēra, any one, any.
Cuando, when, since; *de c.*, since the time when.
Cuándo, when?
Cuantiōso, a, large, copious.
Cuanto, a, as much, as many.
Cuánto, a, how much? how many?
Cuarēnta, forty.
Cuāsi or **casi**, almost.
Cuatro, four.
Cubiērto, a, covered (*de*, with).
Cubo, M., pail.
Cuchillo, M., (table) knife.
Cuela — *colar*.
Cuero, M., leather.
Cuestiōn, F., question, matter.
Cuidādo, M., care.
Cuidadōso, a, careful.
Cuita, F., woe.
Cuota, F., share, scot.
Curiosidād, F., curiosity.
Curiōso, a, inquisitive; neat.
Custodiār, to guard, to accompany, as a guard.

CH.

Chico, a, little; a little boy or girl.
Chisme, M., implement, tool, thing.
Chorro, M., stream of water.
Chucho, M., kind of owl.
Chulo, M., boy of the ring, bull-fighter.
Chusma, F., crowd, rabble.

D.

Daño, M., injury, harm.
Dar, to give; to hit, to strike; to take, § 543.
Dardo, M., dart.
Dé — *dar*.
Debajo de, under, beneath; *por d. de*, (along) under.
Debēr, to owe; to be to; ought, must.
Decidīdo, a, decided, resolved (*á*, to).
Decīr, to say, to tell; to mean; *digo que*, I mean that; *es d.*, that is to say, § 539.
Dedo, M., finger, toe.
Defensa, F., defense.
Definīr, to define, to explain; *vamos á d.*, let us explain.
Degollādo, a, beheaded; *ser d.*, to be beheaded, to have one's throat cut [*gola*].
Dejār, to leave; *d. de*, to leave off, to cease.
Delēite, M., joy, pleasure.
Deliciōso, a, delightful.
Delīrio, M., delirium; *con d.*, wildly, madly, passionately.
Demōnio, heavens!
Dentro de, within; *por d.*, on the inside.
Derecha, F., right (hand); *á la d.*, to the right, on the right.
Desāgüe, M., drainage.
Desahūcio, M., ejectment.
Desaparecēr, to disappear.
Desbordamiēnto, overflowing, inundation.
Descanso, M., rest; *sin d.*, without cessation, incessantly.

Descargār, to fall with fury (*sobre*, upon), § 371.
Descolgār, to take down (anything suspended), § 483.
Desconocīdo, a, unknown; a stranger.
Descripciōn, F., description.
Descuēlga — *descolgar*.
Desde, from, since; *d.* — *hasta* or *á*, from — to; *d. alli*, from there; *d. aquí*, from here, hence.
Desdicha, F., misfortune.
Deseār (desēo, as, a), to desire, to wish.
Desempeñār, to discharge; to act, to play.
Desengāño, M., disillusion, disenchantment; *proporcionārle á uno un d.*, to undeceive one.
Desesperaciōn, F., despair, desperation; *amorosa d.*, desperation on account of love.
Desesperādo, a, in despair.
Desesperār, to put in despair, discourage.
Desgraciādo, a, unfortunate, lamentable.
Deslīz, M., delinquency, slip.
Despedīr, to dismiss, § 512.
Despejādo, a, clear, free from clouds or obstacles.
Despīde — *despedir*.
Despojār, to despoil, to strip, to rob.
Despuēs, afterward, subsequently; *despues de*, prep., after; *despues que*, conj., after.
Destacamēnto, M., detachment.
Destrēza, F., dexterity, cunning, shrewdness.
Destrozār, to break up; to carry away, § 371.
Detendrá — *detener*.
Detenēr, to detain, § 536.
Detenērse, to stop, § 536.
Detrás, behind; *d. de*, behind, beyond.
Dēudo, M., relative.
Dí — *decir* and *dar*.
Dia, M., day.
Dibujār, to sketch, to draw.
Dibūjo, M., drawing, sketching.
Diccionārio, M., dictionary.
Dice — *decir*.
Dīcen — *decir*.
Dicho, a, said, told (*decir*).
Dichōso, a, happy, fortunate, blessed.
Difícil, difficult; not likely.
Diga — *decir*.
Digo — *decir*.
Dijīste — *decir*.
Dilūvio, M., flood, deluge.
Dinēro, M., money.
Diōs, God; *D. mio*, dear me!
Diría — *decir*.
Dirigīrse, to direct one's self, to proceed (*á*, toward), § 375.
Discurso, M., speech; *d. de siempre*, old story.
Disfrutār, to enjoy.
Disimūlo, M., simulation; *con d.*, slyly.
Dispensār, to excuse; *V. dispēnse*, pardon, beg pardon.
Disponīble, to dispose of, to spare.
Distancia, F., distance; *á cierta d.*, at a certain distance off.
Distinguīdo, a, distinguished, high born (*distingué, guée*).
Distinguīr, to descry; *se distingue*, is visible, § 376.
Distracciōn, F., something to occupy one's mind.

Divertīr, to amuse, § 502.
Divierte — *divertir.*
Doble, double.
Doce, twelve; *las d.*, twelve o'clock, noon, midnight.
Doliente, grieving, pitiful.
Dolōr, M., pain, grief.
Doncella, F., lady's maid.
Donde, where; *¿dónde?* where?
Droguería, herb-shop; (Spanish America, drug-store).
Ducho, a, clever, skilful.
Duda, F., doubt; *sin d.*, doubtless, of course; *no hay d.*, there is no doubt of it, it is certain.
Duelo, M., pain; mourning [Fr. *deuil*].
Dulzūra, F., sweetness; *con d.*, affably.
Durar, to last.

E.

Ébano, M., ebony.
Echār, to throw, to toss; *echar á* and *echarse á*, to begin to (foll. by an infinitive).
Edād, F., age, number of years.
Educaciōn, F., education; *buena e.*, good manners, courtesy.
Educādo, a, educated; *bien e.*, well bred.
Efecto, M., effect; *en e.*, indeed you have; in fact.
Ejecutārse, to be effected, executed.
El que, he who, the one who.
Elefānte, M., elephant.
Elemento, M., element.
Embarcadēro, M., station, landing.
Embargo — **sin e.**, notwithstanding, still.
Embūdo, M., funnel.
Emociōn, F., emotion.
Empeñārse, to persist (*en*, in), to insist (*en*, on).
Empezār, to begin (by, *con*), foll. by *á* with an infinitive, § 469.
Empiece — *empezar.*
Empiecen — *empezar.*
Empiezo — *empezar.*
Empíreo, a, celestial.
Empleār, to employ, to use, to make use of; *se emplēa*, is used.
En, in, into, at, on.
Encontrār, to meet with, to find, to come upon casually; refl., to find one's self, to be.
Enganchār, to harness up, to put the horses to the carriage; *haz que engānchen en seguīda*, have the carriage made ready at once.
Engaña — *engañar.*
Engañār, to deceive.
Engāñe — *engañar.*
Engāño, M., deception.
Enjuāgue, M., finger-bowl.
Enjūto, a, dry, thin.
Enmendār, to amend, to correct, § 459.
Enrēdo, M., plot, snarl.
Enseñār, to teach; to show.
Enseñe — *enseñar.*
Entender, to understand, to hear, § 471.
Entiēndes — *entender.*
Entónces, then.
Entrār, to go in, to come in, to enter.
Entre, between (two), among (several); *entre sí*, together.
Epístola, F., letter, epistle.
Época, F., period, epoch.
Equivocārse, to be mistaken; *me he equivocādo*, I made a mistake.

Era — *ser*.
Erguīdo, a, erect, with head set back.
Errōr, M., error, mistake.
Es — *ser*.
Escala, F., steps, ladder.
Escalēra, F., staircase, ladder.
Escampār, to stop raining.
Escapārse, to get away, to escape.
Escāpe — *á escape*, quick; *irse á e.*, to be off.
Escēna, F., scène; stage.
Escocēs, a, Scotch, Scotsman, (or woman).
Escopēta, F., musket.
Escribīr, to write, § 561.
Escuálido, a, squalid.
Escuēla, F., school.
Ese, esa, eso, that (where you are, which you have, or which you say).
Eslabōn, M., link of a chain; flint.
Eso, that (thing); *eso es*, that's it.
Espācio, M., space, period; *por e. de*, during, for.
Espantār, to scare, to terrify.
Españōl, a, Spanish, a Spaniard.
Especiāl, peculiar, extraordinary.
Especialmente, especially.
Espectáculo, M., sight, view, display.
Esperanza, F., hope, encouragement.
Esperār, to expect; to wait, to wait for, to await.
Espiōcha, F., pickaxe.
Está — *estar*.
Estāba — *estar*.
Establecēr, to establish, to construct (as a parallel), § 374.
Estaciōn, F., station, "depot," (Fr. *gare*).
Estado, M., state, condition.
Estār, to be (incidentally or temporarily); to be in, at home, § 382.
Estátua, F., statue; effigy.
Estatūra, F., stature, height.
Este, esta, esto, this.
Estóico, stoic; stoical.
Estorbār, to disturb, to be in one's way.
Estōy — *estar*.
Estremēño. See *Extremeño*.
Estrépito, M., loud noise, crash; *con e.*, with a crash, noisily.
Eterno, a, unceasing, eternal.
Euro (é-u-ro), M., Eurus.
Eurōpa, F., Europe.
Exacto, a, exact.
Exagerār, to exaggerate; *se exagēra*, they exaggerate, it is exaggerated.
Excelēnte, excellent, first rate.
Exhortār, to exhort.
Expedīto, a, cleared, put in running order (of trains).
Experimentādo, a, experienced.
Extraño, a, strange.
Extremeño, a, of Extremadūra or Estremadūra.
Exultār (seldom), for *exultārse*, to exult.

F.

Facciōso, M., rebel (Carlist).
Fagīna, F., fascine (long fagot for military defense).
Faltār, to lack, to be wanting; *falta el tiempo*, there is no time (*para*, to, for).
Falúa, F., marine launch, felucca.
Famīlia, F., family.
Famoso, a, famous, notorious.

Farsa, F., farce.
Fastidiārse (fastīdio, as, a), to be weary (*de*, of).
Fastīdio, M., *ennui*.
Fautōr, M., abettor.
Fealdād, F., ugliness, plainness; *mōnstruo de f.*, prodigiously ugly looking.
Febrēro, M., February.
Felīz, happy.
Feo, a, ugly, plain, "homely."
Fēria, F., fair.
Fēudo, M., fief.
Figurārse, to fancy, to imagine, to picture to one's self.
Fijamente, without fail.
Fila, F., row.
Fin, M., end; *al fin*, at last, at length.
Fingīr, to pretend, to feign, § 375.
Fino, a, polite, elegant.
Flamēnco, a, Fleming.
Forma, F., form; *en f. de*, in the form of.
Fortūna, F., good fortune.
Frāgua, F., forge.
Fraguār, to forge, § 372.
Fragüe — *fraguar*.
Fraile, M., friar.
Francēs, a, French, Frenchman or woman.
Franco, a, frank.
Franquēza, F., frankness; *con f.*, frankly, openly.
Frenesí, M., frenzy; *con f.*, wildly, passionately.
Frente, F., forehead; *f. á*, in front of, before.
Fresco, a, fresh, cool; recent.
Fuego, M., fire.
Fuera — *ser* and *ir*.
Fuera, outside; *desde f.*, from without; *por f.*, outside, from the outside.
Fuero, M., privilege.
Fuerte, strong, powerful; *fuertes golpes*, hard blows.
Fuerza, F., strength; *por f.* or *á la f.*, by force.
Fuese — *ser* and *ir*.
Fuí — *ser* and *ir*.
Funciōn, F., office; PL., *id.*
Funda, F., cover for furniture, etc. (Fr. *housse*, *étui*.)
Fūria, F., fury; *con f.*, furiously.
Furiōso, a, furious, in a fury.
Furōr, fury; *con f.*, furiously.
Fusīl, M., gun.

G.

Gaditāno, a, of Cadiz.
Galānte, polite, courteous, pleasing to ladies.
Galantēa — *galantear*.
Galanteār, to court ladies' society, to play the beau.
Galantēe — *galantear*.
Galantēo — *galantear*.
Galería, F., gallery.
Galgo, M., grey-hound.
Gallēgo, a, Galician.
Ganga, F., bargain.
Gastār, to spend; to waste; to wear (a garment).
Gato, M., cat.
Gaviōn, M., gabion (a cylindrical wicker basket, open at both ends, used, filled with earth, for defense).
Generāl, M., general.
Gengībre, M., ginger. (Some spell *jengibre*.)

Gēnio, M., disposition, genius.
Gente, F., people; PL., *id.; las gentes del pais,* the people of the locality; the country people.
Gesto, M., gesture, movement.
Giro, M., whirl, turn; draft.
Gitāno, M., gypsy.
Gloria, F., glory, honor; *ángel de la g.,* an angel in paradise.
Golpe, M., blow; *dar un g.,* to strike; *fuertes g—s,* hard blows (*en,* on).
Gótico, a, Gothic.
Gozo, M., joy.
Grācias, F. PL., thanks, thank you.
Gran—*grande.*
Granadīno, a, of Granada.
Grande, great, large (before a noun sing., *gran*).
Grāvemente, seriously.
Greda, F., chalk.
Grieta, F., crevice.
Grito, M., cry, shout; *dar un g.,* to utter a cry.
Grueso, a, thick, heavy, big.
Grulla, F., crane.
Guapo, a, pretty.
Guardārse, to put away, to put (in one's pocket).
Guārdia, F., guard; M., guard.
Guarīda, F., den, lair.
Guedēja, F., lock of hair.
Guerra, F., war.
Guia, F., guide.
Guiōn, M., hyphen.
Guipuzcoāno, a, a Basque from Guipúzcoa.
Guisāntes, M. PL., peas.
Guitārra, F., guitar.
Gula, F., gluttony.
Gustarle á uno, to please any one, to like, p. 420; *me gusta,* I like; *cuando V. guste,* when you like.
Gusto, M., taste, pleasure.

H.

Haba, F., bean.
Habēis—*haber.*
Habēr, to have (only as an *auxiliary*), § 351.
Había, there was, there were, § 354.
Había—*haber.*
Hablād—*hablar.*
Hablādo, a, spoken, talked.
Hablār, to speak, to talk (*á,* to; *con,* with; *de,* of).
Hace—*hacer.*
Hace, it is; ago; *h.*—*que,* it is—since; *h. un momento,* a moment ago; *h. poco,* a short time ago, a while ago.
Hacēr, to make, to do, to cause, to be; *hacer pedazos,* to break in pieces; *h. caso,* to take notice, to pay attention, § 530.
Hacērse, to be made, to become; to pretend to be, to dissemble; *se hace la sorda,* pretends not to hear.
Hácia, toward, in the direction of.
Hago—*hacer.*
Halagüēño, a, flattering, charming.
Halla—*hallar.*
Hallār, to find.
Hallāzgo, M., discovery.
Han—*haber.*
Hará—*hacer.*
Hasta, until, up to, to; *desde*—*hasta* or *á,* from—to.
Hay—*haber,* § 354.
Haya—*haber,* § 354.
Haz—*hacer.*

Haz, F., bundle.
He — *haber*, § 351.
Hebrēo, a, Hebrew.
Hecho, a, made, done, caused, had — *hacer*.
Hería — *herir*.
Herīdo, a, wounded; *ser h.*, to be wounded.
Herīr, to wound, § 500.
Hermōso, a, beautiful, fine.
Héroe, M., hero.
Heróico, a, heroic.
Hice — *hacer*.
Hidalgo, M., gentleman.
Hielo, M., ice.
Hierro, M., iron; *camino de h.*, railway; PL., *hierros*, fetters, handcuffs.
Higo, M., fig.
Higo-chumbo, M., prickly-pear.
Hija, F., daughter.
Hijo, M., son, child; descendant.
Hilo, M., thread, linen.
Histōria, F., history, story.
Hizo — *hacer*.
Hollar, to trample, § 475.
Hombre, M., man.
Honra, F., honor.
Hora, F., hour, o'clock.
Horadādo, a, pierced.
Horizānte, M., horizon.
Horrorizār, to terrify, § 371.
Horrorōso, a, horrible.
Hospitalidād, F., hospitality.
Hoy, to-day; at the present day.
Hubiēse — *haber*.
Hūbo — *haber*, § 354.
Huello — *hollar*.
Huīda, F., flight.
Huir, to flee, § 522.
Huirēis — *huir*.
Hule, M., oil-cloth.
Húmedo, a, damp, wet.
Humīlde, lowly, humble.
Humōr, M., spirits, humor; *de mal h.*, ill naturedly, in ill humor.
Hurto, M., theft.
Huso, M., spindle.

I.

Idēa, F., idea; *qué i.*, what a happy thought!
Ido, a, gone — *ir* or *irse*.
Iglēsia, F., church.
Iguāl, like, the same as, foll. by *d.*
Imbuīdo, a, permeated.
Implacāble, inexorable.
Importār, to be important, to be of consequence; *importa*, it matters; *no i.*, never mind.
Imposīble, impossible, it cannot be.
Imprudēncia, F., indiscretion; *es una i.*, it is imprudent.
Inclinādo, a, inclined, bent over.
Inconveniēncia, F., impropriety; *es una i.*, it is inexpedient.
Increīble, incredible.
Indicār, to point out, to indicate, § 371.
Indio, a, Indian.
Indiscreto, a, indiscreet, imprudent.
Indudāble, undoubted, sure.
Infāme, infamous.
Infantería, F., infantry.
Infelīz, unfortunate; poor man.
Infierno, M., torture.
Infinīto, exceedingly.
Inflūjo, M., influence.
Ingeniēro, M., engineer; PL., corps of engineers.
Ingēnio, M., genius; talent.

Inglēs, a, English, Englishman or woman.
Inícuo, a, heinous.
Inmarcesīble, unfading.
Inmediāto, a, next.
Inmenso, a, boundless.
Inmortāl, immortal, undying.
Inquiēto, a, uneasy, anxious.
Insōmnio, M., sleeplessness; *noches de i.*, sleepless nights.
Insoportāble, intolerable.
Instānte, instant, moment; *al i.*, immediately, at once.
Instīnto, M., instinct.
Inteligēncia, F., intelligence.
Interesānte, interesting, of interest.
Inútil, useless.
Invitaciōn, F., invitation.
Ir, to go, § 552; *ir á*, to be going to (with infinitive); *ir á buscār*, to go after, for.
Irse, to go away, to go off, to be going; *vdse*, exit (in plays).
Irlandēs, a, Irish, Irishman or woman.
Irónico, a, sarcastic.
Irregulār, irregular.

J.

Jalēo, M., outcry, uproar.
Jamás, never, ever.
Jāula, F., cage.
Jerezāno, a, of Jerēz or Sherry.
Jesús, heavens!
Jóven, young man or woman, youth.
Juān, John.
Juēgo, M., play, game.
Juēz, M., judge.
Juīcio, M., judgment.
Jūlio, M., July.
Jūnio, M., June.
Jūnto, a, joined; together; *pagārlas todas juntas*, to pay off old scores, to make a final settlement.
Junto á, near.
Jura, F., oath taking; act of administering an oath.
Juzgār, to judge, § 371.
Juzgo — *juzgar*.

L.

Labradōr, M., farmer.
Lado, M., side; *á su l.*, by him, by her.
Lago, M., lake.
Lance, M., occasion; *el l. no ha sido para ménos*, the o. demanded it.
Largo, a, long.
Lástima, F., pity; *qué l.*, what a pity!
Lecciōn, F., lesson.
Leche, F., milk.
Lēe — *leer*.
Leēr, to read, § 549, *b*.
Lēgua, F., league.
Leīdo, a, read — *leer*.
Lējos, far, far off; *muy l.*, a good way off.
Leonēs, a, Leonese, of Leōn.
Lēudo, a, leavened.
Levantārse, to get up, to rise.
Levīta, F., frock-coat; *gente de l.*, middle and upper classes; *gastar l.*, to be a gentleman.
Ley, F., (PL., *leyes*), law.
Leyēndo — *leer*.
Libertād, F., liberty; *tomārse la l.*, to take the liberty (*de*, to).
Librār, to deliver, to set at liberty.
Libre, free, rid.
Libro, M., book; *l. de molde*, (printed) book; *l. de mano*, manuscript.

Licēo, M., Lyceum.
Lícito, a, allowed, lawful.
Límpio, a, clean, neat.
Línea, F., line.
Lisōnja, F., flattery.
Locūra, F., folly, piece of folly.
Lograr, to succeed in.
Longitūd, F., length.
Luego, then, next; presently.
Lugār, M., place, stead.

Ll.

Llama, F., flame.
Llamār, to call; to knock (*á*, at).
Llamārse, to be called, to be named; *se llama*, is called; *¿cómo se llama V.?* what is your name?
Llanto, M., weeping [*planctus*].
Llave, F., key.
Llegādo, a, arrived — *llegar*.
Llegār, to arrive, to come, § 371.
Lleno, a, full, filled (*de*, with).
Llevār, to carry, to take.
Llorōso, a, tearful.
Llovēr, to rain; *volver á ll.*, to rain again, § 418.
Llueve — *llover*.
Llūvia, F., rain; *grandes llūvias*, heavy rains, much rainy weather.

M.

Madrilēño, a, Madrilenian, of Madrid.
Magnífico, a, magnificent.
Mairēna, name of a town about sixteen miles from Seville, properly, *M. del Alcōr*.
Maitīnes, M. PL., matins.
Majuēlo, M., vine-patch newly planted or set out.
Malaguēño, a, of Málaga.
Maldād, F., evil, wickedness.
Malo, a, bad, evil; poor; ill (before a sing. noun masc., *mal*).
Manchēgo, a, of *La Mancha*.
Mandadēro, messenger, errand-boy.
Mandār, to order; to cause, have (anything done).
Manēra, F., manner, way; *de esta m.*, in this way.
Mano, F., hand; *besār la mano á*, to salute (a person).
Mañāna, F., morning; M., to-morrow.
Maragāto, a, a man or woman of Astorga.
Marcār, to mark, to indicate, § 371.
Marchār, to walk, to go.
Marchārse, to go away, to depart, to go.
Marchīto, a, withered.
Marēa, F., tide.
Márque — *marcar*.
Marquēs, M., marquis.
Marquēsa, F., marchioness.
Más, more, longer; *no — m.*, no longer; *no — más que*, only, nothing but.
Matār, to kill; to wear out.
Matrimōnio, M., marriage; man and wife.
Matritēnse, of Madrid.
Máxime, especially.
Mayo, M., May.
Mediadōr, M., mediator.
Mēdio, M., means; *de qué m.*, in what way?
Mēdio, a, half.
Mejōr, better; *sería m. que*, it would be better if, you had better.
Ménos, less; *lo m.*, the least thing; at least.
Mercēd, F., grace, favor.

Merecēr, to deserve, § 374.
Mes, M., month.
Mesa, F., table, writing desk, desk (in schools).
Metērse, to get (*en*, into).
Metro, M., metre.
Miēdo, M., fear; *tenēr m.*, to be afraid (*de*, to).
Miēntras, while.
Mil, a thousand.
Milāgro, M., miracle, wonder.
Militār, soldier, military officer.
Millōn, M., million.
Minūto, M., minute.
Mirāda, F., look, glance.
Mirār, to look, to see, to behold; *m. á*, to look at; *mire V.*, see, look.
Mismo, a, same, self; *lo m.*, the same (thing).
Modāles, M. PL., manners, style.
Modēlo, M., model, beau-ideal.
Modo, M., way, manner; *de m. que*, so that, so.
Momēnto, M., moment; *al m.*, this instant, instantly; *en estos m — s*, at present.
Monēda, F., coin, piece of money, small change, change.
Mōnstruo, M., monster; *m. de fealdād*, prodigiously ugly.
Montēra, F., hunting-cap; name of a central street in Madrid, leading from the Puerta del Sol to those of Fuencarrāl (pop. *Funcarrāl*) and Hortalēza.
Mordēr, to bite, § 490.
Morīr, to die, § 509.
Morīrse, to die, to give up.
Moro, M., Moor.
Mortāl, mortal.
Mortificār, to provoke, § 371.
Motīn, M., riot, disturbance.
Mozo, M., boy, waiter; *buen m.*, fine looking.
Muchācho, a, M. F., boy, girl.
Mucho, a, much, a good deal of; PL., many, a good many.
Mūcho, adv., much, greatly.
Muerdo — *morder*.
Muero — *morir* or *morirse*.
Mujēr, F., woman, wife.
Murciāno, a, of Mūrcia.
Murmūllo, M., murmur.
Musa, F., muse.
Muy, very.

N.

Nada, nothing, not anything, no!
Nadār, to swim.
Nādie, no one, not anyone.
Nado — *á nado*, swimming, by water.
Narānja, F., orange.
Narigōn, M., long-nosed.
Narīz, F., nose.
Narraciōn, F., story, recital.
Navarro, a, Navarrese.
Necesidād, F., need, necessity.
Necesitār, to need, to be in need of (generally foll. by *de*).
Negārse, to decline, to refuse (foll. by *á* with pron. or infin.), § 371.
Negro, a, black, dark.
Nēutro, M., neuter.
Ni, neither, nor, not; *no — ni — ni*, neither — nor, not — either — or; not even, not so much as.
Nieta, F., granddaughter.
Nieto, M., grandson.
Nīmio, a, excessive.
Ningūno, a, no, not any, not at all; no one, not anyone.

Niña, F., child, girl.
Niño, M., boy, child.
No, not, no.
Noble, noble, high-born.
Noche, F., night; *de n.*, by night, at night.
Nombrār, to mention by name, to speak a name; *sólo con nombrārle*, at the bare mention of his name.
Nombre, M., name.
Nosotros, as, we (men), we (women), us (after prep.).
Notār, to observe.
Notīcia, F., news, item, piece of news; PL., news.
Nubarrōn, M., great cloud, black cloud.
Nuevo, a, new.
Nulo, a, null, void.
Numerōso, a, numerous.
Nunca, never (with neg. verb if it follows verb).

Ñ.

Ñudo, M., knot.

O.

Objeto, M., object; *con o. de*, for the purpose of.
Obligaciōn, F., duty, obligation; *no tenēr o. de*, not to be supposed to.
Obligādo, a, compelled, forced (*á*, to).
Obra, F., work; *estar en o.*, to be in repairs, or repairing.
Ocupār, to occupy, to hold.
Ocupārse, to employ one's self (*en*, in, about).
Ocurrēncia, F., occurrence, incident, coincidence.
Ocurrīr, to happen, to be the matter; *¿qué ocurre?* what is the matter?
Ocho, eight.
Odiōso, a, hateful.
Odre, M., wine-skin.
Ofrecēr, to offer, § 374.
Ofrezco — *ofrecer*.
Oīd — *oir*.
Oīdo, a, heard; *o. decir*, heard say — *oir*.
Oīdo, M., hearing; ear.
Ōiga — *oir*.
Ōigo — *oir*.
Oīr, to hear, to listen, § 553.
Olōr, M., odor, smell.
Olvidār, to forget; refl. with *de*.
Opāco, a, opaque, dark.
Óptico, M., optician.
Órden, F., order (command); M., order (sequence).
Orgūllo, M., pride.
Origināl, M., extraordinary, peculiar.
Otro, a, other, another, other one.
Oye — *oir*.

P.

Paciēncia, F., patience.
Pagār, to pay; *pagārlas*, to pay for it, to "catch" it; *pagārlas todas juntas*, to settle for old scores, §§ 371, 753.
Paīs, M., country; district, region.
Pala, F., shovel.
Palābra, F., word (in discourse; a single word is *voz*, F.).
Palēnque, M., wrestling place, arena.
Palmāda, F., clap of the hands, applause.
Panzūdo, a, corpulent.

Pañuēlo, M., handkerchief; shawl (anything put over the head or shoulders).

Papēl, M., paper; newspaper; part, character (in a play); *hacer un p.*, to act a part, to cut a figure.

Papelīto, M., little paper; pop., paper segar.

Para, for; to, in order to, so as to; *p. que*, in order that, that, so that (subj.).

Parāguas, M., SING. and PL., umbrella.

Paralēla, F., parallel (a trench with a parapet constructed opposite the enemy's works).

Parēce, it appears, it seems—*parecer*.

Parecēr, to appear, to seem, § 374.

Parezco—*parecer*.

Parte, F., part; *por mi p.*, on my part, in me.

Pasa, F., raisin.

Pasādo, a, passed, spent; past, late.

Pasādo, M., past.

Pasār, to pass, to spend, to experience; to pass over; to pass anything (*por*, through).

Pasatiēmpo, M., pastime, passing amusement.

Pasiōn, F., passion.

Paso, M., step; *dar un p.*, to take a step.

Pedāzo, M., piece; *hacer pedazos*, to break in pieces.

Pedīr, to ask, to ask for, §§ 512, 753.

Pēine, M., comb.

Pelīgro, M., danger.

Penōso, a, painful, severe.

Pensār, to think, to reflect, to imagine; to intend; *p. en*, to think of, § 457.

Peña, F., cliff, rock. Proper name, Fr. *de la Roche*.

Peōr, worse; *lo peōr*, the worst.

Perdēr, to lose; to ruin, § 470.

Perdīdo, a, lost, ruined, undone.

Perdonār, to forgive.

Perfēctamente, perfectly.

Perfecto, a, perfect, complete.

Periódico, M., newspaper.

Permanecēr, to remain, § 374.

Permīso, M., permission; *pedir á uno p. para*, to ask leave to.

Permitīr, to allow, to permit (*que* with subj., to).

Pero, but; why.

Persōna, F., person; appearance.

Pertenecēr, to belong, § 374.

Pertenezco—*pertenecer*.

Pescār, to fish, to fish up, to catch (a fish), § 371.

Pesqué—*pescar*.

Pida—*pedir*.

Pide—*pedir*.

Pido—*pedir*.

Pié, M., foot; *á p.*, on foot.

Piensa—*pensar*.

Pintōr, M., painter.

Placēr, M., pleasure.

Placēr, to please; *place*, it pleases, § 545.

Plaza, F., square, market; fortress.

Plazca—*placer*.

Pluma, F., pen.

Pobre, poor, sorry, wretched.

Poco, a, small, little; PL., few; *un p.*, a little, slightly.

Podēmos—*poder*.

Podēr, to be able, can, may, § 532.

Podīdo, been able—*poder*.

Podrá, will be able, can—*poder*.

Ponēr, to put, to place, to lay; to put in; *p. la mano*, to lay one's hand (*en*, on), § 533.
Ponērse, to become, to get; *p. bien con*, to get on good terms with; *p. bueno* or *malo*, to be well or ill; *p. en camīno*, to start off, to set out, to go.
Poquīto, very little, rather, somewhat.
Por, by, for, through, along, over.
Pormenōres, M. PL., particulars, details.
Pōrque, because, for (consequence).
Porqué and **Por qué**, why?
Posible, possible.
Posta, F., post; *ir por la p.*, to go by express.
Practicārse, to be constructed, § 371.
Preciōso, a, precious, valuable; magnificent, superb.
Precīso — *es p.*, it is necessary.
Preferīr, to prefer, § 500.
Prefiēro — *preferir*.
Prendēr (pp. *preso*), to arrest, to seize, to take.
Preparār, to prepare, to arrange; *prepararlo todo*, to get everything in readiness.
Presāgio, M., prophecy.
Presēncia, F., presence.
Presentār, to present.
Preso, a, arrested, taken — *prender; darse p.*, to surrender.
Prestār, to lend.
Primēro, a, first; *lo p.*, the first thing.
Princīpio, M., beginning; *al p.*, at first.
Prisa, F., haste; *tener p.*, to be in a hurry (*por* or *para*, to).
Prisionēro, M., prisoner.
Procurār, to try, to seek (*de*, to).
Profundidād, F., depth.
Prolongār, to prolong, to lengthen out, § 371.
Pronto, quick, soon; *más p.*, quicker.
Prōpio, a, self, own.
Proporcionār, to bestow, to afford, to give.
Próximamente, approximately.
Próximo, a, near, next.
Proyecto, M., plan, purpose; *tener el p. de*, to purpose.
Prueba, F., proof, trial; essay.
Público, M., public.
Pudrīr, to decay, § 510.
Pueblo, M., village; town; people.
Puede, may, can, is able — *poder*.
Puedo, *no p.*, I cannot — *poder*.
Puerta, F., door, gate.
Puēs, then, well, why; *p. bien*, well.
Puesto, a — *poner* and *ponerse*.
Puesto que, since.
Punto, M., point; moment.
Purēza, F., purity, virtue.

Q.

Que, who, which, whom; that, since; until; let (with subj.).
Qué, what? what! how!
Quedār, to remain, to be left; *q. d.*, to keep; *quedarse con.*, to keep.
Quema, F., burn, scorching.
Querēlla, F., feud.
Querēr, to wish, to want, to like; will, § 534.
Querīdo, a, dear.
Queso, M., cheese.
Quiēn, who; after a prep., whom.
Quién, who? whom?
Quiere — *querer*.

Quiero — *querer.*
Quieto, a, quiet, still.
Química, F., chemistry.
Quiniēntos, as, five hundred.
Quinta, F., summer-house.
Quīse — *querer.*
Quisiēra — *querer.*
Quīso — *querer.*
Quizás, or **quizá,** perhaps (subj.).

R.

Rapto, M., burst.
Rarēza, F., eccentricity.
Raro, a, odd, curious, strange.
Rasgo, M., dash, stroke.
Rato, M., while.
Ratīto, M., little while, moment.
Raudāl, M., torrent, rapid.
Raza, F., race, stock.
Razōn, F., reason; *tener r.*, to be right.
Real, M., a rial or royal (5 cts. in Spain, and 10 cts. in Cuba).
Recibīr, to receive.
Recogēr, to gather up, to pick up, § 375.
Recōja — *recoger.*
Recordār, to remember, § 474.
Recuerdo — *recordar.*
Recuerdo, M., recollection, memory, thought; *su r.*, the thought of him.
Recūrso, M., resource, recourse, convenience.
Red, F., net.
Refugiārse, to take refuge (*en*, in).
Regīr, to rule, § 515.
Regīstro, M., record.
Regulār, usual.
Reí — *reir.*
Reinādo, M., reign.
Rēino, M., kingdom.
Reīr and **reīrse,** to laugh (*de*, at), § 520.
Relój (more often now, *relō*), M., watch, clock.
Remēdio, M., remedy; *no hay más r. que*, the only way is to.
Rendīja, F., opening, rent, crevice.
Rendīrse, to surrender, § 513.
Renunciār, to give up, to abandon (foll. by *á*).
Reñīr, to quarrel, to fight, § 518.
Reparaciōn, F., amends, satisfaction.
Representār, to appear to be of (such an age).
Resignaciōn, F., patience.
Resignārse, to be resigned.
Respetār, to respect.
Resto, M., the remainder; PL., remains.
Retenēr, to hold, to keep, § 536.
Retirārse, to withdraw, to disappear.
Retrāso, M., backwardness; *llegar con r.* (of a train), to be behind, to be late.
Reunīr, to gather.
Revolvēr, to turn upside down, to ransack, § 491.
Revuelto, a — *revolver.*
Rey, M., king.
Ricachōn, very rich.
Rico, a, rich.
Rie — *reir* or *reirse.*
Rige — *regir.*
Rincōn, M., corner.
Rinconcīto, M., little corner, nook
Rindo, me — *rendirse.*
Riña, F., quarrel, fight.
Rio — *reir* or *reirse.*
Rio, M., river.
Robo, M., robbery, theft.

Rodilla, F., knee; *de r — s*, on one's knees.
Rogār, to request, to beg, to beseech, § 483.
Romántico, a, romantic, full of romance.
Rompēr, to break; refl., to be broken.
Rota, F., rout, defeat.
Roto, a — *romper*, § 571.
Rueda, F., wheel,
Ruego — *rogar*.
Ruego, M., request.
Ruīdo, M., noise, tumult.
Ruidōso, a, boisterous, noisy.

S.

Sabe, knows; *se s.*, is known — *saber*.
Sabēr, to know, to know how, to learn; to be able, can, § 535.
Sabrás — *saber*.
Sacār, to take out; to take down, § 371.
Sacudīd, shake ye — *sacudir*.
Sacudīr, to shake.
Salīr, to go out, to come out, to go away, to go, to start to leave; to get out of, to escape from (with *de*); to set out from, to leave, to start (foll. by *de*, from), § 554.
Salvārse, to save one's self, to be saved.
Santiguārse, to make the sign of the cross, § 372.
Santīguo — *santiguarse*.
Santo, a, holy; *cielo s.*, heavens!
Santo, a, M. and F., saint.
Sañūdo, a, full of wrath.
Satisfacciōn, F., satisfaction, atonement, amends.
Satisfacēr, to satisfy, § 531.
Satisfēcho, a, satisfied, contented, pleased — *satisfacer*.
Sé — *saber*.
Sēa — *ser*.
Seguía — *seguir*.
Seguīda — *en s.*, at once, immediately.
Seguīr, to follow, to take (advice); to go on, § 516.
Segūn, according to, according as, as.
Segūro, a, sure; *de s — o*, surely, certainly.
Semejānza, F., likeness, similarity.
Semi-doble, half-double.
Sencīllo, a, simple, plain, single.
Sentārse, to sit down, § 459.
Sentīr, to perceive by the senses, to feel, to hear (as steps); to regret, to be sorry, § 499.
Seña, F., sign, address; standard.
Señōr, M., sir, gentleman, Mr.
Señora, F., madam, Mrs., the lady, mistress (of the house).
Sēpan — *saber*.
Ser, to be (absolutely, of what is permanent, inherent), § 385.
Sér, M., being; soul, individual.
Servīcio, M., service.
Servīr, to serve; *s. en*, to be of (a branch of public service), § 513.
Sevilla, F., Seville (pron. *sĕv'-il*, and not *se-vill*, because from *Hispalis*, and Arab. *Isbilia*, so that *ville* is not separate from the stem); *tren de S.*, Seville train.
Sevillāno, a, of Seville.
Sexo, M., sex.
Si, if, whether; why.
Sí, yes.
Sido, been — *ser*.

Siempre, always, ever; *para s.*, for ever; *de s.*, eternal; continuing to (verb).
Siēn, F., temple, forehead; *las sienes*, the temples.
Sienta — *sentarse* and *sentir*.
Siéntese V., sit down — *sentarse*.
Sienten — *sentir* and *sentarse*.
Siento — *sentir* and *sentarse*.
Significār, to signify, to mean, § 371.
Significatīvo, a, significant.
Sigue — *seguir*.
Siguen — *seguir*.
Sin, without; *sin que*, without (that).
Sino, but; *no — sino*, only.
Siquiēra, even; *ni s.*, not even.
Sirgo, M., twisted silk.
Sirvió — *servir*.
Sitiādo, a, besieged.
Sitiadōr, besieger.
Sobre, on, upon, above, over; *s. todo*, above all.
Sobrīno, M., nephew.
Socorro, M., help.
Sol, M., sun.
Soldādo, M., soldier.
Soledād, F., solitude, lonely situation.
Solo, a, single, alone, only.
Sólo, adv., only.
Sombrerēro, M., hatter.
Sombrēro, M., hat.
Sombrío, a, gloomy, morose.
Somos — *ser*.
Son — *ser*.
Sonrīsa, F., smile.
Soplār, to blow.
Sordo, a, deaf; *hacerse la sorda*, to pretend not to hear.
Sortīja, F., (jewelled) ring.
Sospechār, to suspect.
Soy — *ser*.
Su, his, her, its, one's, your, their.
Subīr, to go up, to come up; to go up stairs, up the steps; to come up stairs, up the steps.
Sucedēr, to happen.
Sucedido, a, happened.
Suelo, M., ground, floor; *al s.*, on the floor, down.
Sueño, M., dream.
Sufrīr, to endure.
Supiese — *saber*.
Suplicār, to beg, to request, § 371.
Susto, M., fright, scare.
Suyo, a, his, hers, its, yours.

T.

Tahūr, M., gambler.
Tal, such, such a.
Tambiēn, also, too; likewise.
Tampōco, and — not, nor.
Tan, as, so.
Tanto, a, as much — many, so much — many; *por t.*, therefore, consequently.
Tapicēro, M., upholsterer.
Tarde, F., afternoon.
Tarde, adv., late.
Tasājo, M., flitch of bacon.
Taza, F., cup (coffee or tea).
Tejuēlo, M., lettering on the back of a book.
Tela, F., cloth (cotton or linen), material, covering.
Tema, M., theme, subject, talk; old story; exercise.
Temblār, to tremble, § 463.
Temblorōso, a, tremulously.
Temēr, to fear, to be afraid.
Temerārio, a, rash, fool-hardy.
Tempestād, F., storm, violent storm.

Tendēr, to stretch, to spread (as a net), § 471.
Tendrá — *tener*.
Tendría — *tener*.
Tenēr, to have; to take; *t. que*, to have to, § 536.
Tenga — *tener*.
Tenīdo — *tener*.
Teniēnte, M., lieutenant.
Tentār, to try; to tempt, § 459.
Teñīdo, a, dyed — *teñir*, § 518.
Terrēno, M., ground.
Terrīble, terrible.
Tertūlia, F., party, company.
Tia, F., aunt.
Tiempo, M., time; weather; *más t.*, longer.
Tienda, F., shop, "store"; *en la t. de*, at —'s; *á la t. de*, to —'s.
Tienes — *tener*.
Tientan — *tentar*.
Tierra, F., earth, land, soil.
Tilīn — *hacerle á uno t.*, to make one tingle.
Timbre, M., stamp; hand-bell.
Tinta, F., ink.
Tio, M., uncle.
Tira, F., strip.
Tirār, to pull (*de*, at).
Todavía, yet, still; *t. un*, *una*, another.
Todo, a, all, the whole; M., everything; *todo lo que*, all that.
Toledāno, a, of Toledo.
Tomār, to take, to take up (as a book); *t. por*, to take any one for.
Tomārse (*la libertād de*), to take (the liberty to).
Tontería, F., folly, nonsense.
Torēo, M., bull-fighting.
Tormenta, F., tempest.
Toro, M., bull.
Torre, F., tower.
Torrente, M., torrent; *á torrentes*, in torrents.
Tortuōso, a, winding.
Trabajadōr, M., laborer.
Trabajār, to work.
Trabājo, M., work; PL., operations; *t — s de zapa*, undermining operations.
Trāe — *traer*.
Traēr, to bring, to carry; to contain (of a newspaper), § 537.
Tragēdia, F., tragedy.
Traīdo — *traer*.
Trāigo — *traer*.
Trajēsen — *traer*.
Trājo — *traer*.
Tranquīlo, a, quiet, calm; at ease.
Transitār, to go, to make one's way.
Tratār, to try (*de*, to).
Travēs — *á t. de*, through, across.
Trazādo, a, traced, carried (*sobre*, along) — *trazar*.
Trazar, to trace, § 371.
Trēinta, thirty.
Tren, M., train.
Trinchēra, F., intrenchment.
Triste, sad.
Triunfār, to triumph, to get the better (*de*, over, of).
Tropelía, F., outrage.
Trueno, M., a clap of thunder, thunder; PL., peals of thunder, thunder.
Trujo — *traer*.
Tubo, M., lamp chimney.
Tudēnse, of Tuy (learned).
Tudés, a, of Tuy (popular).
Tunānte, M., rascal.
Tuviēra — *tener*.

Tūvo — *tener.*
Tuyo, a, thine.

U.

Último, a, last, final.
Único, a, only; *lo ú.*, the only (thing).
Unido, a, united, connected (*entre sí*, together, to each other).
Unir, to join, to unite.
Universāl, universal.
Unos, as, some (usually omitted in Eng.), a few.
Uso, M., use.
Ustēd, your worship, you.

V.

Va — *ir* and *irse.*
Vacía — *vaciar.*
Vaciār, to empty.
Vaivēn, M., vibration, oscillation; undulation. [*Va y ven*, go and come.]
Valenciāno, a, Valencian.
Valīdo, M., confidential minister, king's favorite.
Valōr, M., courage.
Valle, M., valley.
Vallisoletāno, a, of Valladolid.
Vāmos, let us go, let us come; come! come now! *vamos á*, let us —. From *ir.*
Van — *ir* or *irse.*
Vara, F., cane, stick; yard (meas.).
Variār, to change, to vary, to alter; *v. de parecer*, to change one's opinion.
Varío — *variar.*
Varōn, M., man; male.
Vascuēnce, Basque language.
Váse, exit — *irse.*
Vate, M., bard, poet.
Vaya — *ir*, indeed! of course! *vaya sí* — of course I do, I will!
Vé — *ir;* **véte** — *irse.*
Ve — *ver.*
Veces, F. PL., times; *dos v.*, twice.
Ved — *ver.*
Vēinte, twenty.
Vellūdo, a, hairy, shaggy.
Vendrá — *venir.*
Venga — *venir; dile que v.*, tell him to come.
Vengārse, to avenge one's self (*de*, of, on), § 371.
Venīr, to come, § 541.
Ventāna, F., window; *los cristales de la v.*, window panes.
Veo — *ver.*
Ver, to see; *vamos á v.*, let us see, § 548.
Verse, to be (substitute of *estar*).
Verāno, M., summer.
Vēras — *de v.*, truly! indeed!
Verdād, F., truth; *en v.*, truly; *en v. que*, truly I —.
Verdadēro, a, true, genuine, downright.
Véte — *irse.*
Vez, F., a time; *otra v.*, again, once more; *de una v.*, at once, once for all.
Via, F., track (of a railway).
Viaje, M., journey; travelling.
Viajēro, M., traveller, passenger.
Vīcio, M., vice; bad habit.
Victōria, F., victory; hurrah!
Vida, F., life.
Vidriēro, M., glazier.
Viejo, a, old.
Viene — *venir.*
Viento, M., wind.

Viña, F., vineyard.
Violēncia, F., force, violence.
Violēnto, a, forcible, violent.
Virtūd, F., virtue.
Virtuōso, a, virtuous.
Visīta, F., visit, call.
Visitār, to visit, to pay a visit to.
Visto, a, seen — *ver*.
Vīudo, M., widower.
Vive — *vivir*.
Vivían — *vivir*.
Viviente, living.
Vivīr, to live.
Vizcaīno, a, Basque (of Biscay).
Volānte, flying; *zapa v.*, defence made of baskets filled with earth and placed close together.
Volvēr, to return, to come back, § 491.
Volvēr á, again (as *v. á hacer*, to do again).
Voto, M., vow.
Voy — *ir* or *irse*.
Voz, F., voice, tone of voice; a word.
Vuelo, M., flight (of a bird); soaring.
Vuelta, F., turn, return; *v. al tema*, back to the old subject again.
Vuelva — *volver*.
Vuelve — *volver*.
Vuelvo — *volver*.

Y.

Y, and (before initial *i* or *hi*, é).
Ya, now, already; *ya no* — *más*, not — any more, no more, no longer; yes! of course!
Ya que, conj., since.
Yedra, F., ivy.
Yema, F., yolk.
Yeso, M., lime, mortar.
Yugo, M., yoke.

Z.

Zanja, F., trench, ditch.
Zapa, F., sap, trench, undermining.
Zapadōr, M., sapper.
Zaragozāno, a, of Saragossa.
Zig-zag, PL., zig-zags, M., zig-zag.
Zipizape, M., scrape; scuffle.
Zozōbra, F., anxiety.
Zumbār, to buzz, to hum.

ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY.

A.

Able (*to be*), podēr — puedo, es, e.
About (*concerning*), acērca de; (*nearly*), cosa de; poco más ó ménos.
Absolutely, absolūtamente.
Academy, Acadēmia, F.
Accommodation-train, el tren mixto (composed of 1st, 2d, and 3d class carriages); tren-ōmnibus (from French).
Account (*narration*), relaciōn, F.; *to give an a. of*, hacēr la r. de; *on a. of*, á cāusa de.
Accustomed (*to be*), solēr (with infin.); estār acostumbrādo á.
Acknowledge (*to*), confesār.
Acquaintance, conocīdo, a, M. and F.
Across, á travēs de; por; *running a. the page*, á renglōn seguido.
Act (*to*), representār.
Action, acciōn, F.; acto, M.
Active, activo, a.
Add (*to*), contribuīr; *does not a.*, no contribūye.
Adorn (*to*), adornār.
Advice, consējo, M. (usually PL., los consējos); *by the a.*, de consējo; (*in government*) de acuērdo.
Afternoon, tarde, F.; *this a.*, esta t.; *in the a.*, por la t.
Again, otra vez; volver á (with an infin.); as, *he goes out a.*, vuelve á salir, p. 422.
Against, contra.
Agnes, Inēs, F.
Agreeable, agradāble.
Aid, auxīlio, M.; *to come to one's a.*, venīr *or* acudīr en su auxīlio.
Air, āire, M.; cielo, M.; (*that which we breathe*) el áire *or* la atmósfera.
Alight (*to*), posār (*of birds*).
Alike, igual; PL., iguales.
All, adj., todo, a; PL., todos, as; (*everything*) todo.
Alliance, alianza, F.
Allow (*to*), permitīr.
Almost, cāsi.
Alms, limosna, F.
Already, ya.
Also, tambiēn.
Always, siēmpre.
America, América, F.
American, Americāno (if Span.); Anglo-Americāno (if from the U. S.).
American, adj., americāno, a.
Amiable, amāble.
Among, entre (*rest*), por entre (*motion*).
Amusing, divertīdo, a; entretenīdo, a.
Ancient, antīguo, a.
And, y; (before *i* or *hi*) é.
Andalusia, Andalucía, F.
Andalusian, andalūz, a.
Anger, cólera, F., ira, F.
Anglo-American, Anglo-americā-

Angry, incomodādo, a, (*moderate*); enfadādo, a.
Another, otro, a; *a. time*, otra vez.
Answer (*to*), respondēr; contestār á (*when questioned*).
Any (*you please*), cualquiēra; *in a. language*, en cualquier idioma, p. 437; (otherwise, *any* is usually left untranslated); *a. more*, ya — no; as, *I don't like the country a. more*, ya no me gusta el campo.
Anybody (with neg.), nadie; (without neg.) álguien.
Apartment (*of a house*), cuarto, M.; (*of a floor*) habitacion, F.; (*of a palace*) salōn, M.
Appear (*to*), in the sense of *to present one's self*, aparecēr.
Appear (*to*), meaning to seem, parecēr; *it appears*, parēce.
Approve (*to*), aprobār.
April, abrīl, M.; *April 25th*, á veinte y cinco de A.
Arab, árabe, M. and F.
Aranjuēz, [*aram Jovis*], a royal seat, about two hours by rail from Madrid.
Are, son; están.
Are (*there*), hay.
Army, ejército, M.
Arrest (*to*), prendēr.
Arrested, preso, a.
Arrival, llegāda, F.
Arrive (*to*), llegār.
Artist, artīsta, M.
As (*according as*), segun, conforme á.
As, conj., como; adv., tan; *as — as*, tan — como.
As-far-as, hasta.
As-many — as, tantos, as — como.
As-much — as, tanto, a — como.
Ask (*to*), *as a question*, preguntār; *as a request*, pedīr, p. 420; *to ask for a thing*, pedīr alguna cosa.
At, en, á.
Atmosphere, atmósfera, F.; āire, M.
Attachment, amōr, M., cariño, M.
Attempt, atentādo, M.
Attend (*to*), asistīr, *foll. by* á.
Attendance, asistēncia, F.
Attended, concurrīdo, a; *very well a.*, muy concurrīdo, a, *or* concurridísimo, a.
Attends (*he*), asiste á.
Aunt, tia, F.
Author, autōr, M.
Avenge *one's self* (*to*), vengārse (*of*, de).

B.

Bad, malo, a (mal).
Badly, mal.
Balcony, balcōn, M.
Ball, pelōta, F.; (*weapon*) bala, F., (*shot*) balāzo, M.; *wounded by a b.*, herido de un balāzo.
Banker, banquēro, M.
Basque, subst., Vizcaīno, a.
Basque, adj., vascongādo, a.
Bath, baño, M.
Bathing-season, temporāda de baños (la).
Battalion, batallōn, M.
Be (*to*), ser (*absolute*); estār (*accidental*); (*of weather*) hacēr, p. 429.
Beautiful, hermōso, a; bello, a.
Because, pōrque.
Become (*to*), hacērse; ponērse, p. 431.
Beef, carne de vaca, *or simply* carne, F.

Been, sido; estādo; (*of weather*) hecho; *b. able,* podido.
Before (*time*) ántes; (*presence*) ante.
Beg (*to*), *meaning to request,* rogār; *meaning to solicit alms,* pedīr.
Beggar, mendīgo (seldom used); pobre.
Begin (*to*), empezār (*to,* á); echār á; echārse á; ponērse á.
Behavior, conducta, F., comportamiēnto, M.
Believe (*to*), creēr.
Belong (*to*), pertenecēr (*to,* á); ser (*to,* de).
Bench, banco, M.
Benevolent, caritatīvo, a.
Bernard, Bernārdo.
Besides, además.
Best, el (la, lo) mejōr.
Better, mejōr; PL., mejōres.
Beyond, más allá de (*farther*); (*outside or besides*) fuera de.
Bilbao, Bilbāo, a large town on the Bay of Biscay.
Bird, ave, F.; pájaro, M. (p. is less used in poetry or in the higher style of prose).
Blame, censūra, F.
Blindly, ciēgamente.
Block, trozo, M., trocīto, M.
Blow, golpe, M.
Blue, azūl.
Boldly, resūeltamente (*bravely*); desvergonzādamente (*impudently*).
Book, libro, M.
Boston, Bóston.
Both, ambos, as; los (las) dos.
Box, caja, F.
Boy, muchācho, M.
Bracelet, pulsēra, F.
Branch, ramo, M., ramāl, M.
Break (*to*), rompēr; *to b. in pieces,* hacer pedāzos, *or* añīcos.
Break out (*to*), estallar.
Bright, vivo, a; claro, a.
Brilliant, brillānte.
Bring (*to*), traēr; *brings,* trāe; *he brought,* trājo.
Broad, ancho, a.
Brother, hermano, M.
Building, edifīcio, M.
Busy, ocupādo, a, (*at,* en).
Busy *one's self* (*to*), ocupārse (*with or at,* en).
But, pero, mas; (after neg. sent.), sīno.
Buy (*to*), comprār.

C.

Cadiz, Cádiz; *of or pertaining to Cadiz,* gaditāno, a.
Cadiz (*of*), Gaditāno, a.
Call, visīta, F.
Call (*to*), llamār; *called,* llamādo, a.
Call *one's self* (*to*), llamārse.
Called (*to be*), llamārse; *is c.* or *named,* se llama; *are c.* (*they*), se llaman.
Calmly, con calma; tranquīlo, a, (adj. for adv.).
Campaign, campāña, F.
Can, poder; *I c.,* puedo; *I cannot,* no puedo; *he c.,* puede; *he cannot,* no puede; *you c.,* V. puede, *or* V. podrá (if the idea is future).
Cap, gorra, F.
Capable, capāz.
Capacity, capacidād, F.
Capital, capitāl, F.; (*of Spain*) corte, F.
Captain, capitān, M.

Capture, toma, F.
Car (*railway*), coche, M.; *the cars*, el tren, SING.
Care, cuidādo, M.
Care (*to*), *meaning inclination*, querēr (quiero, quieres, *etc.*); *not to c.*, no querēr.
Carelessly, descuidādamente; con ligerēza.
Carlist, Carlīsta, M. and F.
Carriage, coche, M.
Carry (*to*), llevār.
Carry off (*to*), llevār; llevārse; llevār fuera.
Carthagena, Cartagēna, F.
Castile, Castīlla, F.; *New C.*, Castilla la Nueva; *Old C.*, Castilla la Vieja.
Castilian, Castellāno, a, M. and F.; adj., castellāno, a.
Cat, gato, M.; gata, F.
Catalonian, Catalān, a; catalan, a.
Catch (*to*), cogēr (cojo, coges, *etc.*); capturār.
Cavalier, caballēro, M.
Cease (*to*), dejār (*to*, de).
Ceiling, techo, M.
Celebrated, célebre, famōso, a.
Cent, centāvo, M. (Span. Am.).
Centre, centro, M.
Century, siglo, M.
Certain — *a c.*, cierto, a (*without* un, una); *in a c. class*, en cierta clase; *superl.* certísimo, a, *and* ciertísimo, a.
Chair, silla, F.
Change (*to*), variār de (*direction, opinion*); mudār de (*residence, clothes, etc.*).
Chapter, capítulo, M.
Character, carácter, M.
Characteristics of (*the*), el carácter de.
Charge (*care, office*), encargo, M.
Charitable, caritatīvo, a.
Charles, Cárlos.
Cheerfully, alēgremente.
Cherish (*to*), abrigār.
Chieftain, cabecīlla (*of Carlist bands*), M.
Child (*young*), niño; (*of any age*), hijo, M.
Children (*young*), niños; (*of any age*), hijos, M.
Chilian (*of Chili*), Chilēno, a, M. and F.; chilēno, a.
Christianity, cristianismo, M.
Church, iglēsia, F.
Circumstance, circunstāncia, F., caso, M.; *under the c — s*, bajo las circunstancias.
Citizen (*civilly*), vecīno, M.; (*politically*), ciudadāno, M.
City, ciudād, F. (*common name*); poblaciōn, F. (*with reference to its inhabitants*); villa, F. (*officially and administratively*).
Class, clase, F.; *in a certain c.*, en cierta c.
Clear, claro, a; despejādo, a.
Clear up (*to*), aclarār.
Clever, hábil.
Close, fin, M.; *at the c. of*, á fines de, á últimos de (*in dates*).
Clothes, ropa, F. (coll.).
Cloud, nube, F.
Coast, costa, F.
Cobbler, zapatēro de viejo, M.
Coetaneous, coetáneo, a.
Coin, monēda, F.
Cold, frio, M.; *to be c.*, hacēr f.; *to be very c.*, hacer mucho f.

Collection, colecciōn, F.
Color, colōr, M.
Column, columna, F.
Combatant, combatiente, M.
Come (*to*), venir (vengo, vienes, *etc.*); *he came*, vino.
Come back (*to*), volver (vuelvo, vuelves, *etc.*).
Come down (*to*), bajār.
Come forward (*to*), adelantārse; presentārse.
Come from (*to*), venīr de; salīr de.
Come in (*to*), entrār; pasār.
Come near (*to*), acercārse.
Come out (*to*), salīr (salgo, sales, *etc.*).
Come up (*to*), subīr.
Comfortable, cómodo, a.
Command, mando, M. (*authority over*).
Commandment, mandamiento, M. (*divine*); mandato, M. (*human*).
Commerce, comercio, M.
Common, comūn; ordinārio, a.
Commonwealth, república, F.
Companion, compañēro, a, M. and F.
Concluded, concluīdo, a.
Condition, condiciōn, F.
Conduct, conducta, F., comportamiēnto, M.
Confidence, confiānza, F.
Congenial, simpático, a.
Connect (*to*), unīr (*with*, á); enlazār (*with*, con).
Conscience, conciēncia, F.
Conscript, quinto, M.
Consent, consentimiēnto, M.; *with the c. of*, con c. de.
Consider (*to*), considerār (considēro, as, a); meditār.
Considerable, bastānte.
Consist (*to*), consistīr (*of*, en); constar (*of*, de).
Constantinople, Constantinōpla, F.
Constitutional, constitucionāl.
Construct (*to*), construīr.
Contented, contento, a; satisfecho, a.
Contrary, contrārio, a; opuesto, a.
Contribute (*to*), contribuīr (contribūyo, yes, ye); *have contributed* (*they*), han contribuīdo.
Convenient, cómodo, a, (*comfortable*); conveniēnte (*expedient*).
Conversation, conversaciōn, F.
Cool, fresco, a.
Cost (*to*), costār (cuesto, as).
Costume, traje, M.
Couched, concebīdo, a.
Counsel, consējo, M.
Count, conde, M.
Countess, condēsa, F.
Country, pais, M. (*general*); campo, M. (*not city*, rus); pātria, F. (*native country or province*); campiña, F. (*environs*, campagna).
Couple, par, M.
Courage, valōr, M.
Course, rumbo, M.; *of c.*, sin duda; naturālmente.
Courteous, cortēs, fino, a.
Cousin, primo, a, M. and F.
Cross, cruz, PL., cruces, F.
Cry (*to*), llorār (*to weep*); gritār (*to exclaim*).
Cuban, Cubāno, a, M. and F.; cubāno, a; de Cuba.
Curious, raro, a; extrāño, a.
Custom, costūmbre, F.

D.

Danger, peligro, M.
Dark, oscuro, a.
Day, dia, M.; *every d.*, todos los dias.
Deceive (*to*), engañār.
Decision, decisiōn, F.
Declaration, declaraciōn, F., confesiōn, F.
Deep, profundo, a.
Defect, defecto, M.; falta, F.
Definite, definitīvo, a.
Demand, exigēncia, F.
Deny (*to*), negār, rehusar.
Deserve (*to*), merecēr (merezco, merēces, ce).
Design, proyecto, M.; propósito, M.
Develop (*to*), desarrollār; *to be d — d*, desarrollārse; *may be d — d more*, se hayan desarrollado más.
Devout, piadōso, a; pio, a.
Different, distinto, a; diferente.
Difficult, difícil.
Diligence, aplicaciōn, F.
Diligent, aplicādo, a.
Dine (*to*), comēr.
Dinner, comīda, F.
Direct (*to*), dirigīr (dirijo, dirīges, -ge); *he directed*, dirigió.
Discern (*to*), discernīr (disciērno, -nes, -ne).
Discharge (*to*), desempeñār; cumplīr con (*as an obligation*).
Distinguish (*to*), distinguīr (distingo, gues, gue).
Distinguished, distinguīdo, a, (before the noun).
Disturb (*to*), alborotār (*of turmoil*); estorbār (*of inconvenience*).
Do (*to*), hacēr (hago, haces); *of doing*, de hacēr.
Doctor, doctōr, M.; médico, M.; facultatīvo, M.
Document, documento, M.
Dog, perro, M.
Dollar, peso, M. (Spain and Amer.); duro, M. (Spain).
Door, puerta, F.
Dozen, docēna, F.
Draft, borradōr, M.
Dramatic, dramático, a.
Draughtsman, perīto, M.; dibujadōr, M.
Draw (*to*), tirār (*pull*).
Draw up (*to*), extendēr (*a document*); redactār, hacer (*of plans*); *drawn up*, puesto en órden (*of soldiers*).
Drawing-room, sala, F.
Dress, vestīdo, M.; trāje, M.
Drive, pasēo, M.
Dry, seco, a.
Drum, tambōr, M.
Dull, triste; fastidiōso, a.
Dulled, entorpecīdo, a; insensīble (*of conscience*).
During, durānte.
Duty, debēr, m.; obligaciōn, F.

E.

Eagle, águila, F.
Earl, conde, M.
Early, temprāno; adj., antíguo, a, (*ancient*).
Eastern, oriental.
Easy, fácil.
Easy-chair, sillōn, M.
Eat (*to*), comēr.
Educated, educādo, a; *the educated*, PL., la gente ilustrāda (coll.).

Emperor, emperadōr, M.
Employ, empleār; *employed*, empleādo, a.
End, fin, m.; *at the end*, al fin.
Enemy, enemīgo, M.
Engender (*to*), engendrār.
Engine, máquina, F.; locomotōra; (Sp. America) locomotīva, F.
English, inglēs, a.
Englishman, Inglēs, M.
Englishwoman, Inglēsa, F.
Engraved, grabādo, a.
Engraving, grabādo, M.
Enlightened, ilustrādo, a.
Entangling, enredadōr, a.
Enter (*to*), entrār (*into*, en).
Entertaining, divertīdo, a.
Envelope, sobre, M.
Err (*to*), errār (yerro, as, a).
Errand-boy, mozo, M.; mandadēro, M.
Escorial, el Escoriāl; (*full name:* San Lorenzo del Escoriāl).
Estate, estado, M. (*class*); heredād, F. (*property*).
Et cætera, et cétera.
Europe, Eurōpa, F.; *western E.*, la Europa occidentāl; el oeste de E.
Europe (*of*), European, europēo, a.
Even, áun; *even if*, áun cuando (w. subj.).
Every, cada.
Everywhere, por todas partes.
Evidence, prueba, F.; indīcio, M.
Exceedingly, sūmamente.
Except, excepto; salvo.
Excite (*to*), excitār, movēr.
Excursion-ticket, billēte de recrēo (*i.e.*, de ida y vuelta).
Excursion-train, tren de recrēo; "*excursion*" *is* viaje de r.
Excuse (*to*), dispensār.
Exercise, tema, M.
Expect (*to*), esperār.
Experience, experiēncia, F.
Express-train, el tren corrēo, *or* el corrēo; el tren de gran velocidād (*of express freight*).
Extraordinary, especiāl, extraordinārio, a.
Extreme, extrēmo, a.
Eye, ojo, M.

F.

Fabric, tejīdo, M.
Fair, fēria, F.
Fair (*of weather*), bueno, a.
Faithful, fiel.
Faithfully, fiēlmente; con fidelidād.
Fall (*to*), caēr (cāigo, cāes, cāe).
Fall down (*to*), caērse.
Famous, célebre; famōso, a.
Fancy (*to*), figurārse; (*to think, believe*) creēr.
Farewell, adiōs; vaya V. con Diōs, *or simply* con Diōs.
Farce, farsa, F.; *to act a f.*, representār una farsa.
Farmer, labradōr, M.; cultivadōr, M.
Fate, suerte, F.; destīno, M.
Father, padre, M.
Favor, favōr, M.
Favorable, favorāble.
Fear (*to*), temēr.
Feign *one's self to be* (*to*), fingīrse (me finjo, te finges, *etc.*).
Fellow-man, semejānte, M.
Festival, fiesta, F.
Few (*a*), algūnos, as; unos cuantos, as; *f.*, pocos, as; *in a f. years*, dentro de algunos años; *f. men*, pocos hombres.

Fewer, ménos; no tantos, as.
Field, M., campo, M.
Fight, riña, F. (*personal*); combāte, M., pelēa, F. (*general*).
Find (*to*), hallār (*what was lost*); encontrār (*to meet with*).
Fine, hermōso, a; fino, a, (*quality*).
Fire, fuego, M. (*element*); incēndio, M. (*conflagration*).
Fleece, vellōn, M.
Flight, vuēlo, M. (*as of a bird*).
Floor, suelo, M.; *on the f.*, al suelo (*motion*); en el suelo (*rest*).
Flour, harīna, F.
Flower, flor, F.
Foe, enemīgo, M.
Folio, folio, M. (*size*); foja (*foliated leaf*), F.
Following, adj., siguiente (after noun); *f. day*, el dia s.
Folly, imprudēncia, F.; locūra, F.
For, para (*destination*); pōrque (*reason*).
Force, fuerza, F.
Foreign, extranjēro, a.
Forgive (*to*), perdonār.
Form (*to*), formār, constituīr; *they f.*, constituyen.
Fragment, pedāzo, M.; añicos, M. PL.; *to break in f—s*, hacēr p—s, a—s.
Fray, lucha, F.; combāte, M.
Free, libre; exento, a (*from*, de).
Freely, lībremente.
French, francēs, a.
Frenchman, Francēs, M.
Frenchwoman, Francēsa, F.
Friday, viērnes, M.; *on F.*, el v.; *Fridays*, los viērnes.
Friend, amīgo, M.; amīga, F.
Friendly, amistōso, a; amāble.
Friendship, amistād, F.
Frock coat, levīta, F.
From, de; (*place, time*) desde; *f.—to*, desde — á *or* hasta.
Front room, cuarto exteriōr, M.; habitaciōn exteriōr, F., *or* cuarto que da á la calle.
Frontier, frontēra, F.
Fruit, fruto, M. (*on the tree*); fruta, F. (*plucked*).
Fulfil (*to*), cumplīr; *to f.* (*an obligation*), cumplīr con.
Full, lleno, a; replēto, a, (*of*, de).
Furnish (*to*), surtīr (*to provide*); *they f.*, sūrten — (*with*, de).
Further, más; además (*besides*).

G.

Gallant, galānte.
Garden, jardīn, M.; huerta, F.
Gate, puerta, F.
Gay, alēgre.
General, generāl, M. adj., *id.*
Generally, ordināriamente.
Gentle, dulce, suave (*of persons*); manso, a, (*of animals*).
Gentleman, caballēro, M.; señōr, M.
German, alemān, a; Alemān, a, M. and F.
Get up (*to*), levantārse; *without getting up*, sin levantārse.
Get better, ponērse mejōr; *to be getting b.*, ir poniēndosem.
Get well (*to*), ponērse bueno, a; *to g. w. again*, volvērse á ponēr bueno, a.
Girl, muchācha, F.; niña, F.
Give (*to*), dar; (*as a present*) regalār; *to give an account of*, hacēr la relaciōn de.

Give off (*to*), echār.
Give up (*to*), abandonār; entregār.
Glad (*to be*), alegrārse; *I am g.*, me alēgro (*that*, de que); *are you g.?* ¿se alēgra V.? *How g. I am!* ¡qué alegría! *or* ¡cuánto me alēgro!
Glance, mirāda, F.
Go (*to*), ir (*definite*); andār (*vague*); *to be going to* (inf.), ir á; *I am going*, voy; *I am going to* (inf.), voy á; *one goes*, se va.
Go away (*to*), irse.
Go down (*to*), bajār; *to go d. stairs*, bajār la escalēra.
Go in (*to*), entrār.
Go on (*to*), seguīr (sigo, sigues).
Go out (*to*), salīr (*to*, á); *to go o. again*, volvēr á salir (salgo, sales, sale).
Go up (*to*), subīr; *to go up stairs*, s. la escalēra.
Go and return (*out and back*), ida y vuelta, F.
God, Diōs, M.
Godōy (*Manuēl*), favorite of Charles IV., and his universal minister till the 18th of March, 1808.
Gold, oro, M.
Good, bueno, a, (buen).
Goods (*blessings*), biēnes, M. PL.; (*mdse.*), géneros, M. PL.
Goodness, bondād, F.
Government, gobiērno, M.
Graceful, graciōso, a.
Grammar, gramática, F.
Grand, grande (gran); *in full uniform*, de gran lujo; de gala.
Gravity, gravedād, F.; lo grave.
Great, grande (gran).
Grow (*to*), crecēr (crezco, creces, crece).
Guarantee, garantía, F.

H.

Habit, costūmbre, F.; *bad h.*, mala c., *or* vicio, M.
Half (subst.), mitād, F.; *one h.*, la m.; *one h. of a day*, la m. de un dia.
Half (adj.), mēdio, a; *h. a*, medio, a; *h. a day*, medio dia; *a day and a h.*, un dia y medio.
Hand, mano, F.; *on the other h.*, por otra parte; por otro lado.
Hand-laid, hecho á mano; *h.-l. paper*, papēl h. á m.
Hang (*to*), colgār (*on*, de); pendēr (*to*, *on*, de).
Hang up (*to*), colgār (cuelgo, as, a).
Happen (*to*), sucedēr; *it happens*, sucēde.
Happy, felīz; dichōso, a.
Harm, daño, M.
Harmonious, armoniōso, a.
Hat, sombrēro, M.
Have (*to*), habēr (*only as an auxil.* — he, has, ha); tenēr (*the proper verb* — tengo, tienes, tiene).
Have just (*to*), acabār de (inf.); *he has just gone out*, acāba de salīr.
Have to (*to*), tenēr que; *I h. to do it*, tengo que hacērlo.
Head-dress, toca, F.; peinādo, M.
Hear (*to*), oīr (ōigo, ōyes); entendēr (*to understand* — entiendo, des, de); (*of a slight noise*) sentīr (siento, tes, te).
Help (*to*), ayudār (ayūdo, as, a).
Help, socorro; *to cry for h.*, gritār al s.

Here, aquí.
High, alto, a.
Highlander, Montañēs, a.
Highway-robber, salteadōr de caminos, M.
History, histōria, F.
Hit on (*to*), dar con.
Home, adv., á casa (*motion*); en casa (*rest*).
Honor, honōr, M.; honra, F.
Honor (*to*), honrār.
Hoop, aro, M.
Horse, caballo, M.
Hot, calurōso, a, (*of the sun*); caliēnte (*of fire*).
Hot (*to be*), hacēr calōr (*of the weather*); *it is hot*, hace c.; *it is very hot*, hace mucho c.; *it is hotter than*, hace más c. que.
Hotel, hotēl (*not an apartment house*), M.; fonda (*for guests*), F.
Hour, hora, F.
House, casa, F.
Household, casa, F.
How? ¿cómo? *how much? many?* ¿cuánto, a? ¿cuántos, as?
However, sin embargo.
Humiliating, humillānte.
Hundred (*one*), ciento (cien).
Hunger, hambre, F.; *to be hungry*, tener h.

I.

Idle, ociōso, a, (*with* estār).
If, si.
Ignorant, ignorante (*with* ser).
Ill, malo, a; enfermo, a, (*with* estār).
Ill, adv., mal.
Illustrated, ilustrādo, a.
Impassible, intransitāble.
Impatient, impaciente; *to become i.*, impacientārse; *out of patience*, impacientādo, a.
Impetus, ímpetu, M.; impetuosidād, F.
Important, importānte.
Important (*to be*), importār; convenir; *is i.*, importa; conviene; *is very i.*, importa mucho; conviene mucho.
Impossible, imposīble.
In, en; *in order that*, para que (w. subj.); *in order to*, para (w. inf.).
Incessantly, sin cesār, contínuamente.
Income, renta, F., *or* rentas, F. PL.
Indispensable, indispensāble.
Individual, indivíduo, M.
Infinitely, infinīto.
Influential, influyēnte.
Ink, tinta, F.
Inkstand, tintēro, M.
Innocent, inocēnte.
Inside, interiōr.
Interest, interēs, M.; great *i.*, mucho interēs; *to the i. of the play*, al interēs que inspira la comedia.
Intimate, íntimo, a.
Into, en.
Introduction, introducciōn, F.
Inundation, desbordamiēnto, M.; avenida, F.
Invention, invenciōn, F.
Invite (*to*), convidār.
Iron, hierro, M.
Iron-clad, blindādo, a; *i.-c. frigate*, fragāta blindāda.

J.

Jane, Juana, F.
Jest (*to*), chanceār (chancēo, cēas, cēa).

Jewel, joya, F.; alhāja, F.
Jewelry, joyería, F.; alhājas, F. PL.
John, Juān, M.
Journey, viāje, M.; *good j.*, felīz viāje.
Joy, alegría, F.; gozo, M.
Judge, juēz, M. (PL., juēces).
Judgment, juīcio, M.
Julia, Jūlia *and* Juliāna, F.
Jump up (*to*), saltār.
Just, justo, a; *to have j.*, acabār de.

K.

Keep (*to*), guardār; quedārse con.
Kind, bueno, a; bondadōso, a, (*to*, para).
Kind, clase, F.; espēcie, F.; *what k. of weather?* ¿qué tal tiempo?
King, rey, M.; *k. and queen*, los reyes, PL. (*the sovereigns*).
Kite, comēta, F.
Knife, cuchillo, M. (*table k.*); cuchilla, F. (*in machinery*); cortaplūmas, M. SING. and PL. (*pocket k.*); navāja, F. (*clasp k., and common name for jack-k. among the lower classes*).
Know (*to*), sabēr (*of things*, sé, sabes, sabe); conocer (*of persons and of things, to k. thoroughly*, conozco, conoces, ce).
Know how (*to*), sabēr (w. inf.).
Known, conocido, a, (*persons*); sabīdo, a, (*things*).

L.

Laborer, trabajadōr, M.; obrēro, M.
Lady, señōra, F.; dama, F.
Lamb, cordēro, M.; corderīto, a, M. and F.
Land, tierra, F.; terrēno, M. (*tract*); heredādes, F. PL.
Lane, callejuēla, F.
Language, lengua, F.; idiōma, M.; la lengua castellāna: el castellano es idioma muy fácil.
Large, grande (after the noun).
Largest, el (la, lo) más grande; el (la) mayōr.
Last, último, a; postrēro, a, (postrēr); *last night*, anoche.
Late, tarde.
Lateral, laterāl.
Latin, subs., Latīn; adj., latīno, a.
Latter (*the*), éste, ésta; éstos, éstas.
Law, ley, F.
Lawrence (*St.*), San Lorenzo.
Lead (*to*), conducīr, llevār; *to l. to*, llevār, conducīr.
Lead (*metal*), plomo, M.
Leaf, hoja, F. (*of a tree or a book*).
Learn (*to*), aprendēr (*to*, á).
Learnèd, erudīto, a; sābio, a.
Leave (*to*), dejār (*not to take*); salīr (*to depart, foll. by* de); *to l. by the train*, salir con el tren; salir, partīr (*to go*); *when do you l.?* ¿cuándo sale V.? *or* ¿parte V.?
Lecture, conferēncia, F.
Leg, pié, M. (*of a table*).
Lemon, limōn, M.
Lend (*to*), prestār (with dat. of pers.).
Less, ménos; no — tanto, a.
Lesson, lecciōn, F.
Let (with imperat.), que (with subj.), with 3d pers. SING. and PL.
Letter, carta, F.
Lettuce, lechūga, F.
Lewis, Luis.
Library, bibliotēca, F.

Life, vida, F.
Light, luz, F.
Lighten (*to*), alumbrār.
Like, igual; parecido, a, (after noun); *like that which*, semejānte al que (á la que, á lo que).
Like (*to*), querēr (*to esteem*—quiero, es, e); gustārle á uno, p. 420; agradārle á uno; *I l.*, me gusta; *I do not l.*, no me gusta; *the countess does not like*, á la condesa no le gusta; *I should l.*, quisiēra; *would you l.?* ¿quisiēra V.?
Limit, límite, M.
Line, línea, F.; pāuta, F.; renglon, M. (*of a book or Ms.*); línea (*of a railway, etc.*).
Lisbon, Lisbōa, F.
Listen to (*to*), escuchār (without prep.).
Literature, literatūra, F.
Little, poco; *a l.* (*of*), un poco de.
Live (*to*), vivīr; *to live in*, vivir en, *or* habitār (*without*, and by some *with*, en).
Living (*alive*), vivo, a.
Local, locāl.
London, Lóndres.
Long, largo, a, (*superl.* larguísimo, a).
Look, mirāda, F.
Look (*to*), mirār.
Look for (*to*), buscār.
Look out (*to*), asomārse (*of*, á).
Lord, señōr, M.
Lose (*to*), perdēr (pierdo, es, e).
Lost, perdīdo, a.
Louisa, Luīsa, F. (*loo-ee-ça*).
Lovely, amāble (*moral*), hermoso, a, (*physical*).
Low, bajo, a.
Luxury, lujo, M.

M.

Machine, máquina, F.
Madam, señōra, F. (*direct address*); la señora (3d pers.).
Made (p. part.), hecho, a.
Made (*to be*), ser hecho, a.
Madrīd (*of*—), Madrilēño, a; madrilēño, a.
Magnificent, magnífico, a.
Mail-train, tren-corrēo, M., *or simply* el corrēo.
Make (*to*), hacēr (hago, haces, ce); *he made*, hizo.
Malaga, Málaga, F.
Man, hombre, M.
Manners, modāles, M. PL.
Manuel, Manuēl; *familiar*, Manolīto.
Manufacturer, fabricānte, M.; PL. (*general*), industriāles, fabricāntes.
Many, muchos, as.
Marauder, bandīdo, M.
March, Marzo, M.; *M. 7th*, á siete Marzo, *or* el dia siete de Marzo.
Marchioness, marquēsa, F.
Marquis, marquēs, M.
Marry (*to*), casārse; *to m. any one*, casārse con álguien; *to m. some one to another*, casar á fulano con mengana.
Mary, María.
Mass (*crowd*), masa, F; (*sacrament*) Misa, F.
Master, amo, M. (*of the house*); maēstro, M. (*teacher*); maēstro, M. (*one who excels*).
Material, adj., materiāl (after noun).
May—*he m.*, *it m.*, puede; *m. be*, puede ser. *See* poder.
May, Mayo, M.

Means, medios, M. PL.; *to find m.*, encontrār medios (*to*, para).
Measure, medīda, F.; providēncia, F.
Meat, carne, F.
Mechanic, artesāno, M.
Meet (*to*), encontrār.
Member, indivíduo, M.
Memory, memōria, F.
Mend (*to*), componēr (compongo, -pones, -pone).
Merchant, comerciānte, M.
Messenger (*of news*), mensagēro, M. (*errand-boy*), mandadēro, M.
Mexican, Mejicāno, a; mejicāno, a.
Midst—*in the m. of*, en medio de.
Mild, suave, blando, a.
Mill, milésimo (*imaginary coin*), M.
Minister, minīstro, M. (*political*).
Miscellaneous, vārios, as, PL. (and after the noun).
Misfortune, desgrācia, F.
Mistress (*of the house*), ama, F.; señōra, F.
Moderate (*to*) calmār; templār.
Modern, moderno, a.
Moment, momento, M.
Money, dinēro, M.
Month, mes, M.
Moral, morāl.
More, más; *no m.*, ya no (verb).
Morning, mañāna, F.; *the m. paper*, el periódico de la mañāna.
Morocco (*of*), Marroquí.
Mother, madre, F.
Mother-country, madre-pātria, F.; pātria.
Mountain, sierra, F.
Move (*to*), movēr (muevo, es, e).
Much, mucho, a.

N.

Nail, clavo, M.; alfilēr, M.
Name, nombre, M. (*Christian*); apellīdo, M. (*sirname*).
Named (*to be*), llamārse; *his name is*, se llama; *what is his name?* ¿cómo se llama?
Narration, relaciōn, F.
Nation, naciōn, F.
National, nacionāl.
Navigation, navegaciōn, F.
Near (adv.), cerca; (prep.), cerca de.
Necessary, necesārio, a; *it is n.*, es n., es menestér, es precīso (*the last is strongest;* all with subj. or an inf.).
Necklace, collār, M.
Needle, agūja, F.
Neighbor, vecīno, a, M. or F.
Neighborhood, vecindād, F.
Never, no—nunca, *or* nunca before the verb.
New, nuevo, a.
News, noticia, F., *and* noticias, F. PL.
Newspaper, periōdico, M.; diārio, M.
Night, noche, F.; *to-n.*, esta n.; *last n.*, anoche.
No (adv.), no; (adj.), ningūno, a; no—alguno, a, (alguno, in this case after the noun).
Noble, noble.
Nobody, nadie.
Noise, ruīdo, M.
Nor, ni.
North, norte, M.; *on the n.*, en el norte, al norte.
North-west, noroēste.
Not, no.
Notable, notāble.

Notify (*to*), avisār; dar aviso (*to*, á).
Now, ahora.
Number, número, M.; *a n. of*, una porciōn de.
Nurse, nodrīza, F.

O.

Object, motīvo, M. (*cause, end*); objēto, M. (*visible*).
Obligation, obligaciōn, F.; *to discharge one's o.*, cumplīr con su obligaciōn.
Obliged (*to be*), agradecēr (agradezco, agradēces, ce — *under obligation*); *the stranger was o. to* ..., al desconocīdo le fué forzōso el ... (inf.).
Occasion, ocasiōn, F.
Occur (*to*), sucedēr; acaecēr; tenēr lugār.
O'clock, hora, F.; *at what o'clock?* ¿á qué hora?
Octavo, octāvo, M.; *in octavo*, en octāvo.
October, Octūbre, M.; *Oct. 27th*, á veinte y siete de Octubre, *or* el dia veinte y siete de Octubre.
Odd, raro, a; extrāño, a; *o.* (*number*), impār.
Offence, disgusto, M.; *to take offence*, incomodārse.
Officer, oficiāl, M.
Official, oficiāl.
Often, amenūdo; muchas veces.
Old, viejo, a; antīguo, a; *old man*, anciano, M.
Old age, vejēz, F.
Old people, anciānos, M. PL.
On, en; sobre; encīma de.
Once, una vez (*one time*); ántes (*formerly*); antīguamente (*of old*).
One, with a verb, is expressed by the reflexive *se*, 3d SING.; *one goes*, se va.
One's, su; PL., sus.
Only, adv., sólo; únicamente; adj., único, a.
Open (*to*), abrīr; p.p. abierto.
Opera-glasses, gemēlos, M. PL.
Opinion, parecēr, M.; *in our o.*, á nuestro parecēr.
Oporto, Porto, M.
Opponent, contrārio, M.; contrincānte.
Optician, óptico, M.
Or, ó, (before *o* or *ho*) ú.
Orange, narānja, F.
Order, órden, F.; *by o. of*, de o. de.
Ornament, adorno, M.
Others, otros, as.
Our, nuestro, a.
Out and back, ida y vuelta.
Out of patience, impacientādo, a; impaciēnte.
Over, por (*through*); por (*throughout*); *over all Spain*, por toda España.
Overcast, encapotādo, a.
Own, propio, a.
Ox, buey, M. (PL. buēyes).

P.

Page, página, F.
Pageant, fāusto, M.
Painting, cuadro, M.; pintūra, F.
Palace, palācio, M.
Paper, papēl; periódico, M.; *the morning p.*, el per. de la mañana.
Parable, parábola, F.

Paradise, paraīso, M.
Pardon (*to*), perdonār; *pardon, brother*, perdōne, hermano.
Parent, padre, M.; PL., pādres, M.
Parish-priest, cura-párroco, M.
Part, parte, F.; *on the p. of*, de parte de.
Partridge, perdīz, F.
Party, partīdo, M.
Pass (*to*), pasār.
Passive, pasīvo, a.
Passport, pasapōrte, M.
Patent, patente, F.
Patience, paciēncia, F.
Paul, Pablo.
Peace, paz, F.
Pear, pera, F.
Pen, pluma, F.
Penalty, pena, F.
Pencil, lápiz, M.; lapicēro, M.
Pensioned, jubilādo, a.
People, gente, F.; pueblo, M.
Permanent, permanēnte.
Permit (*to*), permitīr.
Persist (*to*), empeñārse (*in*, en).
Person, persōna, F.
Perspire, transpirār; sudār.
Peter, Pedro.
Philadelphia, Filadēlfia.
Phœnician, Fenīcio, a; fenīcio, a.
Physician, médico, M.
Pick up (*to*), recogēr (recōjo, -cōges, -cōge).
Picture, cuadro, M.; lámina (*in books*), F.
Picturesque, pintoresco, a.
Piece, pedāzo, M.; *piece of news*, notīcia, F.
Place, lugār, M.; sitio, M.
Place (*to*), ponēr (pongo, pones, pone); colocār.
Plan, plano, M. (*of a place*); modēlo, M. (*model*).
Play (*to*), jugār (juego, as, a).
Play, comēdia, F.; piēza, F.
Plaything, juguēte, M.
Pleasant, agradāble.
Please (*to*), agradār; *it pleases* gūsta, agrāda, plāce.
Poem, poēma, M.
Point to (*to*), indicār.
Poor, pobre (*indigent*); malo, a, (*of things*).
Popular, populār.
Post, puesto, M.
Portugal, Portugāl.
Position, situaciōn, F. (*state*); *of her p.*, de la situaciōn en que se encontrāba.
Power, podēr, M.
Praise (*to*), alabār; (*of things*) celebrār.
Precious, preciōso, a; de prēcio; *more p.*, de más precio.
Present, regālo, M.
Present, adj., presente.
Presently, luego; pronto; dentro de poco.
Press, imprenta, F.
Pretended, fingīdo, a.
Pretty, bonīto, a; guapo, a.
Prince, príncipe, M.
Princess, princēsa, F.
Principal, principāl.
Principle, princīpio, M.
Print (*to*), imprimīr; p.p. imprēso, a.
Printed, imprēso, a.
Printing, imprenta, F. (*the art*); impresiōn, F. (*the act*).
Private, particulār.
Prodigal, pródigo, a.
Producing, adj., productōr, a.

Profit, provēcho, M.
Profitable, provechōso, a; de provecho.
Profound, profūndo, a.
Project, proyecto, M.
Promise (*to*), prometēr.
Property, fincas, F. PL.
Prosperity, prosperidād, F.
Proud, orgullōso, a.
Proverb, refrān, M.
Province, provincia, F.; paīs, M.
Public, público, a; subst. público, M.
Public square, plaza, F.
Punishment, castīgo, M.
Purchase (*to*), comprār.
Purpose, propósito, M.; fin, M.; *for what p.?* ¿á qué? (pop.).
Put *one's self* (*to*), ponērse; colocārse.
Put on (*to*), ponērse.

Q.

Quail, codornīz, F.
Quality, calidād, F.; condiciōn, F.
Quarter, cuarto, M.; (*of a pound*), cuarterōn, M.; (*of a hundred*), arrōba, F.
Quarto, cuarto, M.; *in q.*, en cuarto.
Queen, rēina, F.
Question, cuestiōn, F.; asunto, M.
Quiet, tranquīlo, a.
Quite, bastante; bien.

R.

Rail-way, ferro-carrīl, M.; PL., ferro-carrīles.
Rain (*to*), llovēr (llueve).
Rain, llūvia, F.
Rainy, lluviōso, a.
Raisin, pasa, F.
Rather, más bien; mejor dicho.
Ratification, ratificaciōn, F.
Ratify (*to*), ratificār.
Raw-recruit, bisōño; PL., gente bisōña.
Read (*to*), leēr; *he r.*, leyó.
Read (p. part.), leīdo, a.
Real, reāl, M.
Receipts, ingresos, M. PL.
Receive (*to*), recibīr; admitīr.
Recollection, recuerdo, M.
Reflection, recuerdo, M.; reflexiōn, F.
Refuse (*to*), negārse (*to*, á)—(me niego á).
Region, paīs, M.
Reign, reinādo, M.
Reject (*to*), rechazār, despreciār.
Relative, pariente, M.; parienta (*popular*), F.
Relieve (*to*), aliviār, amparār; *God r. you!* ¡Dios le ampare á V.!
Religious, piadōso, a; devoto, a.
Remain (*to*), permanecēr (-ezco).
Remark, observaciōn, F.; advertēncia, F.
Remedy, remēdio, M.
Remember (*to*), acordārse (acuerdo, as, a — *foll. by* de, *to r. a thing or a person*); recordār (recuerdo, as, a — *to r. that*, etc.); *I r. him*, me acuerdo de él; *I r. that*, recuerdo que...; *do you r.?* ¿recuerda V.? *to r.* (*to keep in mind*), tenēr presente; *one must r.*, se ha de tener p., *or* se debe tener p.
Reproof, censūra, F.
Reside (*to*), habitār (direct or with *en*).
Resident, vecīno, a, M. and F. (*of a town*).

Resign (*to*), hacēr demisiōn; *to r. one's self*, resignārse (*to*, á), conformarse (*to*, con).
Resource, recurso, M.
Respect, consideraciōn, F. (*for*, para).
Retire (*to*), retirārse (*to withdraw*).
Return (*to*), volvēr (vuelvo, ves, ve); *in returning*, en v.
Review, revista, F.; formaciōn, F. (*popular*).
Reward, premio, M.; recompensa, F.
Ribbon, cinta, F.
Rich, rico, a.
Riches, riquēza, F., or PL. riquēzas.
Right — *on the r.*, á la derecha (*sc.* mano).
Ring, anillo, M. (*plain*); sortīja, F. (*jewelled*).
Road, camīno, M.; línea, F. (*system of railroads*).
Robber, bandīdo, M.; ladrōn, M.
Roguish, burlōn, a.
Roof, tejādo, M.
Room, habitaciōn, F., cuarto, M.
Rose, rosa, F.
Round about, alrededōr (adv.).
Row, fila, F.
Royal, reāl.
Rule, regla, F.
Run, corrēr.
Running, corriendo; *r. across the page*, á renglōn seguīdo.

S.

Sail, vela, F. (*of a vessel*).
Sailor, marinēro, M.
Salad, ensalāda, F.
Salute (*to*), saludār.
Same, mismo, a; *the same* (*thing*), lo mismo.
Santander, Santandēr.
Saragossa, Zaragōza [*Caesārea Augusta*].
Saturday, sábado, M.
Say (*to*), decir (digo, dices, dice), *he says*, dice; *said*, dicho; *it is said*, se dice; *it may be said*, se puede decir.
Scarcely, apénas; no — casi.
Scene, escēna, F.; espectáculo, M.
Scholar, discípulo, M. (*pupil*); erudīto, M. (*learned man*).
School, colēgio, M., *and* escuela, F. (used interchangeably).
Score, veintēna, F.
Sea, mar, m.
Search (*to*), *or to s. for*, buscār.
Season, temporāda, F.; *s. ticket*, abōno, *or* bīllete de a.; *I have a s. t.*, estoy abonādo, a.
Secretary, secretārio, M.; *s. of State*, s. de Estado, *or* minīstro de Estado.
See (*to*), ver (veo, ves, ve); *I saw*, ví; *he saw*, vió; *seeing*, viendo.
Seek (*to*), buscār; *to s. to*, procurār de, tratār de (inf.).
Seem (*to*), parecer; *which seemed to surround her*, que al parecēr la amenazaba; *it seems*, parece.
Seen, visto, a.
Seldom, raras veces; pocas veces.
Selectman, hombre bueno (*ancient*, home bueno).
Self-respect, amōr propio, M.
Selfish, egoīsta; *s. vanity*, vano egoīsmo.
Sell (*to*), vendēr; *he sold*, vendió.
Senate, senādo, M.
Send for (*to*), enviār á buscār.
Sense, sentīdo, M.
Serious, grave.

Servant, criādo, M., criada, F.; *coll.* los criados *or* la servidūmbre.
Serve (*to*), servīr (sirvo, sirves, sirve).
Service, servīcio, M.
Set (*to*), ponērse (*of the sun*).
Set, juego, M.; *s. of chairs*, sillería, F.
Several, vārios, as.
Severe, sevēro, a.
Seville (pron. *Sĕv'il*), Sevilla; *S. train*, tren de Sevilla.
Shape, forma, F.
Sheep, ovēja, F.
Shelter *one's self* (*to*), amparārse, refugiārse.
Shine forth (*to*), brillār.
Ship, buque, M. (*merchant*); buque de guerra, *or* fragata, F. (*war*).
Shocking, atrōz.
Shoe, zapāto, M.
Shoemaker, zapatēro, M.
Shop, tienda, F.
Shop-keeper, tendēro, M.
Short, corto, a.
Shout, grito, M.
Shut (*to*), cerrār (cierro, as, a); *he shuts*, cierra.
Sign, señāl, F.; *it is a s.*, es señal.
Sign (*to*), firmār; *signed*, firmādo, a; *it was s.*, fué firmado, a.
Silence, silēncio, M.
Silver, plata, F.
Since, desde (*time*).
Sister, hermāna, F.
Sit down (*to*), sentārse, (me siento, te siēntas); *he sits down*, se sienta; *sit down*, siēntese V.
Sitting-room, gabinēte, M.
Situation, situaciōn, F.
Sixteen mo (16mo), dieciseisavo.
Size, tamāño, M.
Skip about (*to*), brincār; *to s. a. again*, volvēr á brincār; *she skips a. again*, vuelve á b.
Sky, cielo, M.
Slate, pizārra, F.
Slim, flojo, a, (*of attendance*).
Small, pequēño, a.
Snow, nieve, F.
So, tan; *s. bad*, tan malo; *s.* (*thus*), así; *s. it is*, así es; *s.* (*it*), lo; *s. much*, tanto, a; *s. many*, tantos, as.
Soberly, sōbriamente.
Society, sociedād, F.
Sofa, sofá, M.
Soldier, soldādo, M.; militār, M.
Some, algūnos, as; unos, as; unos cuantos, unas cuantas.
Something, alguna cosa; algo.
Sometimes, algunas veces.
Son, hijo, M.
Song, canciōn, F., canto, M.
Soon, pronto, luego.
Soul, alma, F.; ánima, F. (*disembodied spirits*).
Sour, āgrio, a.
South, mediodía, M.; *in the s. of Spain*, en el m. de España; *in the extreme s.*, en el extremo sur.
Spacious, espaciōso, a.
Spain, España, F.
Spaniard, Españōl, a, M. and F.
Spanish, españōl, a; *S. woman*, Españōla, F.
Spanish-America, la América españōla.
Speak (*to*), hablār; *spoken*, hablādo; *is s.*, se habla.
Speech, habla, F. (el habla, un habla).

Spend (*to*), pasār (*of time*); gastār (*of outlay*).
Spirit, espíritu, M.
Spring, fuente, F.; manantiāl, M. (*source*).
Square, plaza, F.
St. (*saint*), santo *and* san (§ 127).
Stand (*to*), estār en pié *or* de pié (*the act*), estār; *stood*, estūvo.
Start for (*to*), salīr para, marchārse para.
State, estādo, M.; *the United States*, los Estādos Unīdos.
Statesman, hombre de estado, *or* estadista, M.
Station, estaciōn, F.
Statue, estátua, F.
Stay (*to*), quedārse; *to s. home*, quedārse en casa.
Steamer, buque de vapōr, M., *or simply* vapōr, M.
Step, paso, M.; *to take a s.*, dar un paso.
Still, todavía, aún (*yet*); sin embargo (*notwithstanding*).
Stir, animaciōn, F.
Stone, piedra, F.
Storm, tempestād, F.
Stormy, malo, a; lluviōso, a; tempestuōso, a.
Story, cuento, M.
Stranger, desconocīdo, M. (*unknown*); forastēro, M. (*from another place*).
Straw, paja, F.; *s. hat*, sombrēro de paja, M.
Street, calle, F.
Strength, fuerza, F. (*physical*); fuerzas (*moral*).
Strewn, cubierto, a; sembrādo, a, (*with, de*).
Study (*to*), estudiār; *he studies*, estūdia.
Suggest (*to*), sugerīr; recordār; *he suggested*, sugirió, recordó.
Summer, verāno, M.
Sun, sol, M.
Surround (*to*), rodeār; *that seemed to s. her*, que al parecēr la amenazāba (*of danger*).
Surrounded, rodeādo, a, (*by*, de).
Survive (*to*), sobrevivīr.
Sweet, dulce.
Sympathy, simpatía, F.; *better*, PL. las s—s.

T.

Table, mesa, F.
Table-drawer, el cajōn de la mesa.
Take (*to*), tomār; *he took*, tomó; *to t. a step*, dar un paso; *to t. a walk*, dar un pasēo.
Take down (*to*), descolgār (descuelgo, as, a, *of anything suspended*).
Take place (*to*), sucedēr; verificārse; tenēr lugār.
Talk (*to*), hablār; *to talk to*, h. con.
Tall, alto, a; grande.
Teacher, maēstro, a, M. and F.
Tell (*to*), decīr (digo, dices).
Terror, terrōr, M.; azōte, M.
Text, texto, M.
Than, que; (before a numeral) de; (with a verb) de lo que.
Thank (*to*), agradecēr (agradezco, agradēces).
That, ese, esa, eso; aquel, aquella, aquello; *t. is*, es decīr; *t. is so*, eso es.
That, conj., que.
Theatre, teātro, M.; *summer or café t—s*, teatros de verano ó de café.

Them, los, M.; las, F.; les, COM. (gov. by a verb); ellos, ās (gov. by a prep.).
Then, entónces (*at that time*); luego (*afterwards*).
There, allí; en él, en ella, en ellos, as; *t. is*, hay; *t. are*, hay.
Therefore, por consiguiēnte.
Thief, ladrōn, M.
Thing, cosa, F.
Think (*to*), pensār (pienso, as, a); creēr (creo, crees).
This, este, esta, esto.
Thomas, Tomás.
Those (*of*), los *or* las de.
Thought, pensamiēnto, M.
Thoughtful, sensāto, a; cuerdo, a; grave.
Threaten (*to*), amenazār.
Threatening, amenazadōr, a.
Throw (*to*), arrojār; *to t. on the floor*, a. al suelo.
Thus, así, de este modo.
Ticket, billēte, M.
Time, tiempo, M.; *a t.*, vez, F.; *the second t.*, por segunda vez; *times*, veces, F. PL. (*occasions*).
Timely, oportūno, a; acertādo, a.
Timothy, Timotēo.
Tired, cansado, a (*estàr*).
Tithe, diezmo, M.
Title, título, M.
To, á; *up to*, hasta.
To-day, hoy; (*at the present d.*), hoy dia, *or* en el dia.
Toil (*to*), trabajār.
To-morrow, mañāna; *to-m. night*, m. por la noche; *the day after to-m.*, pasado mañāna.
Top, peōn, M.
Toward, hácia (*material and moral direction*); para con (*moral direction*).
Town, ciudād; poblaciōn, F., villa. See *City*.
Toy, juguēte, M.
Train, tren, M.; *Seville t.*, tren de Sevilla.
Tramway, tranvía, *and* tramvía, M.
Travel (*to*), viajār.
Traveller, viajēro, M.
Treacherous, traidōr, a.
Treasure, tesōro, M.
Treaty, tratādo, M.
Tree, ārbol, M.
Triumphant, triunfānte; ufāno, a.
Troublesome, molesto, a; fastidiōso, a.
Tremble (*to*), temblār (tiemblo, as, a).
True, verdadēro, a.
Truth, verdād, F.
Try (*to*), probār (pruebo, as); *to t. to*, tratār de, procurār de.
Tuesday, mártes, M.
Turn around (*to*), volverse (me vuelvo, ves, ve).
Twaddle, charladuría, conversaciōn, F.
Twice, dos veces.
Type, tipo, M.

U.

Uncle, tio, M.
Under, debajo de; bajo; *u. the circumstances*, bajo las circunstancias.
Undergo (*to*), sufrīr.
Understand (*to*), comprendēr, entendēr (entiendo).
Unfortunate, desgraciādo, a.
Unite (*to*), unīr.

United, unīdo, a; *United States*, Estados Unidos.
Unjust, injusto, a.
Unknown, desconocīdo, a.
Until, conj., hasta que.
Up to, hasta.
Useful, útil; provechōso, a; de provecho.
Usually, ordināriamente.

V.

Vain (*puffed up*), vanidōso, a.
Valencia, Valēncia, F.
Vanity, vanidād, F.; *selfish v.*, vano egoīsmo, M.
Various, diverso, a.
Verdict, fallo, M.
Very, muy, bien; *I am v. glad*, me alēgro mucho; *v. much*, muchísimo, a; *v. many*, muchísimos, as.
Vessel, buque, M.
Vice, vīcio, M.
Victim, víctima, F.
Vile, ruīn.
Village, pueblo, M.; aldēa, F.
Violently, con violēncia, F.; arrebatādamente.
Visit, visīta, F.
Visit (*to*), visitār; pasār á ver.
Vivid, vivo, a.
Voice, voz, F. (PL. voces).
Volume, tomo, M.; volúmen, M.; *in a small 4to vol.*, en un tomo en cuarto pequēño.

W.

Wait (*to*), and *to w. for*, esperār, aguardār.
Walk, pasēo, M.
Wall, tāpia, F. (*of an enclosure*); parēd, F. (*of a room*); muralla, F., *or* muro, M. (*of a town*).
Want (*to*), *meaning to wish*, querēr (quiero, quieres, quiere); *he wants* or *wants to*, quiere; *he does not w. to*, no quiere.
Want (*to*), *meaning to need*, faltār; *I w.*, me falta; *what do you w.?* ¿qué le falta á V.? *Spaniards only w. good government*, á los Españōles sólo les falta buen gobierno.
War, guerra, F.
Was — *see* ser, estār.
Watch (*to*), velār.
Water, agua, F. (el agua).
Way, camino, M.; via, F.; *in this w.*, de este modo.
Wear (*to*), llevār, gastār.
Weather, tiempo, M.; *what kind of w.?* ¿qué tal t.?
Week, semāna, F.
Well, bien; *as w. as*, tan b. como; *so w. that*, tan b. que.
Were — *see* ser, estār.
Western, occidentāl; *W. Europe*, la Eurōpa o., *or* el Oeste de Eurōpa.
What? ¿qué? *w. kind of?* ¿qué tal?
What (*that which*), lo que; *w. if*, si (in interrog. and exclam.).
Wheat, trigo, M.
When, cuando; ¿cuándo?
Where, donde, ¿dónde? (*rest*); adonde, adónde (*motion*); en donde (*in what place*).
Which, que; (*of two*), cuál.
While, miēntras.
White, blanco, a; superl. blanquísimo, a.

Who, que; *whom*, que, á quien.
Whole (*the*), todo el, toda la; entēro, a, (after the noun).
Whose, cuyo, ¿cúyo? *w. name is*, que se llama.
Why? ¿por qué?
Wild-boar, jabalí, M.
Will (*to*), *meaning to wish*, querēr (quiero, es, e); *w. you?* ¿quiere V.?
Window, ventāna, F.
Wine, vino, M.
Wine-growing, vinícola.
Winter, invierno, M.
Wisdom, sabiduría, F.
Wise, sabio, a; (*prudent*) prudente, discrēto, a.
Wish (*to*) *anyone anything*, deseār (desēo).
Wish (*to*), *to will, to desire*, querēr (quiero); *she does not w.*, no quiere.
Wit and humor, sal, F.
With, con; *together w.*, juntamente con.
Within, dentro de.
Without, sin; *w. doing*, sin hacēr.
Woman, mujēr, F.
Wood, madēra, F.
Woods, mōnte, M.
Word, palābra, F.; voz, F.; *in these words*, en estos términos.
Work (*to*), trabajār; *to be working*, estār trabajando.
Work, trabājo, M.; obra, F.
Worst (*the*), el (la, lo) peōr.
Worth (*to be*), valēr (valgo, vales, vale); *is w.*, vale.
Worthy, digno, a (*of*, de).
Wounded (*to be*), ser herīdo, a; *he has been w.*, ha sido herīdo.
Write (*to*), escribīr (p.p. escrīto, a).
Writings, escrītos, M., obras, F.
Written, escrīto, a.

Y.

Year, año, M.
Yes, sí.
Yesterday, ayēr.
You, ustēd, PL. ustēdes (*polite*); tú, PL. vosotros, as (*familiar*).
Young, jóven; *young man*, jóven, M.; *young woman*, jóven, F.
Your, su, PL. sus (*polite*); vuestro, a (*familiar*).
Youth, juventūd, F.

APPENDIX.

Able, hábil, capāz.
After, *adv.*, despuēs; *some time a.*, algun tiempo d.
Are (*they*), son, están, § 391.
Attends, asiste á.
Be (*he-will-*), será, estará.
Been (*has*), ha sido, *p.* 398, 5.
Began (*he, it*), empezó, principió.
Between, entre.
Bought, *p.p.*, comprādo, a; *he bought*, compró.
Brought (*he*), trājo.
By, por, de.
Came (*he, it*), vīno.
Cherish (*they*), abrīgan.
Comes, viene.
Comes from, sale de, *p.* 397.
Consists of, consta de.
Cry (*they*), llōran.
Disturbed (*they*), alborotāron.
Doing (*of*), de hacēr, § 718.
Entered (*they*), entrāron.
Err (*they*), yērran.
Ever (*at any time*), alguna vez, *p.* 413, 4.
Everywhere, en todas partes.
Few, pocos, as, *p.* 397.
Fifth, quinto, a.
Find (*you-will-*), V. encontrará, *or* hallará.
First, primēro, a (primer, § 123).
Found (*I*), hallé, encontré.
Gave (*he*), dió, § 543.
Gives, da.
Go (*I*), voy.
Go (*we*), vamos; *we-shall-go*, irémos.
Go (*they*), van.
Goes, va.
Goods (*property*), biēnes, M. PL.
Has, tiēne; *has been*, ha sido, *p.* 398, 5.
Have (*we*), tenēmos.
Have (*they*), tiēnen.
He, él.
Her, su, PL. sus.
Highland-woman, montanēsa, F.
Him (*obj. of verb*), le, lo; (*after prep.*), él.
His, su, PL. sus.
I, yo.
Important, importānte; *are i.*, inpōrtan.
Is, es; está, § 391.
Jest (*they*), chancēan.
Known, conocīdo, a, *p.* 397; sabīdo, a.
Lands (*estates*), heredādes, tierras, F. PL.
Live (*they*), vīven.
Lived (*he*), vivió.
Lives, vive; (*dwells*), vive, habīta.
Living (*active*), vivo, a.
Lost (*he*), perdió.
My, mi, PL. mis.
Occurred (*it*), sucedió, tuvo lugār (*took place*).

One, uno, a (un).
[Ones], *not to be translated.*
Order to (*in*), para (*w. inf.*).
People (*folks*), gente, F.; (*the masses*), pueblo, M.
Placed (*he*), colocó.
Plays (*he*), juēga.
Pleases (*he, it*), gūsta, agrāda.
Port, puērto, M.
Prisoner, preso, M.
Read (*he*), leyó; *he was reading*, leía.
Rejoice (*to*), alegrārse.
Reliable, fidedigno, a; *r. news*, noticias ciertas, *or* fidedignas.
Religious, religiōso, a, *p.* 397.
Resides, habīta, resīde.
Saw (*I*), ví.
Second, segūndo, a.
See (*I*), vēo.
Serve (*they*), sīrven (*de*, as).
Seven, siēte.
She, ella.
Some, alguno, a (algūn); PL. algunos, as.
Spanish language (*the*), la lengua castellana, *or* española.
Speaks, hābla.
Spends (*he*), pasa (*of time*); gasta (*of money*).
Spent (*I*), pasé (*of time*).
Spent (*we*), pasāmos.
Spoke (*he*), habló.
Spoken, hablādo, a.
Studies, estūdia.
Summer-house, quinta, F.
Their, su, PL. sus.
These, estos, as.
They, ellos, as.
Those, esos, as; aquellos, as.
Threatened (*it*), amenazó; *imperf.*, amenazāba.
Three, tres.
Took (*he*), tomó.
Undergoes, sūfre.
Understand (*they*), entiēnden, comprēnden.
Unites, une.
Visited (*I have*), he visitādo.
Visits, visīta.
Wait (*he-will-*), aguardará.
Was (*he, it*), fué, era; estūvo, estāba.
We, nosōtros, as.
Wear (*they*), llēvan, gāstan.
Were (*they*), fuēron, *p.* 398; ēran; estuviēron, estāban.
Who? ¿quién? PL. ¿quiénes?
Wood (*material*), madēra, F.; (*fire-w.*), leña, F.; PL. bosque, M.; (*elevated wood-land*), monte, M.
Worked (*he*), trabajó.
Writes, escrībe.
Writing (*he-was-*), escribía.
Wrote (*he*), escribió.
Ye, vosōtros, as.